

NEW TESTAMENT

JOHN GORHAM PALFREY

1828

Wipf and Stock Publishers

Bible Versions Reproduction Series: Volume #4

THE NEW TESTAMENT in the COMMON VERSION

CONFORMED TO GRIESBACH'S STANDARD GREEK TEXT

By: John Gorham Palfry

1828 Original Publisher, Boston Daily Advertiser, Boston

418 pages

Copyright © 2000 by John S. Wipf, Jr. All rights reserved. Printed in the United States of America. Except as permitted under the United States Copyright Act of 1976, no part of this publication may be reproduced or distributed in any form or by any means, or stored in a data base retrieval system, without prior written permission of the publisher.

Wipf and Stock Publishers is pleased to present to you its digital reproduction of this book. By purchasing this book and receiving ownership of this copy, you expressly agree that you and any one to whom you transfer this book to is not entitled to reproduce or to allow anyone else to reproduce all or any portion of its contents without our prior consent.

If the purchaser does not agree to the foregoing terms of this sale, promptly return this copy for a refund of the purchase price. By retaining possession of this copy, you acknowledge that you agree to be bound by the foregoing terms. If you have any questions concerning this matter, please contact Wipf and Stock Publishers at the following address:

Wipf and Stock Publishers
1396 E. Washington Blvd.
Pasadena, CA, 91104
1-626-797-4756

Printer: James Baden
Binder: Golden Rule Bindery

ISBN: 1-57910-353-7

Bible Versions Reproduction Series

The purpose of the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** is to make rare and out-of-print versions of the Bible readily and inexpensively available to scholars, Bible students, and Bible collectors. These reproductions are being offered especially to members of the International Society of Bible Collectors.

While still searching for hard-to-find original printings of Bible translations, many collectors have indicated what a delight it would be to have on their own shelves accurate reproductions of Bible versions currently available only in museums, libraries and private collections. Now such an opportunity is being offered by a collector who is himself a member of our Society.

It would be rare to imagine a more enthusiastic member of the ISBC than my long-time friend Jim Baden. Since joining the Society, he has amassed an extraordinary collection. Visiting his library could be a temptation to violate the tenth commandment were it not for his great generosity and eagerness to share what he has brought together.

It is essential, of course, that the reproduction process pose no threat to the integrity of the volumes being copied—no matter how fragile the precious originals may be. Such a method is now available, and Jim is demonstrating his confidence in the process by being the first to make some of his own prized volumes available.

Among the first publications in this Series is a reproduction of Isaac Leaser's 1904 *The Twenty-four Books of the Holy Scriptures*. Society members will especially enjoy knowing that the particular volume by Leaser was once the personal copy of Arnold Ehlert, the founder and first president of the ISBC. "A gift to A. D. Ehlert from Dr. H. A. Ironside, summer 1947" is handwritten on the flyleaf.

Jim Baden shares the reverence for Scripture that has moved the leaders of our Society to give so freely of their time and energy for the past thirty-five years. He has profound respect and gratitude for the heroes and heroines of Bible translation—from Wycliffe and Tyndale down to the present time—who worked so hard, even sometimes at the risk of life—to make the Bible so readily available to the world today. Like other members of the ISBC, Jim regards the Bible as more than just a great book to be collected. To use his own words, he speaks of the Scriptures as "God's method of communicating with his intelligent creatures . . . to be most carefully read and contemplated to discover its meaning and value for life in the present and future."

What is more helpful in discovering the meaning of Scripture than to have readily at hand a good collection of different versions? Some have even suggested they would rather have a variety of versions than commentaries! As the translators of the 1611 King James Version quote Saint Augustine in their memorable preface, “ ‘Variety of Translations is profitable for the finding out of the sense of the Scriptures.’ ” “Therefore blessed be they,” the preface continues, “and most honoured be their name, that break the ice, and giveth onset upon that which helpeth forward to the saving of souls. Now what can be more available thereto, than to deliver God’s book unto God’s people in a tongue which they understand?” And speaking of those who have labored to prepare translations other than the King James, the 1611 scholars urge “that we acknowledge them to have been raised up of God, for the building and furnishing of his Church, and that they deserve to be had of us and of posterity in everlasting remembrance.”

It is in this spirit and for this purpose that the **Bible Versions Reproduction Series** has been inaugurated.

William E. Paul, Editor, *Bible Versions and Editions*; Don Heese, Journal Production Manager; Sid Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary; Mark Mage, Editorial Assistant; Jim Baden and this writer have each supplied several hard-to-find versions for this reproduction. *

It is hoped that purchasers of volumes from this series will loan for copying other versions and editions that will become part of this reproduction Series. Those so doing will be rewarded with a free copy of a version of their choice from the Series.

Those interested are urged to contact the Publisher or Sidney Ohlhausen, Membership Secretary of the International Society of Bible Collectors, at: Box 20695, Houston, TX. 77225.

Graham Maxwell
(Charter Member #12)

*additional versions supplied by:
Bill Chamberlain

Biographical Sketch of John G. Palfrey

The name John Gorham Palfrey (1796-1881), a Unitarian minister, appears nowhere in the New Testament translation attributed to him (he is called "*James Graham Palfrey*" in P. Marion Simms' *The Bible in America*, page 153). Instead, the anonymously published translation, titled *The New Testament in the Common Version Conformed to Griesbach's Standard Greek Text* (1828), was for years erroneously thought to be the work of American patriot Nathan Hale, best-known for his statement, "I regret that I have but one life to lose for my country."

The reason for this mixup is that on the reverse side of the title page there appears a notice by a John W. Davis, Clerk of the District of Massachusetts (Boston), stating that on July 7, 1828, Hale had "deposited in this office the title of a book, the right whereof he claims as proprietor." So, in the absence of any other name recorded in the book, it was assumed that Nathan Hale was also the translator. Apparently Hale was merely a friend of Palfrey, who filed the preliminary papers required in that day. In what sense Hale styled himself as "proprietor" is not known.

In an "Advertisement" for his work, Palfrey makes it clear that he did not attempt "a revised translation of the New Testament" but rather that he "exactly reprinted the Common Version, except in places where the Greek text, from which that version was made, is now understood to have been faulty" (Orlinsky/Bratcher, page 58). A third edition appeared in 1830.

Little else is known about Dr. Palfrey, except that he served as a professor of Sacred Literature at Harvard University from 1831 to 1839.

— William E. Paul, Editor
Bible Editions & Versions

THE
NEW TESTAMENT
IN THE
COMMON VERSION,

CONFORMED TO

Griesbach's Standard Greek Text.

—

BOSTON:
PRESS OF THE BOSTON DAILY ADVERTISER.
William L. Lewis, Printer.

1828.

District of Massachusetts, ss.

DISTRICT CLERK'S OFFICE.

Be it remembered, that on the seventh day of July, A. D. 1828, and in the fifty-third year of the Independence of the United States of America, Nathan Hale, of the said District, has deposited in this office the title of a book, the right whereof he claims as proprietor, in the words following, to wit :

‘The New Testament in the Common Version conformed to Griesbach’s Standard Greek Text.’

In conformity to the Act of the Congress of the United States, entitled ‘An Act for the encouragement of Learning, by securing the copies of Maps, Charts, and Books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies, during the times therein mentioned.’ And also to an Act, entitled ‘An Act, supplementary to an Act, entitled an Act for the encouragement of Learning, by securing the copies of Maps, Charts, and Books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies, during the times therein mentioned, and extending the benefits thereof to the arts of designing, engraving, and etching historical and other prints.’

JNO. W. DAVIS,

Clerk of the District of Massachusetts.

ADVERTISEMENT.

THE editor of the following pages, being engaged in a course of expository lectures on the New Testament, found an inconvenience in such interruptions of his comments as were necessary to correct the text and punctuation of the Common Version. He was thus led to think of providing a few copies, which, without other deviations from that version, should represent the amendments of Professor Griesbach's edition of the Greek original. The design of printing but a small number of copies to put into the hands of his hearers, he was subsequently advised to abandon. The work having accordingly come before the public, it is proper to premise some explanations, from which persons unacquainted with sacred criticism may judge of the object had in view.

The edition of the Greek Testament selected as the standard of the translation made in the reign of James I. and now in common use, was that of Theodore Beza. What the claims of that text to the character of correctness are, may be judged from a brief sketch of the history of its formation.

It was almost a century after the invention of printing, before the Greek Testament was issued from the press. In 1502 was undertaken, under the patronage of Cardinal Ximenes, the publication of an edition of the sacred writings, comprehending the Greek and Hebrew text, with three of the principal versions; a work which, from the place where it was executed,—

Alcala in Spain, the ancient Complutum,—took the name of the Complutensian Polyglott. Though the printing was finished in 1514, the papal license for the publication was not obtained till eight years afterwards. Meanwhile, Erasmus, being at Basle in Switzerland in 1516, employed in publishing the works of Jerome, was induced by his printer to devote his leisure to an edition of the New Testament, to be prepared with such means as that city and its neighbourhood afforded.

The texts of the Complutensian Polyglott and of Erasmus formed the basis of subsequent editions. The manuscripts from which the former was prepared are lost, and what was their number or their value cannot now be certainly known. The edition, however, furnishes the strongest reasons for believing them to have been few and modern. Erasmus appears from his own testimony to have had the use of only four manuscripts, and these incomplete, with some hasty gleanings from others by himself or by his friends. The manuscripts on which he relied are also well known, and are universally acknowledged to be modern and of very inferior authority. In the infancy of the science of textual criticism, both editions were unavoidably prepared without any sufficient acquaintance with the rules which should govern such a work. The integrity of the Complutensian editors labours under strong suspicion. To anticipate the Complutensian, the edition of Erasmus was hurried through the press; despatched, as he himself says, rather than edited, *præcipitatum verius quam editum*. In several instances, he departed from all his authorities, and in one, supplied a chasm

of six verses by his own translation from the Latin. His copy, after leaving his hands, was mutilated by the correctors of the press, and typographical errors occurred, which were not corrected in subsequent editions. In these editions some alterations were introduced from the Complutensian, among which was the admission of the famous text, 1 John v. 7.

In 1546, a third edition, which is to be considered as in some respect independent, was prepared by Robert Stephens of Paris, by a collation of the Erasmian and Complutensian editions, with fifteen manuscripts in the king's library. It was subsequently twice revised, and in the form which it last assumed, is little more than a reprint of the fifth edition of Erasmus, except in the Apocalypse, where it adopts many readings of the Complutensian. Of the manuscripts professed to have been used, two cannot now be traced. Most of the remaining thirteen contained only a part of the New Testament; they were not examined by the editor, but by his son, eighteen years old; and, on a more careful search, many of their most remarkable readings appear to have been overlooked, and others misrepresented, in the printed work. In the margin of this edition were first introduced the figures denoting the division into verses; a division hastily made by Robert Stephens during a journey from Lyons to Paris, to facilitate reference in a Concordance which he was about to publish.

The edition of Beza, which assumed its permanent shape in 1598, differed little from that of Stephens. Though he possessed two valuable manuscripts, and consulted two ancient versions besides the Vulgate, he

made little use of either. Indeed, his Greek text often differing from his Latin translation, the former cannot be regarded as containing the readings which even his own judgment approved.

From the texts of Stephens and Beza was prepared an anonymous edition, which, in 1624, was issued from the office of the Elzevirs at Leyden. Recommended by nothing else than the beauty and supposed accuracy of the typographical execution, this text,—essentially the same with the imperfect compilation of Erasmus, and only differing from that in variations introduced on the inferior authority of Beza, Stephens, and the Catholic editors of the Complutensian, with a very few other readings of unknown origin,—immediately took a rank which it has since retained under the name of the received edition.

In the year 1707, Dr. John Mill published at Oxford his splendid work, the fruit of thirty laborious years. In marginal notes, attached to the text of Stephens, this edition exhibited various readings, to the amount of thirty thousand, collected from Greek manuscripts, from ancient versions, and from quotations found in the writings of the early fathers of the church. It was followed in 1734 by an edition by John Albert Bengel of Tübingen, containing a valuable additional collection of various readings from similar sources, appended to a text, exclusively compiled, except in the Apocalypse, from preceding printed editions.

These important publications were eclipsed by the great work of John James Wetstein, published at Amsterdam, in 1751–2, in two volumes folio. It is said to comprise a hundred thousand various readings,

and more than a million references. The text is that of the received edition, readings regarded by the editor as of better authority being distinguished as such in the margin.

In 1775, Dr. John James Griesbach published his first edition of the New Testament, exhibiting in notes the most important of the various readings contained in the works of Wetstein and of other critics since his time, and introducing into the text such amendments of the received edition as were considered to be established by conclusive evidence. A second edition, revised and greatly enriched, appeared in 1796—1806, the store of means for emendation of the text having meanwhile received valuable contributions from the researches of Matthäi, Alter, Birch, and other distinguished biblical philologists. The work in its present state is the fruit of more than thirty years' devoted study. The materials for it,—drawn from nearly four hundred Greek manuscripts, besides large collations from ancient versions and citations of the early fathers,—amounted to not less than a hundred and thirty thousand various readings; the critical rules, applied in deciding between conflicting authorities, have been generally approved, and the impartiality of the editor may be considered beyond question, the principal alterations which he has introduced being unfavourable to his own distinctly avowed theological opinions. Considering the great delicacy of this work, the all but unanimous favourable testimony of learned men, of whatever denomination, is a result which it would have been extravagant to anticipate.

The manual edition of Griesbach, published at Leip-

sick in 1805, is to be regarded, in the few places where it differs from the critical edition, as recording the editor's most mature judgments, the critical edition having been almost all printed at an earlier period, though the second volume did not appear till 1806. The editor of this volume has accordingly followed the Greek text of the manual edition. He will be understood not to have attempted any such work as that of a revised translation of the New Testament. He has exactly reprinted the Common Version, except in places where the Greek text, from which that version was made, is now understood to have been faulty. In other words, he has aimed to present the Common Version precisely such as it would have been, if the translators could have had access to the standard text of Griesbach, instead of the adulterated text of Beza. In the translations which he has introduced to correspond to the amended Greek, it has been his careful endeavour to imitate the style of the received version, and no one has been admitted without study and consideration. He ventures to hope, that, in a use like that for which it was projected, the work may be of some advantage to his brethren in the ministry. A just reverence for scripture will influence all christians to desire to see the documents of their faith in a form as little as possible altered from that in which they came from their authors' hands; and if the restorations here presented appear to be not of the greatest consequence, they will but afford the more gratifying assurance of the substantial integrity of those records, which preserved in so great a variety of copies, bear, in the purest and the most corrupt form, so striking a general likeness.

THE

G O S P E L

ACCORDING TO MATTHEW.

THE book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of
 2 David, the son of Abraham. Abraham begat Isaac ;
 and Isaac begat Jacob ; and Jacob begat Judas and his
 3 brethren. And Judas begat Pharez and Zara of Thamar.
 4 And Pharez begat Esrom ; and Esrom begat Aram ; and
 Aram begat Aminadab ; and Aminadab begat Naasson ; and
 5 Naasson begat Salmon ; and Salmon begat Booz of Rachab.
 And Booz begat Obed of Ruth. And Obed begat Jesse ;
 6 and Jesse begat David the king. And David the king begat
 7 Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Urias. And Solo-
 mon begat Roboam ; and Roboam begat Abia ; and Abia
 8 begat Asa ; and Asa begat Josaphat ; and Josaphat begat
 9 Joram ; and Joram begat Ozias ; and Ozias begat Joatham ;
 10 and Joatham begat Achaz ; and Achaz begat Ezekias ; and
 Ezekias begat Manasses ; and Manasses begat Amon ;
 11 and Amon begat Josias ; and Josias begat Jechonias and his
 brethren, about the time they were carried away to Baby-
 12 lon. And after they were brought to Babylon,
 Jechonias begat Salathiel ; and Salathiel begat Zorobabel ;
 13 and Zorobabel begat Abiud ; and Abiud begat Eliakim ; and
 14 Eliakim begat Azor ; and Azor begat Sadoc ; and Sadoc
 15 begat Achim ; and Achim begat Eliud ; and Eliud begat
 Eleazar ; and Eleazar begat Matthan ; and Matthan begat
 16 Jacob ; and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of
 17 whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ. So all
 the generations from Abraham to David *are* fourteen gener-
 ations ; and from David until the carrying away into Baby-
 lon *are* fourteen generations ; and from the carrying away
 into Babylon unto Christ *are* fourteen generations.

18 Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise. When
as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they
came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost.
19 Then Joseph her husband, being a just *man*, and not willing
to make her a public example, was minded to put her away
20 privily. But while he thought on these things, behold, the
angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying;
Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary
thy wife; for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy
21 Ghost; and she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call
his name JESUS; for he shall save his people from their
22 sins. (Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled
23 which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying; "Be-
hold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a
son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel;" which being
24 interpreted, is, God with us.) Then Joseph, being raised
from sleep, did as the angel of the Lord had bidden him;
25 and took unto him his wife, and knew her not till she had
brought forth her first-born son; and he called his name
Jesus.

II. Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in
the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men
2 from the east to Jerusalem, saying; Where is he that is
born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the
3 east, and are come to worship him. When Herod the
king had heard *these things*, he was troubled, and all Jerusa-
4 lem with him; and when he had gathered all the chief
priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of
5 them where Christ should be born. And they said unto
him; In Bethlehem of Judea; for thus it is written by the
6 prophet; "And thou Bethlehem, *in* the land of Juda, art
not the least among the princes of Juda; for out of thee
shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel."
7 Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, in-
8 quired of them diligently what time the star appeared, and
he sent them to Bethlehem, and said; Go and search dili-
gently for the young child; and when ye have found *him*,
bring me word again, that I may come and worship *him*.
9 also. When they had heard the king, they departed. And,
lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them,
till it came and stood over where the young child was.
10 When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great
11 joy; and when they were come unto the house, they saw

- the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him, and when they had opened their treasures they presented unto him gifts, gold, and frankincense, and
12 myrrh. And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.
- 13 And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying; Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word; for Herod will
14 seek the young child, to destroy him. When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt; and was there until the death of Herod; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying; "Out of Egypt have I called my son."
16 Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth; and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time
17 which he had diligently inquired of the wise men. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet,
18 saying; "In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning; Rachel weeping for her children; and would not be comforted, because they are
19 not." But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying;
20 Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel; for they are dead which sought the
21 young child's life. And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. But
22 when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither; notwithstanding, being warned of God in a dream, he turned
23 aside into the parts of Galilee. And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets; He shall be called a Nazarene.
- III. In those days came John the Baptist preaching in
2 the wilderness of Judea, and saying; Repent ye, for the
3 kingdom of heaven is at hand. For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet Esaias, saying; "The voice of one crying in the wilderness; prepare ye the way of the
4 Lord, make his paths straight." And the same John had

his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his
5 loins ; and his meat was locusts and wild honey. Then
went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region
6 round about Jordan ; and were baptized of him in Jordan,
7 confessing their sins. But when he saw many of the Phari-
sees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them ;
O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from
8 the wrath to come ? Bring forth therefore fruit meet for
9 repentance, and think not to say within yourselves ; We
have Abraham to *our* father ; for I say unto you, that God
is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.
10 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees ;
therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is
11 hewn down, and cast into the fire. I indeed baptize you
with water, unto repentance ; but he that cometh after me
is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear ;
he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and *with* fire.
12 Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purgo his
floor ; and he will gather his wheat into the garner, but
burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.
13 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to
14 be baptized of him. But John forbade him, saying ; I have
need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me ?
15 And Jesus answering said unto him ; Suffer *it to be so* now ;
for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he
16 suffered him. And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up
straightway out of the water ; and, lo, the heavens were
opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending
17 like a dove, and lighting upon him. And, lo, a voice from
heaven, saying ; This is my beloved Son, in whom I am
well pleased.

IV. Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness,
2 to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted
forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred.
3 And when the tempter came to him, he said ; If thou be the
Son of God, command that these stones be made bread.
4 But he answered and said ; It is written ; " Man shall not
live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out
5 of the mouth of God." Then the devil taketh him up into
the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple ;
6 and saith unto him ; If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself
down ; for it is written ; " He shall give his angels charge
concerning thee ; and in *their* hands they shall bear thee

- up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone.”
- 7 Jesus said unto him ; It is written again ; “Thou shalt not
8 tempt the Lord thy God.” Again, the devil taketh him up
into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the
9 kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them, and saith
unto him ; All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall
10 down and worship me. Then saith Jesus unto him ; Get
thee behind me, Satan ; for it is written ; “Thou shalt wor-
ship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.”
11 Then the devil leaveth him ; and, behold, angels came and
ministered unto him.
- 12 Now when Jesus had heard that John was cast into prison,
13 he departed into Galilee. And leaving Nazareth, he came
and dwelt in Capernaum, which is upon the sea coast, in
14 the borders of Zabulon and Nephtalim ; that it might be
fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying ;
15 “The land of Zabulon, and the land of Nephtalim, *by* the
way of the sea beyond Jordan, Galilee of the Gentiles,
16 the people which sat in darkness, saw great light ; and to
~~them which sat in the region~~ and shadow of death, light is
17 sprung up.” From that time Jesus began to
preach, and to say ; Repent ; for the kingdom of heaven is at
hand.
- 18 And, walking by the sea of Galilee, he saw two brethren,
Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net
19 into the sea ; for they were fishers. And he saith unto
them ; Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.
20 And they straightway left *their* nets, and followed him.
21 And going on from thence, he saw other two brethren, James
the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in a ship with
Zebedee their father, mending their nets ; and he called
22 them. And they immediately left the ship and their father,
and followed him.
- 23 And Jesus went about all Galilee, teaching in their syna-
gogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and heal-
ing all manner of sickness and all manner of disease among
24 the people. And his fame went throughout all Syria ; and
they brought unto him all sick people, that were taken with
divers diseases and torments, and those which were pos-
sessed with devils, and those which were lunatic, and those
25 that had the palsy ; and he healed them. And there fol-
lowed him great multitudes of people from Galilee, and
from Decapolis, and *from* Jerusalem, and *from* Judca, and
from beyond Jordan.

- V. And seeing the multitudes, he went up into a mountain ;
and when he was set, his disciples came unto him.
2 And he opened his mouth, and taught them, saying ;
3 Blessed *are* the poor in spirit ; for theirs is the kingdom of
4 heaven. Blessed *are* they that mourn ; for they shall be
5 comforted. Blessed *are* the meek ; for they shall inherit
6 the earth. Blessed *are* they which do hunger and thirst
7 after righteousness ; for they shall be filled. Blessed *are*
8 the merciful ; for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed *are* the
9 pure in heart ; for they shall see God. Blessed *are* the
peace-makers ; for they shall be called the children of God.
10 Blessed *are* they which are persecuted for righteousness'
11 sake ; for theirs is the kingdom of heaven. Blessed are ye,
when *men* shall revile you, and persecute *you*, and shall
say all manner of evil against you, falsely, for my sake.
12 Rejoice, and be exceeding glad ; for great is your reward
in heaven ; for so persecuted they the prophets which were
13 before you. Ye are the salt of the earth. But if the
salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted ? it is
thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be
14 trodden under foot of men. Ye are the light of the world.
15 A city that is set on a hill cannot be hid ; neither do men
light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candle-
stick ; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house.
16 Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your
good works, and glorify your Father which is in hea-
17 ven. Think not that I am come to destroy the law
or the prophets ; I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.
18 For verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one
jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all
19 be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these
least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be
called the least in the kingdom of heaven ; but whosoever
shall do and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the
20 kingdom of heaven. For I say unto you, that except your
righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes
and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of
21 heaven. Ye have heard that it was said by them of old
time ; "Thou shalt not kill ; and whosoever shall kill shall
22 be in danger of the judgment." But I say unto you, that
whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be
in danger of the judgment ; and whosoever shall say to his
brother ; Raca, shall be in danger of the council ; but who-

- soever shall say ; thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.
- 23 Therefore, if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee ; leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.
- 24 Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art in the way with him ; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing. Ye have heard that it hath been said ; “Thou shalt not commit adultery.” But I say unto you, that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee ; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell.
- 29 And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee ; for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. It hath been said ; “Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement.” But I say unto you, that whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery ; and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced, committeth adultery. Again ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time ; “Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths.”
- 34 But I say unto you, swear not at all by heaven, for it is God’s throne ; nor by the earth, for it is his footstool ; neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King ; neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be ; yea, yea ; nay, nay ; for whatsoever is more than these, cometh of evil. Ye have heard that it hath been said ; “An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.”
- 39 But I say unto you, that ye resist not evil ; but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also ; and if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have *thy* cloak also ; and whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. Give to him that asketh thee ; and from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away. Ye have heard that it hath been

- said; "Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy."
- 44 But I say unto you, love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them
- 45 which despitefully use you and persecute you; that ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven; for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and
- 46 sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? do not even
- 47 the publicans the same? and if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more *than others*? do not even the heathen so?
- 48 Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in
- VI. heaven is perfect. Take heed that ye do not your *acts of righteousness* before men, to be seen of them; otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven.
- 2 Therefore when thou doest *thine* alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I
- 3 say unto you, they have their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth;
- 4 that thine alms may be in secret; and thy Father, which
- 5 seeth in secret, himself shall reward thee openly. And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites *are*;
- 6 Verily I say unto you, they have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and, when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly.
- 7 But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen *do*; for they think that they shall be heard for their much
- 8 speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them; for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye
- 9 ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye; Our Father, which art in heaven, hallowed be thy name; thy kingdom
- 10 come; thy will be done, in earth as it is in heaven; give us this day our daily bread; and forgive us our debts as
- 11 we forgive our debtors; and lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you; but if
- 12 ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. Moreover, when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance; for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to

17 fast. Verily I say unto you, they have their reward. But
thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy
18 face; that thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy
Father which is in secret; and thy Father, which seeth in
19 secret, shall reward thee. Lay not up for yourselves
treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and
20 where thieves break through and steal; but lay up for
yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust
doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor
21 steal. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be
22 also. The light of the body is the eye. If therefore thine
23 eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light; but if
thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness.
If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great
24 is that darkness! No man can serve two masters; for
either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he
will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot
25 serve God and mammon. Therefore I say unto you; Take
no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall
drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not
26 the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? Be-
hold the fowls of the air, for they sow not, neither do they
reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father
27 feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? Which
of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature?
28 And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies
of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they
29 spin; and yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his
30 glory was not arrayed like one of these. Wherefore, if God
so clothe the grass of the field, which to-day is, and to-
morrow is cast into the oven, *shall he* not much more *clothe*
31 you, O ye of little faith? Therefore take no thought, say-
ing; What shall we eat, or what shall we drink, or where-
32 withal shall we be clothed? For after all these things do
the Gentiles seek; for your heavenly Father knoweth that
33 ye have need of all these things. But seek ye first the
kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things
34 shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for the
morrow; for the morrow shall take thought for the things of
VII. itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof. Judge
2 not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment
ye judge, ye shall be judged; and with what measure ye
3 mete, it shall be measured to you. And why beholdest

thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest
4 not the beam that is in thine own eye? or how wilt thou
say to thy brother; Let me pull out the mote out of thine
5 eye; and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye? Thou
hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of thine own eye; and
then shall thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thy
6 brother's eye. Give not that which is holy unto the dogs,
neither cast ye your pearls before swine; lest they trample
7 them under their feet, and turn again and rend you. Ask,
and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock,
8 and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that ask-
eth receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him
9 that knocketh it shall be opened. Or what man is there of
you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?
10 11 or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then,
being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children,
how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give
12 good things to them that ask him? Therefore all things,
whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even
13 so to them; for this is the law and the prophets. Enter
ye in at the strait gate; for wide is the gate, and broad is the
way, that leadeth to destruction; and many there be which
14 go in thereat. How strait is the gate, and narrow the
way, which leadeth unto life! and few there be that find
15 it. Beware of false prophets, which come to you in
sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves.
16 Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes
17 of thorns, or figs of thistles? Even so every good tree
bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth
18 evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither
19 can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree, that
bringeth not forth good fruit, is hewn down, and cast into
20 the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.
21 Not every one that saith unto me; Lord, Lord, shall enter
into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of
22 my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in
that day; Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy
name, and in thy name have cast out devils, and in thy name
23 done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto
them; I never knew you; depart from me, ye that work
24 iniquity. Therefore whosoever heareth these say-
ings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise
25 man, which built his house upon a rock; and the rain de-

scended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not; for it was founded upon a
26 rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man,
27 which built his house upon the sand; and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell; and great was the fall of it.

28 And it came to pass, when Jesus had ended these sayings, the people were astonished at his doctrine. For he taught them as one having authority, and not as the scribes.

VIII. When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him. And, behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying; Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst
3 make me clean. And Jesus put forth *his* hand, and touched him, saying; I will, be thou clean. And immediately his
4 leprosy was cleansed. And Jesus saith unto him; See thou tell no man; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift, that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

5 And when he was entered into Capernaum, there came
6 unto him a centurion, beseeching him, and saying; Lord, my servant lieth at home sick of the palsy, grievously tormented. And Jesus saith unto him; I will come and heal
7 him. The centurion answered and said; Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof; but speak
8 in a word only, and my servant shall be healed. For I am a man under authority, having soldiers under me; and I say to this *man*; Go, and he goeth; and to another; Come, and he cometh; and to my servant; Do this, and he doeth *it*.
9
10 When Jesus heard *it*, he marvelled, and said to them that followed; Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great
11 faith, no, not in Israel. And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. And Jesus said unto the centurion; Go thy way, and as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And his servant was healed in the self-same hour.

14 And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his
15 wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever. And he touched her hand, and the fever left her; and she arose, and ministered unto them. When the even was come,

- they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils; and he cast out the spirits with *his* word, and healed
- 17 all that were sick; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying; "Himself took our infirmities, and bare *our* sicknesses."
- 18 Now when Jesus saw great multitudes about him, he gave
- 19 commandment to depart unto the other side. And a certain scribe came, and said unto him; Master, I will follow
- 20 thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus saith unto him; The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air *have* nests;
- 21 but the Son of man hath not where to lay *his* head. And another of his disciples said unto him; Lord, suffer me first
- 22 to go and bury my father. But Jesus said unto him; Follow me, and let the dead bury their dead.
- 23 And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples fol-
- 24 lowed him. And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves;
- 25 but he was asleep. And the disciples came to *him*, and
- 26 awoke him, saying; Lord, save us, we perish. And he saith unto them; Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea, and
- 27 there was a great calm. But the men marvelled, saying; What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him?
- 28 And when he was come to the other side, into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no
- 29 man might pass by that way. And, behold, they cried out, saying; What have we *to do* with thee, thou son of God?
- 30 Art thou come hither to torment us before the time? And there was a good way off from them a herd of many swine
- 31 feeding. So the devils besought him, saying; If thou cast us out, send us away into the herd of swine. And he said
- 32 unto them; Go. And when they were come out, they went into the swine. And, behold, the whole herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, and perished in the
- 33 waters. And they that kept them fled, and went their ways into the city, and told every thing, and what was befallen to
- 34 the possessed of the devils. And, behold, the whole city came out to meet Jesus; and when they saw him, they besought *him* that he would depart out of their coasts.
- IX. And he entered into a ship, and passed over, and came
- 2 into his own city. And, behold, they brought to him a man

sick of the palsy, lying on a bed. And Jesus seeing their faith, said unto the sick of the palsy ; Son, be of good cheer ; thy sins be forgiven thee. And, behold, certain of the scribes said within themselves ; This *man* blasphemeth. And Jesus knowing their thoughts, said ; Wherefore think ye evil in your hearts ? For whether is easier ? to say ; Thy sins be forgiven ? or to say ; Arise, and walk ? But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins ; (then saith he to the sick of the palsy ;) Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house. And he arose, and departed to his house. But when the multitudes saw *it*, they marvelled, and glorified God, which had given such power unto men.

And as Jesus passed forth from thence, he saw a man, named Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom ; and he saith unto him ; Follow me. And he arose, and followed him. And it came to pass, as Jesus sat at meat in the house, behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples. And when the Pharisees saw *it*, they said unto his disciples ; Why eateth your Master with publicans and sinners ? But when Jesus heard *that*, he said unto them ; They that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what *that* meaneth ; " I will have mercy, and not sacrifice." For I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners.

Then came to him the disciples of John, saying ; Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not ? And Jesus said unto them ; Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them ? But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast. No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment ; for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. Neither do men put new wine into old bottles ; else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish ; but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.

While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a certain ruler and worshipped him, saying ; My daughter is even now dead ; but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live. And Jesus arose and followed him, and *so did* his disciples. And, behold, a woman, which was diseased with an issue of blood twelve years,

21 came behind *him*, and touched the hem of his garment. For
she said within herself; If I may but touch his garment, I
22 shall be whole. But Jesus turned him about, and when he
saw her, he said; Daughter, be of good comfort; thy faith
bath made thee whole. And the woman was made whole
23 from that hour. And when Jesus came into the
ruler's house, and saw the minstrels, and the people making
24 a noise, he said unto them; Give place; for the maid is
not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.
25 But when the people were put forth, he went in, and took
26 her by the hand; and the maid arose. And the fame here-
of went abroad into all that land.

27 And when Jesus departed thence, two blind men followed
him, crying, and saying; *Thou* son of David, have mercy
28 on us. And when he was come into the house, the blind
men came to him, and Jesus saith unto them; Believe ye
that I am able to do this? They said unto him; Yea, Lord.
29 Then touched he their eyes, saying; According to your
30 faith be it unto you. And their eyes were opened. And
Jesus straightly charged them, saying; See *that* no man
31 know *it*. But they, when they were departed, spread
abroad his fame in all that country.

32 As they went out, behold, they brought to him a dumb
33 man, possessed with a devil. And when the devil was cast
out, the dumb spake. And the multitudes marvelled, say-
34 ing; It was never so seen in Israel. But the Pharisees
said; He casteth out devils through the prince of the
devils.

35 And Jesus went about all the cities and villages, teaching
in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the king-
36 dom, and healing every sickness and every disease. But
when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compas-
sion on them, because they were wearied and scattered
37 abroad, as sheep having no shepherd. Then saith he unto
his disciples; The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labour-
38 ers are few. Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest,
that he will send forth labourers into his harvest.

X. And when he had called unto *him* his twelve disciples, he
gave them power *against* unclean spirits, to cast them out,
and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.
2 Now the names of the twelve apostles are these; the first,
Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James
3 *the son* of Zebedee, and John his brother; Philip, and Bar-

tholomew ; Thomas, and Matthew the publican ; James *the son* of Alphaeus, and Lebbeus, whose surname was Thaddeus ; Simon the zealot, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him. These twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying ; Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into *any* city of the Samaritans enter ye not. But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And, as ye go, preach, saying ; The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, cast out devils ; freely ye have received, freely give. Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass, in your purses ; nor scrip for *your* journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet a staff. For the workman is worthy of his meat. And into whatsoever city or town ye shall enter, inquire who in it is worthy ; and there abide till ye go thence. And when ye come into a house, salute it. And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it ; but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you. And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, ~~shake off the~~ dust of your feet. Verily I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable ~~for the land~~ of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city. Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves. Be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men. For they will deliver you up to the councils, and they will scourge you in their synagogues ; and ye shall be brought before governors and kings for my sake, for a testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak ; for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. And the brother shall deliver up the brother to death, and the father the child ; and the children shall rise up against *their* parents, and cause them to be put to death ; and ye shall be hated of all *men* for my name's sake. But he that endureth to the end shall be saved. But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another ; and if they persecute you out of this, flee ye into another. For verily I say unto you, ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel till the Son of man be come. The disciple is not above *his* master, nor the servant above his lord. It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the

Master of the house Beelzebub, how much more *shall they*
26 *call* them of his household ? Fear them not therefore. For
there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed ; and hid,
27 that shall not be known. What I tell you in darkness, *that*
speak ye in light ; and what ye hear in the ear, *that* preach
28 ye upon the house-tops. And fear not them which kill the
body, but are not able to kill the soul ; but rather fear him
29 which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. Are
not two sparrows sold for a farthing ? and one of them shall
30 not fall on the ground without your Father. But the very
31 hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear ye not there-
32 fore ; ye are of more value than many sparrows. Whoso-
ever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I con-
33 fess also before my Father, which is in heaven. But
whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny
34 before my Father, which is in heaven. Think not that I
am come to send peace on earth ; I came not to send
35 peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at va-
riance against his father, and the daughter against her
mother, and the daughter-in-law against her mother-in-law ;
36 and a man's foes *shall be* they of his own household.
37 He that loveth father or mother more than me, is not worthy
of me ; and he that loveth son or daughter more than me, is
38 not worthy of me ; and he that taketh not his cross, and fol-
39 loweth after me, is not worthy of me. He that findeth his
life, shall lose it ; and he that loseth his life for my sake, shall
40 find it. He that receiveth you, receiveth me ; and he that
41 receiveth me, receiveth him that sent me. He that receiv-
eth a prophet, in the name of a prophet, shall receive a
prophet's reward ; and he that receiveth a righteous man, in
the name of a righteous man, shall receive a righteous man's
42 reward. And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of
these little ones a cup of cold *water* only, in the name of a
disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his
reward.

XI. And it came to pass, when Jesus had made an end of
commanding his twelve disciples, he departed thence, to
teach and to preach in their cities.

2 Now when John had heard in the prison the works of
3 Christ, he sent two of his disciples, and said unto him ; Art
4 thou he that should come, or do we look for another ? Jesus
answered and said unto them ; Go and shew John again
5 those things which ye do hear and see ; the blind receive

their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the
6 gospel preached to them ; and blessed is *he*, whosoever shall
7 not be offended in me. And, as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John ;
What went ye out into the wilderness to see ? a reed shaken
8 with the wind ? But what went ye out for to see ? a man clothed in soft raiment ? Behold, they that wear soft *clothing*
9 are in kings' houses. But what went ye out for to see ? a prophet ? Yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet.
10 For this is *he* of whom it is written ; " Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee." Verily I say unto you, among them that are
11 born of women there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist ; notwithstanding, he that is least in the kingdom of
12 heaven is greater than he. And from the days of John the Baptist until now, the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence,
13 and the violent take it by force. For all the prophets and the law prophesied, until John. And if ye will receive *it*,
14 this is *Elias*, which ~~was~~ *is* for to come. He that hath ears to
15 hear, let him hear. But ~~whereunto~~ shall I liken this generation ? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and
16 calling unto their fellows, and saying ; We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced ; we have mourned unto you,
17 and ye have not lamented. For John came neither eating nor drinking ; and they say ; He hath a devil. The Son
18 of man came eating and drinking ; and they say ; Behold a man gluttonous, and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and
19 sinners. But Wisdom is justified of her children. Then
20 began he to upbraid the cities wherein most of his mighty works were done, because they repented not ; Woe unto
21 thee, Chorazin, woe unto thee, Bethsaida ! for if the mighty works which were done in you had been done in Tyre and Sidon, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and
22 ashes. But I say unto you ; It shall be more tolerable for
23 Tyre and Sidon at the day of judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shalt be brought down to hell ; for if the mighty works which have
24 been done in thee had been done in Sodom, it would have remained until this day. But I say unto you, that it shall be
25 more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee. At that time Jesus answered and said ;
I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because

thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and
26 hast revealed them unto babes. Even so, Father, for so it
27 seemed good in thy sight. All things are delivered unto
me of my Father; and no man knoweth the Son but the
Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the
28 Son, and *he* to whomsoever the Son will reveal *him*. Come
unto me all *ye* that labour and are heavy laden, and I will
29 give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me;
for I am meek and lowly in heart; and *ye* shall find rest
30 unto your souls. For my yoke *is* easy, and my burden is
light.

XII. At that time Jesus went on the sabbath-day through the
corn; and his disciples were a hungered, and began to pluck
2 the ears of corn, and to eat. But when the Pharisees saw
it, they said unto him; Behold, thy disciples do that which
3 is not lawful to do upon the sabbath-day. But he said unto
them; Have ye not read what David did, when he was a hun-
4 gered, and they that were with him? how he entered into
the house of God, and did eat the shew-bread, which it was
not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with
5 him, but only for the priests? Or have ye not read in the
law, *how* that on the sabbath-days the priests in the temple
6 profane the sabbath, and are blameless? But I say unto
7 you, that in this place is *one* greater than the temple. But
if ye had known what *this* meaneth; "I will have mercy,
and not sacrifice;" ye would not have condemned the guilt-
8 less. For the Son of man is Lord of the sabbath-day.

9 And when he was departed thence, he went into their
10 synagogue. And, behold, there was a man which had *his*
hand withered. And they asked him, saying; Is it lawful
to heal on the sabbath-days? that they might accuse him.
11 And he said unto them; What man shall there be among
you that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the
12 sabbath-day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift *it* out? How
much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is
13 lawful to do well on the sabbath-days. Then saith he to the
man; Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched *it* forth;
14 and it was restored whole, like as the other. Then the
Pharisees went out, and held a council against him, how
15 they might destroy him. But when Jesus knew *it*, he
withdrew himself from thence; and great multitudes follow-
16 ed him; and he healed them all, and charged them that they
17 should not make him known; that it might be fulfilled which

18 was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying ; " Behold my servant, whom I have chosen, my beloved, in whom my soul is well pleased ; I will put my spirit upon him, and he shall
19 shew judgment to the Gentiles. He shall not strive, nor
20 cry, neither shall any man hear his voice in the streets ; a bruised reed shall he not break, and smoking flax shall he
21 not quench ; till he send forth judgment unto victory. And in his name shall the Gentiles trust."

22 Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb ; and he healed him, insomuch that the
23 blind and dumb both spake and saw. And all the people
24 were amazed, and said ; Is not this the son of David ? But when the Pharisees heard *it*, they said ; This *fellow* doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub, the prince of the devils.
25 And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them ; Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation ; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand.
26 And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself ;
27 how shall then his kingdom stand ? And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast *them* out ?
28 Therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come
29 unto you. Or else, how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong
30 man ? and then he will spoil his house. He that is not with me, is against me ; and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth abroad. Wherefore I say unto you ; All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men ; but the blasphemy *against* the *Holy* Ghost shall not be forgiven
32 unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him ; but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him,
33 neither in this world, neither in the *world* to come. Either make the tree good, and his fruit good ; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt ; for the tree is known by
34 *his* fruit. O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things ? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. A good man, out of the good treasure, bringeth forth good things ; and an evil man, out of the evil
36 treasure, bringeth forth evil things. But I say unto you, that every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give
37 account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

38 Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answer-
39 ed, saying ; Master, we would see a sign from thee. But
he answered and said unto them ; An evil and adulterous
generation seeketh after a sign ; and there shall no sign be
40 given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas. For as Jonas
was three days and three nights in the whale's belly ; so shall
the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart
41 of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise up in the judg-
ment with this generation, and shall condemn it ; because they
repented at the preaching of Jonas ; and, behold, a greater
42 than Jonas is here. The queen of the south shall rise up in
the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it ; for
she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the
wisdom of Solomon ; and, behold, a greater than Solomon
43 is here. When the unclean spirit is gone out of a
man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and find-
44 eth none. Then he saith ; I will return into my house, from
whence I came out. And when he is come, he findeth it
45 empty, swept, and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh
with himself seven other spirits, more wicked than himself,
and they enter in and dwell there ; and the last state of that
man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto
this wicked generation.

46 While he yet talked to the people, behold, *his* mother and
his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.
47 Then one said unto him ; Behold, thy mother and thy bre-
48 thren stand without, desiring to speak with thee. But he
answered and said unto him that told him ; Who is my mo-
49 ther ? and who are my brethren ? And he stretched forth
his hand towards his disciples, and said ; Behold, my mother,
50 and my brethren. For whosoever shall do the will of my
Father, which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sis-
ter, and mother.

XIII. The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by
2 the sea-side ; and great multitudes were gathered together
unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat ; and the
3 whole multitude stood on the shore. And he spake many
things unto them in parables, saying ; Behold, a sower went
4 forth to sow. And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the
way side ; and the fowls came and devoured them up.
5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much
earth ; and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no
6 deepness of earth ; and when the sun was up, they were

scorched ; and because they had not root, they withered
7 away. And some fell among thorns ; and the thorns sprung
8 up, and choked them. But other fell into good ground ;
and brought forth fruit, some an hundred-fold, some sixty-
9 fold, some thirty-fold. Who hath ears to hear, let him
10 hear. And the disciples came, and said unto him ;
11 Why speakest thou unto them in parables ? He answered
and said unto them ; Because it is given unto you
to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven ; but
12 to them it is not given. For whosoever hath, to him shall
be given, and he shall have more abundance ; but
whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even
13 that he hath. Therefore speak I to them in parables,
because they seeing see not, and hearing they hear
14 not, neither do they understand. And in them is fulfilled
the prophecy of Esaias, which saith ; “ By hearing ye
shall hear, and shall not understand ; and seeing ye shall
15 see, and shall not perceive. For this people’s heart is waxed
gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and *their* eyes
they have closed, lest at any time they should see with *their*
eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with
their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.”
16 But blessed *are* your eyes, for they see ; and your ears, for
17 they hear. For verily I say unto you, that many prophets
and righteous *men* have desired to see *those things* which ye
see, and have not seen *them* ; and to hear *those things* which
18 ye hear, and have not heard *them*. Hear ye there-
19 fore the parable of the sower. When any one heareth the
word of the kingdom, and understandeth *it* not, then cometh
the wicked *one*, and catcheth away that which was sown in
his heart ; this is he which received seed by the way *side*.
20 But he that received the seed into stony places, the same is
he that beareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it ;
21 yet hath he not root in himself, but dureth for a while ; for
when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word,
22 by and by he is offended. He also that received seed
among the thorns, is he that beareth the word, and the care of
this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, choke the word ;
23 and he becometh unfruitful. But he that received seed
into the good ground is he that beareth the word, and under-
standeth *it* ; which also beareth fruit, and bringeth forth,
24 some a hundred-fold, some sixty, some thirty. Another
parable put he forth unto them, saying ; The kingdom of

heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his
25 field. But while men slept, his enemy came, and sowed
26 tares among the wheat; and went his way. But when the
blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared
27 the tares also. So the servants of the householder came and
said unto him; Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy
28 field? from whence then hath it tares? He said unto them;
An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him;
29 Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he
said; Nay; lest, while ye gather up the tares, ye root up
30 also the wheat with them. Let both grow together until the
harvest; and in the time of harvest I will say to the reap-
ers; Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them
in bundles, to burn them; but gather the wheat into
31 my barn.

Another parable put he forth unto
them, saying; The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain
of mustard-seed, which a man took and sowed in his
32 field. Which indeed is the least of all seeds; but when it
is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree,
so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches
33 thereof.

Another parable spake he unto them;
The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman
took, and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was
34 leavened.

All these things spake Jesus unto the
multitude in parables, and without a parable spake he not
35 unto them; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by
the prophet, saying; "I will open my mouth in parables; I
will utter things which have been kept secret from the founda-
tion of the world."

36 Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the
house. And his disciples came unto him, saying; Declare
37 unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered
and said unto them; He that soweth the good seed is the
38 Son of man; the field is the world; the good seed are the
children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of
39 the wicked one; the enemy, that sowed them, is the devil;
the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the
40 angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in
41 the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. The Son
of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of
his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity,
42 and shall cast them into a furnace of fire; there shall be
43 wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous

38 Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answer-
39 ed, saying ; Master, we would see a sign from thee. But
he answered and said unto them ; An evil and adulterous
generation seeketh after a sign ; and there shall no sign be
40 given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas. For as Jonas
was three days and three nights in the whale's belly ; so shall
the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart
41 of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise up in the judg-
ment with this generation, and shall condemn it ; because they
repented at the preaching of Jonas ; and, behold, a greater
42 than Jonas is here. The queen of the south shall rise up in
the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it ; for
she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the
wisdom of Solomon ; and, behold, a greater than Solomon
43 is here. When the unclean spirit is gone out of a
man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and find-
44 eth none. Then he saith ; I will return into my house, from
whence I came out. And when he is come, he findeth it
45 empty, swept, and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh
with himself seven other spirits, more wicked than himself,
and they enter in and dwell there ; and the last *state* of that
man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto
this wicked generation.

46 While he yet talked to the people, behold, *his* mother and
his brethren stood without, desiring to speak with him.
47 Then one said unto him ; Behold, thy mother and thy bre-
48 thren stand without, desiring to speak with thee. But he
answered and said unto him that told him ; Who is my mo-
49 ther ? and who are my brethren ? And he stretched forth
his hand towards his disciples, and said ; Behold, my mother,
50 and my brethren. For whosoever shall do the will of my
Father, which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sis-
ter, and mother.

XIII. The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by
2 the sea-side ; and great multitudes were gathered together
unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat ; and the
3 whole multitude stood on the shore. And he spake many
things unto them in parables, saying ; Behold, a sower went
4 forth to sow. And when he sowed, some *seeds* fell by the
way *side* ; and the fowls came and devoured them up.
5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much
earth ; and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no
6 deepness of earth ; and when the sun was up, they were

- was kept, the daughter of Herodias danced before them ;
7 and pleased Herod ; whereupon he promised with an oath
8 to give her whatsoever she would ask. And she, being before instructed of her mother, said ; Give me here John
9 Baptist's head in a charger. And the king was sorry ; nevertheless, for the oath's sake, and them which sat with him
10 at meat, he commanded *it* to be given *her*. And he sent
11 and beheaded John in the prison. And his head was brought in a charger, and given to the damsel ; and she
12 brought *it* to her mother. And his disciples came and took up the body, and buried it ; and went and told
13 Jesus. When Jesus heard *of it*, he departed thence by ship into a desert place apart ; and when the people had heard *thereof*, they followed him on foot out of the cities.
- 14 And Jesus went forth, and saw a great multitude ; and was moved with compassion toward them, and he healed their
15 sick. And when it was evening his disciples came to him, saying ; This is a desert place, and the time is now past ; send the multitude away, that they may go into the
16 villages, and buy themselves victuals. But Jesus said unto
17 them ; They need not depart ; give ye them to eat. And they say unto him ; We have here but five loaves, and two
18 19 fishes. He said ; Bring them hither to me. And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the grass, *and* took the five loaves and the two fishes, and, looking up to heaven, he blessed ; and brake, and gave the loaves to *his* disciples,
20 and the disciples to the multitude. And they did all eat, and were filled ; and they took up of the fragments that remained twelve baskets full. And they that had eaten were about five thousand men, beside women and children.
- 22 And straightway he constrained *his* disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent
23 the multitudes away. And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray. And
24 when the evening was come, he was there alone. But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves ; for
25 the wind was contrary. And in the fourth watch of the
26 night, he went unto them, walking on the sea. And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying ; It is a spirit ; and they cried out for fear.
27 But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying ; Be of good
28 cheer, it is I ; be not afraid. And Peter answered him

and said ; Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the
29 water. And he said ; Come. And when Peter was come
down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus.
30 But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid ; and
31 beginning to sink, he cried, saying ; Lord, save me ! And
immediately Jesus stretched forth *his* hand, and caught him,
and said unto him ; O thou of little faith, wherefore didst
32 thou doubt ? And when they were come into the ship, the
33 wind ceased. Then they that were in the ship came and
worshipped him, saying ; Of a truth thou art the Son of
God.
34 And when they were gone over, they came into the land
35 of Gennesaret. And when the men of that place had
knowledge of him, they sent out into all that country round
36 about ; and brought unto him all that were diseased, and
besought him that they might only touch the hem of his
garment ; and as many as touched were made perfectly
whole.

XV. Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of
2 Jerusalem, saying ; Why do thy disciples transgress the
tradition of the elders ? for they wash not their hands, when
3 they eat bread. But he answered and said unto them ;
Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God, by
4 your tradition ? For God commanded, saying ; “ Honour
thy father and mother ; ” and ; “ He that curseth father or
5 mother, let him die the death.” But ye say ; Whosoever
shall say to *his* father or *his* mother ; *It is a gift*, by whatso-
6 ever thou mightest be profited by me ; and honour not his
father or his mother, *he shall be free*. Thus have ye made
the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition.
7 Ye hypocrites ! well did Esaias prophcey of you, saying ;
8 “ This people honoureth me with *their* lips ; but their heart
9 is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching
10 *for* doctrines the commandments of men.” And he
called the multitude, and said unto them ; Hear, and under-
11 stand. Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a
man ; but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth
12 a man. Then came his disciples, and said unto him ;
Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended, after they
13 heard this saying ? But he answered and said ; Every
plant, which my heavenly Father hath not planted, shall be
14 rooted up. Let them alone ; they be blind leaders of the
blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into

- 15 the ditch. Then answered Peter and said unto him ; De-
16 clare unto us this parable. And Jesus said ; Are ye also
17 yet without understanding ? Do not ye yet understand, that
whatsoever entereth in at the mouth goeth into the belly, and
18 is cast out into the draught ? But those things which pro-
ceed out of the mouth come forth from the heart, and they
19 defile the man. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts ;
murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blas-
20 phemies. These are *the things* which defile a man ; but to
eat with unwashen hands defileth not a man.
- 21 Then Jesus went thence, and departed into the coasts of
22 Tyre and Sidon. And, behold, a woman of Canaan came
out of the same coast, and cried unto him, saying ; Have
mercy on me, O Lord, *thou* son of David ; my daughter is
23 grievously vexed with a devil. But he answered her not a
word. And his disciples came and besought him, saying ;
24 Send her away, for she crieth after us. But he answered
and said ; I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house
25 of Israel. Then came she and worshipped him, saying ;
26 Lord, help me ! But he answered and said ; It is not meet to
27 take the children's bread, and to cast it to dogs. And she
said ; Truth, Lord ; yet the dogs eat of the crumbs which
28 fall from their master's table. Then Jesus answered and
said unto her ; O woman, great is thy faith ; be it unto thee,
even as thou wilt. And her daughter was made whole from
that very hour.
- 29 And Jesus departed from thence, and came nigh unto the
sea of Galilee ; and went up into a mountain, and sat down
30 there. And great multitudes came unto him, having with
them *those that were* lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many
others ; and cast them down at Jesus' feet, and he healed
31 them ; insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw
the dumb to speak, the maimed to be whole, the lame to
walk, and the blind to see ; and they glorified the God of
32 Israel. Then Jesus called his disciples unto him,
and said ; I have compassion on the multitude, because it is
now three days *that* they continue with me, and they have
nothing to eat ; and I will not send them away fasting, lest they
33 faint in the way. And his disciples say unto him ; Whence
should we have so much bread in the wilderness, as to fill so
34 great a multitude ? And Jesus saith unto them ; How many
loaves have ye ? And they said ; Seven, and a few little fishes.
35 And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground.

36 And he took the seven loaves and the fishes, and gave thanks, and brake *them*, and gave to his disciples, and the
37 disciples to the multitude. And they did all eat, and were filled; and they took up of the broken *meat* that was left
38 seven baskets full. And they that did eat were four thou-
39 sand men, beside women and children. And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

XVI. The Pharisees also and the Sadducees came, and, tempting, desired him that he would shew them a sign from
2 heaven. He answered and said unto them; When it is evening, ye say; *It will be fair weather*; for the sky is red.
3 And in the morning; *It will be foul weather to-day*; for the sky is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites! ye can discern the face of the sky, but can ye not *discern* the signs of the
4 times? A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.
5 And when his disciples were come to the other side, they
6 had forgotten to take bread. Then Jesus said unto them; Take heed, and beware of the ~~leaven~~ of the Pharisees and
7 of the Sadducees. And they reasoned among themselves,
8 saying; *It is because we have taken no bread.* Which when Jesus perceived, he said; O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no
9 bread? Do ye not yet understand, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye
10 took up? Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand,
11 and how many baskets ye took up? How is it that ye do not understand, that I spake *it* not to you concerning bread, that ye should heware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of
12 the Sadducees? Then understood they how that he bade *them* not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

13 When Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying; Whom do men say that I, the
14 Son of man, am? And they said; Some *say that thou art* John the Baptist; some, Elias; and others, Jeremias, or
15 one of the prophets. He saith unto them; But whom say ye that I am? And Simon Peter answered and said;
16 Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God. And Jesus answered and said unto him; Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-
17 jona; for flesh and blood hath not revealed *it* unto thee,

- 18 but my Father which is in heaven. And I say also unto thee, that thou art Peter, and upon this rock will I build my church, and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.
- 19 And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth, shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose
- 20 on earth, shall be loosed in heaven. Then charged he his disciples, that they should tell no man, that he was the
- 21 Christ. From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day.
- 22 Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying; Be
- 23 it far from thee, Lord; this shall not be unto thee. But he turned, and said unto Peter; Get thee behind me, Satan; thou art an offence unto me; for thou savourest not the
- 24 things that be of God, but those that be of men. Then said Jesus unto his disciples; If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow
- 25 me. For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it; and whosoever will lose his life for my sake, shall find it. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?
- 27 For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father, with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works. Verily I say unto you, there be some standing here which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom.

XVII. And after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother; and bringeth them up into a high mountain apart. And he was transfigured before them, and his face did shine as the sun; and his raiment was white as the light. And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias, talking with him. Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus; Lord, it is good for us to be here; if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one

5 for Moses, and one for Elias. While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them; and, behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said; "This is my beloved Son, in

6 whom I am well pleased; hear ye him." And when the disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore

7 afraid. And Jesus came and touched them, and said; Arise,

8 and be not afraid. And when they had lifted up their eyes,

- 9 they saw no man, save Jesus only. And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying ; Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead. And his disciples asked him, saying ;
- 10 the dead. And his disciples asked him, saying ;
- 11 Why then say the scribes that Elias must first come ? And Jesus answered and said unto them ; Elias truly shall first come, and restore all things ; but I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of man suffer of them. Then the disciples understood, that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.
- 12 come, and restore all things ; but I say unto you, that Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of
- 13 man suffer of them. Then the disciples understood, that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.
- 14 And when they were come to the multitude, there came to him a *certain* man, kneeling down to him, and saying ;
- 15 Lord, have mercy on my son ; for he is lunatic and sore vexed ; for oft-times he falleth into the fire, and oft into the
- 16 water. And I brought him to thy disciples, and they could not cure him. Then Jesus answered and said ; O faithless and perverse generation ! how long shall I be with you ?
- 17 not cure him. Then Jesus answered and said ; O faithless and perverse generation ! how long shall I be with you ?
- 18 how long shall I suffer you ? bring him hither to me. And Jesus rebuked the devil, and he departed out of him ; and the child was cured from that very hour. Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said ; Why could not
- 19 the child was cured from that very hour. Then came the disciples to Jesus apart, and said ; Why could not we cast him out ? And Jesus said unto them ; Because of your unbelief. For verily I say unto you, if ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain ;
- 20 we cast him out ? And Jesus said unto them ; Because of your unbelief. For verily I say unto you, if ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain ; Remove hence to yonder place, and it shall remove ; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. Howbeit this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.
- 21 nothing shall be impossible unto you. Howbeit this kind goeth not out, but by prayer and fasting.
- 22 And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them ; The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men, and they shall kill him ; and the third day he shall be raised again. And they were exceeding sorry.
- 23 and they shall kill him ; and the third day he shall be raised again. And they were exceeding sorry.
- 24 And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received tribute *money* came to Peter, and said ; Doth not your master pay tribute ? He saith ; Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying ; What thinkest thou, Simon ? Of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute ? of their own children, or of
- 25 your master pay tribute ? He saith ; Yes. And when he was come into the house, Jesus prevented him, saying ; What thinkest thou, Simon ? Of whom do the kings of the earth take custom or tribute ? of their own children, or of strangers ? Peter saith unto him ; Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him ; Then are the children free. Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up ; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece
- 26 strangers ? Peter saith unto him ; Of strangers. Jesus saith unto him ; Then are the children free. Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up ; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece
- 27 unto him ; Then are the children free. Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up ; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece

of money ; that take, and give unto them for me and thee.

- XVIII. At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying ; Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven ? And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, and said ; Verily I say unto you, except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name, receiveth me. But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and *that* he were drowned in the depth of the sea. Woe unto the world because of offences ! For it must needs be that offences come ; but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh ! Wherefore, if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off, and cast *them* from thee ; it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands, or two feet, to be cast into everlasting fire. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee ; it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell-fire. Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones ; for I say unto you, that in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. How think ye ? if a man have a hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray ; doth he not leave the ninety and nine upon the mountains, and goeth and seeketh that which is gone astray ? And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that *sheep*, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. Even so, it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven that one of these little ones should perish. Moreover, if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go *and* tell him his fault between thee and him alone. If he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother ; but if he will not hear *thee*, *then* take with thee one or two more ; that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell *it* unto the church ; but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as a heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, whatsoever ye shall

bind on earth shall be bound in heaven ; and whatsoever ye
19 shall loose on earth shall he loosed in heaven. Again I say
unto you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching
any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my
20 Father which is in heaven. For where two or three are
gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of
thom.

21 Then came Peter to him, and said ; Lord, how oft shall
my brother sin against me, and I forgive him ? till seven
22 times ? Jesus saith unto him ; Not, I say unto thee, until
23 seven times, but until seventy times seven. Therefore is
the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which
24 would take account of his servants. And when he had be-
gun to reckon, one was brought unto him which owed him
25 ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay,
his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife and chil-
26 dren, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The
servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying ;
27 Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then
the Lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and
28 loosed him, and forgave him the debt. But the same ser-
vant went out, and found one of his fellow servants, which
owed him a hundred pence ; and he laid hands on him, and
took him by the throat, saying ; Pay me that thou owest.
29 And his fellow-servant fell down and besought him, saying ;
30 Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And he
would not ; but went and cast him into prison, till he should
31 pay the debt. So when his fellow servants saw what was
done, they were very sorry ; and came and told unto their
32 lord all that was done. Then his lord, after that he had
called him, said unto him ; O thou wicked servant, I forgave
33 thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me ; shouldest not
thou also have had compassion on thy fellow-servant, even as
34 I had pity on thee ? And his lord was wroth, and delivered
him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due un-
35 to him. So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also
unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his
brother.

XIX. And it came to pass, *that* when Jesus had finished these
sayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coasts
2 of Judea, beyond Jordan. And great multitudes followed
him ; and he healed them there.

3 The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and

- saying unto him ; Is it lawful for a man to put away his
4 wife for every cause ? And he answered and said unto them ;
Have ye not read, that he which made *them* at the beginning,
5 made them male and female ? And he said ; “ For this
cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave
6 to his wife ; and they twain shall be one flesh.” Wherefore
they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore God
7 hath joined together, let not man put asunder. They
say unto him ; Why did Moses then command to give a
8 writing of divorcement, and to put her away ? He saith unto
them ; Moses, because of the hardness of your hearts, suffered
you to put away your wives ; but from the beginning it
9 was not so. And I say unto you, whosoever shall put away
his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another,
committeth adultery ; and whoso marrieth her which is put
10 away doth commit adultery. His disciples say unto
him ; If the case of the man be so with *his* wife, it is not
11 good to marry. But he said unto them ; All men cannot re-
12 ceive this saying, save *they* to whom it is given. For there
are some eunuchs, which were so born from *their* mother’s
womb ; and there are some eunuchs, which were made
eunuchs of men ; and there be eunuchs, which have made
themselves eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven’s sake. He
that is able to receive *it*, let him receive *it*.
13 Then were there brought unto him little children, that he
should put *his* hands on them, and pray ; and the disciples
14 rebuked them. But Jesus said ; Suffer little children, and
forbid them not to come unto me ; for of such is the king-
15 dom of heaven. And he laid *his* hands on them, and de-
parted thence.
16 And, behold, one came and said unto him ; Good Master,
what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life ?
17 And he said unto him ; Why askest thou me concerning
good ? one is good. But if thou wilt enter into life,
18 keep the commandments. He saith unto him ; Which ?
Jesus said ; “ Thou shalt do no murder ; Thou shalt not
commit adultery ; Thou shalt not steal ; Thou shalt not bear
19 false witness ; Honour *thy* father and *thy* mother ;” and ;
20 “ Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.” The young
man saith unto him ; All these things have I kept from my
21 youth up ; what lack I yet ? Jesus said unto him ; If thou
wilt be perfect, go *and* sell that thou hast, and give to the
poor ; and thou shalt have treasure in heaven ; and come

- 22 *and* follow me. But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful; for he had great possessions.
- 23 Then said Jesus unto his disciples; Verily I say unto you, that a rich man shall hardly enter into the
- 24 kingdom of heaven. And again I say unto you, it is easier for a camel to enter through the eye of a needle, than for a
- 25 rich man to enter into the kingdom of God. When the disciples heard *it*, they were exceedingly amazed, saying;
- 26 Who then can be saved? But Jesus beheld *them*, and said unto them; With men this is impossible; but with God all
- 27 things *are* possible. Then answered Peter, and said unto him; Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee;
- 28 what shall we have therefore? And Jesus said unto them; Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones,
- 29 judging the twelve tribes of Israel. And every one that hath forsaken houses, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my name's sake, shall receive a hundred-fold, and shall inherit everlasting
- 30 life. But many *that are first shall be last*; and the
- XX. last *shall be first*. For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man *that is* a householder, which went out early in the
- 2 morning to hire labourers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a-day, he sent
- 3 them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third
- 4 hour, and saw others standing idle in the market-place; and said unto them; Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.
- 5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did
- 6 likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing, and saith unto them; Why stand ye
- 7 here all the day idle? They say unto him; Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them; Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, *that* shall ye receive.
- 8 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward; Call the labourers, and give them *their* hire,
- 9 beginning from the last, unto the first. And when they came that *were hired* about the eleventh hour, they received every
- 10 man a penny. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received
- 11 every man a penny. And when they had received *it*, they
- 12 murmured against the good man of the house, saying;

- These last have wrought *but* one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat
13 of the day. But he answered one of them, and said ; Friend, I do thee no wrong ; didst not thou agree with me
14 for a penny ? Take *that* thine *is*, and go thy way. I will
15 give unto this last even as unto thee. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own ? is thine eye evil because
16 I am good ? So the last shall be first ; and the first, last. For many be called, but few chosen.
- 17 And Jesus going up to Jerusalem, took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them ; Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests and unto the scribes ; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify *him* ; and the third day he shall rise again.
- 20 Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, worshipping *him*, and desiring a certain thing of
21 him. And he said unto her ; What wilt thou ? She saith unto him ; Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on thy left, in thy kingdom.
- 22 But Jesus answered and said ; Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I shall drink of ? They
23 say unto him ; We are able. And he saith unto them ; Ye shall drink indeed of my cup ; but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given to*
24 *them* for whom it is prepared of my Father. And when the ten heard *it*, they were moved with indignation
25 against the two brethren. But Jesus called them unto him, and said ; Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. It shall *not* be so among you ; but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister ;
26 and whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant ; even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.
- 29 And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him. And behold, two blind men, sitting by the way side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying ; Have mercy on us, O Lord, thou Son of David !
31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace. But they cried the more, saying ; Have mercy on us, O Lord, *thou* Son of David ! And Jesus stood still,
- 32

and called them, and said ; What will ye that I shall do
33 unto you ? They say unto him ; Lord, that our eyes may
34 be opened. So Jesus had compassion *on them*, and touched
their eyes ; and immediately their eyes received sight ; and
they followed him.

XXI. And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were
come to Bethphage, unto the Mount of Olives, then sent
2 Jesus two disciples, saying unto them ; Go into the village
over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied,
and a colt with her ; loose *them*, and bring *them* unto me.
3 And if any *man* say aught unto you, ye shall say ; The
Lord hath need of them ; and straightway he will send
4 them. All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which
5 was spoken by the prophet, saying ; “ Tell ye the daughter
of Sion ; Behold, thy King cometh unto thee, meek, and
6 sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.” And the
7 disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them, and
brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes ;
8 and he sat thereon. And a very great multitude spread
their garments in the way ; others cut down branches from
9 the trees, and strawed *them* in the way. And the multitudes
that went before, and that followed, cried, saying ; Hosanna
to the Son of David ; blessed is he that cometh in the name
10 of the Lord ; Hosanna in the highest ! And when
he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying ;
11 Who is this ? And the multitude said ; This is Jesus the
12 prophet, of Nazareth of Galilee. And Jesus went into the
temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in
the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers,
13 and the seats of them that sold doves ; and said unto them ;
It is written ; “ My house shall be called the house of
14 prayer ; but ye have made it a den of thieves.” And the
blind and the lame came to him in the temple, and he healed
15 them. And when the chief priests and scribes saw the won-
derful things that he did, and the children crying in the
temple, and saying ; Hosanna to the Son of David ! they
16 were sore displeased, and said unto him ; Hearest thou
what these say ? And Jesus saith unto them ; Yea ; have
ye never read ; “ Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings
17 thou hast perfected praise ?” And he left them, and went
out of the city into Bethany, and he lodged there.
18 Now in the morning, as he returned into the city, he hur-
19 gred. And when he saw a fig-tree in the way, he came to

- it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only ; and said unto it ; Let no fruit grow on thee henceforward for ever.
- 20 And presently the fig-tree withered away. And when the disciples saw *it*, they marvelled, saying ; How soon is the
- 21 fig-tree withered away ! Jesus answered and said unto them ; Verily I say unto you, if ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this *which is done* to the fig-tree, but also, if ye shall say unto this mountain ; Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea ; it shall be done.
- 22 And all things whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.
- 23 And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said ; By what authority doest thou these
- 24 things ? and who gave thee this authority ? And Jesus answered and said unto them ; I also will ask you one thing ; which if ye tell me, I in like wise will tell you by what authority I do these things ; The baptism of John, whence was it ?
- 25 from heaven, or of men ? And they reasoned with themselves, saying ; If we shall say, from heaven ; he will say
- 26 unto us ; Why did ye not then believe him ? But if we shall say, of men ; we fear the people ; for all hold John
- 27 as a prophet. And they answered Jesus, and said ; We cannot tell. And he said unto them ; Neither tell I you by
- 28 what authority I do these things. But what think ye ? A *certain* man had two sons ; and he came to the first, and said ; Son, go *work* to-day in my vineyard.
- 29 He answered and said ; I will not ; but afterward he repented, and went. And he came to the other and said likewise.
- 30 And he answered and said ; I *go*, sir ; and went not.
- 31 Whether of them twain did the will of *his* father ? They say unto him ; The first. Jesus saith unto them ; Verily I say unto you, that the publicans and the harlots go into the
- 32 kingdom of God before you. For John came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not ; but the publicans and the harlots believed him ; and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe
- 33 him. Hear another parable ; There was a certain householder, which planted a vineyard, and hedged it round about, and digged a wine-press in it, and built a tower ; and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far country.
- 34 And when the time of the fruit drew near, he sent his servants to the husbandmen, that they might receive the fruits

35 of it. And the husbandmen took his servants, and beat one,
36 and killed another, and stoned another. Again, he sent
other servants more than the first; and they did unto them
37 likewise. But last of all he sent unto them his son, saying;
38 They will reverence my son. But when the husbandmen
saw the son, they said among themselves; This is the heir;
come, let us kill him, and let us seize on his inheritance.
39 And they caught him, and cast *him* out of the vineyard, and
40 slew *him*. When the lord, therefore, of the vineyard
41 cometh, what will he do unto those husbandmen? They
say unto him; He will miserably destroy those wicked men;
and will let out *his* vineyard unto other husbandmen, which
42 shall render him the fruits in their seasons. Jesus saith unto
them; Did ye never read in the scriptures; "The stone
which the builders rejected, the same is become the head
of the corner; this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous
43 in our eyes?" Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of
God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing
44 forth the fruits thereof. And whosoever shall fall on this
stone shall be broken; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will
45 grind him to powder. And when the chief priests
and Pharisees had heard his parables, they perceived that he
46 spake of them. But when they sought to lay hands on him,
they feared the multitude; because they took him for a
XXII. prophet. And Jesus answered and spake unto

2 them again by parables, and said; The kingdom of heaven is
like unto a certain king, which made a marriage for his son,
3 and sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to
4 the wedding; and they would not come. Again, he sent
forth other servants, saying; Tell them which are bidden;
Behold, I have prepared my dinner; my oxen and *my* fat-
lings *are* killed, and all things *are* ready; come unto the
5 marriage. But they made light of *it*, and went their ways;
6 one to his farm, another to his merchandise. And the
remnant took his servants, and entreated *them* spitefully, and
7 slew *them*. But when the king heard *thereof*, he was wroth;
and he sent forth his armies, and destroyed those murder-
8 ers, and burned up their city. Then saith he to his ser-
vants; The wedding is ready, but they which were bid-
9 den were not worthy. Go ye therefore, into the high ways,
10 and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage. So
those servants went out into the *highways*, and gathered
together all, as many as they found, both bad and good;

- 11 and the wedding was furnished with guests. And when
the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man
12 which had not on a wedding garment ; and he saith unto
him ; Friend, how earnest thou in hither, not having a wed-
13 ding garment ? And he was speechless. Then said the king
to the servants ; Bind him hand and foot, and take him away,
and cast *him* into outer darkness ; there shall be weep-
14 ing and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few
are chosen.
- 15 Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they
16 might entangle him in *his* talk. And they sent out unto him
their disciples with the Herodians, saying ; Master, we
know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in
truth, neither carest thou for any *man* ; for thou regardest
17 not the person of men. Tell us, therefore, what thinkest
thou ? is it lawful to give tribute unto Cesar, or not ?
18 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said ; Why tempt
19 ye me, ye hypocrites ? Shew me the tribute money. And
20 they brought unto him a penny. And he saith unto them ;
21 Whose is this image and superscription ? They say unto him ;
Cesar's. Then saith he unto them ; Render therefore unto
Cesar the things which are Cesar's ; and unto God the
22 things that are God's. When they had heard *these words*,
they marvelled ; and left him, and went their way.
- 23 The same day came to him the Sadducees, which say
24 that there is no resurrection ; and asked him, saying ; Mas-
ter, Moses said ; " If a man die having no children, his brother
shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother."
25 Now there were with us seven brethren ; and the first, when
he had married a wife, deceased ; and, having no issue, left
26 his wife unto his brother. Likewise the second also, and the
27 third, unto the seventh. And last of all the woman died
28 also. Therefore, in the resurrection, whose wife shall she
29 be of the seven ? for they all had her. Jesus answered and
said unto them ; Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor
30 the power of God. For in the resurrection they neither
marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of
31 God in heaven. But as touching the resurrection of the
dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by
32 God, saying ; " I am the God of Abraham, and the God of
Isaac, and the God of Jacob ?" God is not the God of the
33 dead, but of the living. And when the multitude heard *this*,
they were astonished at his doctrine.

34 But when the Pharisees had heard that he had put the
35 Sadducees to silence, they were gathered together; then
one of them, *which was* a lawyer, asked *him* a question,
36 tempting him, and saying; Master, which is the great com-
37 mandment in the law? Jesus said unto him; "Thou shalt
love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy
38 soul, and with all thy mind." This is the first and great
39 commandment. And the second is like unto it; "Thou
40 shalt love thy neighbour as thyself." On these two com-
mandments hang all the law and the prophets.

41 While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked
42 them, saying; What think ye of Christ? whose son is he?
43 They say unto him; *The son* of David. He saith unto
them; How then doth David in spirit call him Lord? say-
44 ing; "The Lord said unto my Lord; Sit thou on my right
45 hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool." If David
46 then call him Lord, how is he his son? And no man was able
to answer him a word; neither durst any man, from that
day forth, ask him any more questions.

XXIII. Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,
2 saying; The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat.
3 All, therefore, whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* ob-
serve and do; but do not ye after their works; for they say,
4 and do not. For they bind heavy burdens, and grievous to
be borne, and lay *them* on men's shoulders; but they *them-*
5 *selves* will not move them with one of their fingers. But all
their works they do for to be seen of men. They make
6 broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their gar-
7 ments; and love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the
chief seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets,
8 and to be called of men Rabbi, Rabbi. But be not ye
called Rabbi; for one is your Master; and all ye are bre-
9 thren. And call no *man* your father upon the earth; for
10 one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye call-
11 ed masters; for one is your Master, *even* Christ. But he
12 that is greatest among you shall be your servant. And who-
soever shall exalt himself, shall be abased; and he that shall
14 humble himself, shall be exalted. But wo unto you,
scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows'
houses, and for a pretence make long prayer; therefore ye
13 shall receive the greater damnation. Wo unto you, scribes
and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of
heaven against men; for ye neither go in *yourselves*, neither

15 suffer ye them that are entering to go in. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte ; and when he is made, ye make
16 him two-fold more the child of hell than yourselves. Wo unto you, ye blind guides, which say ; Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing ; but whosoever shall swear by
17 the gold of the temple, he is a debtor. Ye fools and blind ! for whether is greater ? the gold, or the temple that sanctifieth the gold ? And ; Whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing ; but whosoever sweareth by the gift that is upon
18 it, he is guilty. Ye fools, and blind ! for whether is greater ? the gift, or the altar that sanctifieth the gift ? Whoso, therefore, shall swear by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all
21 things thereon ; and whoso shall swear by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein ; and he that shall swear by heaven, sweareth by the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye pay tithe of mint, and anise, and cummin ; and have omitted the weightier *matters* of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith. But these ought ye to have
24 done, and not to leave the other undone. Ye blind guides ! which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye make clean the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and unrighteousness. Thou blind Pharisee ! cleanse first that *which* is within the cup and platter, that the outside
27 of them may be clean also. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within
28 full of dead *men's* bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. Wo unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites ! because ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garnish the sepulchres of the righteous,
30 and say ; If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets. Wherefore ye be witnesses unto yourselves, that
32 ye are the children of them which killed the prophets. Fill ye up then the measure of your fathers. Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers ! how can ye escape the damnation of
34 hell ? Wherefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, and wise men, and scribes ; and *some* of them ye shall kill and crucify, and *some* of them shall ye scourge in your synagogues,

35 and persecute *them* from city to city ; that upon you may come all the righteous blood, shed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, son of Barachias, whom ye slew between the temple and the altar.

36 Verily I say unto you, that all these things shall come upon this generation.

37 O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, *thou* that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee ; how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gather-

38 eth her chickens under *her* wings ! and ye would not. Be-

39 hold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you ; Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say ; Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

XXIV. And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple ; and his disciples came to *him*, for to shew him the buildings of the temple. And Jesus said unto them ; See ye not all these things ? verily I say unto you, there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat upon the Mount of Olives, the disciples ~~came unto him~~ privately, saying ; Tell us, when shall these things be ? and what ~~shall~~ be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world ? And Jesus answered and said unto them ; Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying ; I am Christ ; and shall deceive many. And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars ; see that ye be not troubled ; for all ~~these~~ things must come to pass ; but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom ; and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows.

9 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you ; and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. 10 And then shall many be offended ; and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. 14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations ; and then shall the end come.

15 When ye, therefore, shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place ; (whoso readeth, let him understand ;) then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains ; let him

which is on the house-top not come down to take the things
 18 in his house ; neither let him which is in the field return
 19 back to take his clothes. And wo unto them that are with
 20 child, and to them that give suck, in those days ! But pray
 ye, that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sab-
 21 bath-day. For then shall be great tribulation, such as was
 not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever
 22 shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there
 should no flesh be saved ; but for the elect's sake those
 23 days shall be shortened. Then if any man shall say
 24 unto you ; Lo, here is Christ, or there ; believe it not. For
 there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall
 shew great signs and wonders, insomuch that, if *it were* pos-
 25 sible, they shall deceive the very elect. Behold, I have told
 26 you before. Wherefore if they shall say unto you ; Behold,
 he is in the desert ; go not forth ; Behold, *he is* in the secret
 27 chambers ; believe it not. For as the lightning cometh out
 of the east, and shineth even unto the west, so shall also the
 28 coming of the Son of man be. For wheresoever the car-
 29 case is, there will the eagles be gathered together. Im-
 mediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be
 darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the
 stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens
 30 shall be shaken. And then shall appear the sign of the Son
 of man in heaven ; and then shall all the tribes of the earth
 mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the
 31 clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he shall
 send his angels with a great sound of a trumpet ; and they
 shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one
 32 end of heaven to the other. Now learn a parable of
 the fig-tree ; when his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth
 33 leaves, ye know that summer is nigh. So likewise ye, when
 ye shall see all these things, know that it is near, *even* at the
 34 doors. Verily I say unto you, this generation shall not pass,
 35 till all these things be fulfilled. Heaven and earth shall pass
 36 away ; but my words shall not pass away. But of
 that day and hour knoweth no *man*, no, not the angels
 37 of heaven, but the Father only. But as the days of
 Noe *were*, so shall also the coming of the Son of man
 38 be. For as in the days that were before the flood they
 were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in mar-
 39 riage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark, and
 knew not, until the flood came, and took them all away ; so

40 shall also the coming of the Son of man be. Then shall two
 be in the field ; the one shall be taken, and the other left.
 41 Two *women shall be* grinding at the mill ; the one shall be
 42 taken, and the other left. Watch, therefore, for ye know not
 43 what hour your Lord doth come. But know this, that if the
 good man of the house had known in what watch the thief
 would come, he would have watched, and would not have
 44 suffered his house to be broken up. Therefore be ye also
 ready ; for in such an hour as ye think not, the Son of man
 45 cometh. Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his
 lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat
 46 in due season ? Blessed is that servant whom his lord, when
 47 he cometh, shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, that
 48 he shall make him ruler over all his goods. But and if that
 evil servant shall say in his heart ; My lord delayeth his
 49 coming ; and shall begin to smite *his* fellow-servants, and
 50 shall eat and drink with the drunken ; the lord of that ser-
 vant shall come in a day when he looketh not for *him*, and in
 51 an hour that *he* is not ware of ; and shall cut him asunder,
 and appoint *him* his portion ~~with the hypocrites~~ ; there shall
 XXV. be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Then shall
 the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which
 took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom.
 2 3 And five of them were wise, and five were foolish. They
 that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them.
 4 But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps.
 5 While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered, and slept.
 6 And at midnight there was a cry made ; Behold, the bride-
 7 groom cometh ; go ye out to meet him. Then all those
 8 virgins awoke, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish
 said unto the wise ; Give us of your oil, for our lamps are
 9 gone out. But the wise answered, saying ; *Not so* ; lest
 there be not enough for us and you ; go ye rather to them
 10 that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went to
 buy, the bridegroom came ; and they that were ready went
 11 in with him to the marriage ; and the door was shut. After-
 wards came also the other virgins, saying ; Lord, Lord, open
 12 to us. But he answered and said ; Verily I say unto you, I
 13 know you not. Watch, therefore, for ye know neither the day
 14 nor the hour. For the kingdom of heaven is as a man
 travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and
 15 delivered unto them his goods ; and unto one he gave five
 talents, to another two, and to another one ; to every man

according to his several ability ; and straightway took his
16 journey. Then he that had received the five talents went and
17 traded with the same, and made *them* other five talents. And
likewise he that *had received* two, he also gained other two.
18 But he that had received one, went and digged in the earth,
19 and hid his lord's money. After a long time the lord of
20 those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. And so
he that had received five talents, came and brought other
five talents, saying ; Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five
talents ; behold, I have gained beside them five talents more.
21 His Lord said unto him ; Well done, *thou* good and faithful
servant ; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will
make thee ruler over many things ; enter thou into the joy
22 of thy lord. He also that had received two talents came
and said ; Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents ; be-
23 hold, I have gained two other talents beside them. His lord
said unto him ; Well done, good and faithful servant ; thou
hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler
over many things ; enter thou into the joy of thy lord.
24 Then he which had received the one talent came and said ;
Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping
where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast
25 not strawed ; and I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent
26 in the earth ; lo, *there* thou hast *that is* thine. His lord
answered and said unto him ; *Thou* wicked and slothful
servant, didst thou know that I reap where I sowed not,
27 and gather where I have not strawed ? Thou oughtest
therefore to have put my money to the exchangers ; and
then at my coming I should have received mine own with
28 usury. Take therefore the talent from him, and give *it*
29 unto him which hath ten talents. For unto every one that
hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance ; but
from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which
30 he hath. And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer
darkness ; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.
31 When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the
angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory,
32 and before him shall be gathered all nations ; and he shall
separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth *his*
33 sheep from the goats ; and he shall set the sheep on his right
34 hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say
unto them on his right hand ; Come, ye blessed of my
Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foun-

35 dation of the world. For I was a hungered, and ye gave me meat; I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink;
36 I was a stranger, and ye took me in; naked, and ye clothed me; I was sick, and ye visited me; I was in prison,
37 and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying; Lord, when saw we thee a hungered, and fed thee? or thirsty, and gave thee drink? when saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee?
39 or when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them; Verily I say unto you, in as much as ye have done *it* unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.
41 Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand; Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels. For I was a hungered, and ye gave me
42 no meat; I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink; I was a stranger, and ye took me not in; naked, and ye clothed me
44 not; sick, and in prison, and ye visited me not. Then shall they also answer, saying; Lord, when saw we thee a hungered, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in
45 prison, and did not minister unto thee? Then shall he answer them, saying; Verily I say unto you, in as much as ye did *it* not to one of the least of these, ye did *it* not to me.
46 And these shall go away into everlasting punishment; but the righteous into life eternal.

XXVI. And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these 2 sayings, he said unto his disciples; Ye know that after two days is *the feast of the passover*; and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified.

3 Then assembled together the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders of the people, unto the palace of the high 4 priest, who was called Caiaphas; and consulted that they 5 might take Jesus by subtilty, and kill *him*. But they said; Not on the feast *day*, lest there be an uproar among the people.

6 Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon 7 the leper, there came unto him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured *it* on his 8 head as he sat *at meat*. But when his disciples saw *it*, they had indignation, saying; To what purpose is this waste? 9 For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given 10 to the poor. When Jesus understood *it*, he said unto them; Why trouble ye the woman? for she hath wrought a good

- 11 work upon me. For ye have the poor always with you ;
12 but me ye have not always. For in that she hath poured
13 this ointment on my body, she did it for my burial. Verily
I say unto you, wheresoever this gospel shall be preached in
the whole world, *there* shall also this, that this woman hath
done, be told for a memorial of her.
- 14 Then one of the twelve, called Judas Iscariot, went unto
15 the chief priests, and said *unto them* ; What will ye give me,
and I will deliver him unto you ? And they covenanted with
16 him for thirty pieces of silver. And from that time he sought
opportunity to betray him.
- 17 Now the first *day* of the *feast* of unleavened bread
the disciples came to Jesus, saying unto him ; Where wilt
18 thou that we prepare for thee to eat the passover ? And
he said ; Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him ;
The Master saith ; My time is at hand ; I will keep the
passover at thy house with my disciples. And the disciples
19 did as Jesus had appointed them ; and they made ready
20 the passover. Now when the even was come, he sat
21 down with the twelve. And as they did eat, he said ;
22 Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. And
they were exceeding sorrowful, and began every one of them
23 to say unto him ; Lord, is it I ? And he answered and said ;
He that dippeth *his* hand with me in the dish, the same shall
24 betray me. The Son of man goeth, as it is written of him ;
but wo unto that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed !
it had been good for that man if he had not been born.
- 25 Then Judas, which betrayed him, answered and said ; Mas-
26 ter, is it I ? He said unto him ; Thou hast said. And,
as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and
broke it, and gave it to the disciples, and said ; Take, eat ;
27 this is my body. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and
28 gave it to them, saying ; Drink ye all of it ; for this is my
blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the
29 remission of sins. But I say unto you, I will not drink
henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I
drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.
- 30 And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into the
31 Mount of Olives. Then saith Jesus unto them ; All ye
shall be offended because of me this night ; for it is written ;
“ I will smite the Shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall
32 be scattered abroad.” But after I am risen again, I will go
33 before you into Galilee. Peter answered and said unto

- him ; Though all *men* shall be offended because of thee, yet
34 will I never be offended. Jesus said unto him ; Verily I
say unto thee, that this night, before the cock crow, thou
35 shalt deny me thrice. Peter said unto him ; Though I
should die with thee, yet will I not deny thee. Likewise
also said all the disciples.
- 36 Then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethse-
mane, and saith unto the disciples ; Sit ye here, while I go
37 and pray yonder. And he took with him Peter and the two
sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and very heavy.
38 Then saith he unto them ; My soul is exceeding sorrowful,
39 even unto death ; tarry ye here, and watch with me. And
he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, say-
ing ; O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from
40 me ; nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou *wilt*. And he
cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith
unto Peter ; What ! could ye not watch with me one hour ?
41 Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation ; the
42 spirit indeed *is* willing, but the flesh is weak. He went
away again the second time, and prayed, saying ; O my
Father, if this cup may not pass away from me, except I
43 drink it, thy will be done. And he came and found them
44 asleep again ; (for their eyes were heavy ;) and he left
them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, say-
45 ing the same words. Then cometh he to his disciples, and
saith unto them ; Are ye sleeping on now, and taking *your*
rest ? behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is
46 betrayed into the hands of sinners. Rise, let us be going ;
behold, he is at hand that doth betray me.
- 47 And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came,
and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from
48 the chief priests and elders of the people. Now he that be-
trayed him gave them a sign, saying ; Whomsoever I shall
49 kiss, that same is he ; hold him fast. And forthwith he
came to Jesus, and said ; Hail, Master ; and kissed him.
50 And Jesus said unto him ; Friend, wherefore art thou
come ? Then came they and laid hands on Jesus, and took
51 him. And, behold, one of them which were with
Jesus stretched out *his* hand, and drew his sword ; and struck
52 a servant of the high priest, and smote off his ear. Then
said Jesus unto him ; Put up again thy sword into his place ;
for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.
53 Thinkest thou that I cannot now pray to my Father, and he

shall presently give me more than twelve legions of angels ?
54 But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled ? for thus it
55 must be.

In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes ; Ye are come out as against a thief, with swords and staves for to take me ; I sat daily with you teaching in the
56 temple, and ye laid no hold on me ; but all this was done, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled. Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled.

57 And they that had laid hold on Jesus led *him* away to Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were assembled. But Peter followed him afar off, unto the high priest's palacc ; and went in, and sat with the servants
59 to see the end. Now the chief priests and elders, and all the council, sought false witness against Jesus, to put him to
60 death. But they found none, though many false witnesses came. At the last came two false witnesses, and said ;
61 This *fellow* said ; I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days. And the high priest arose, and said unto him ; Answerest thou nothing ? what is it *which*
62 these witness against thee ? But Jesus held his peace. And the high priest answered and said unto him ; I adjure thee, by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the
64 Christ, the Son of God. Jesus saith unto him ; Thou hast said. Nevertheless I say unto you, hereafter shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and
65 coming in the clouds of heaven. Then the high priest rent his clothes, saying ; He hath spoken blasphemy ; what further need have we of witnesses ? behold, now ye have heard his blasphemy. What think ye ? They answered and said ;
67 He is guilty of death. Then did they spit in his face, and buffeted *him* ; and others smote *him* with the palms of their
68 hands, saying ; Prophecy unto us, thou Christ, who is he that smote thee ?

69 Now Peter sat without in the palacc. And a damsel came unto him, saying ; Thou also wast with Jesus of
70 Galilee. But he denied before them all, saying ; I know not what thou sayest. And when he was gone out into the porch, another *maid* saw him, and said unto them that were
72 there ; This *fellow* was also with Jesus of Nazareth. And again he denied with an oath ; I do not know the man.
73 And after a while came unto him they that stood by, and said to Peter ; Surely thou also art *one* of them ; for thy speech
74 bewrayeth thee. Then began he to curse and to swear,

saying ; I know not the man. And immediately the cock
75 crew. And Peter remembered the words of Jesus, which
said unto him ; Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me
thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

XXVII. When the morning was come, all the chief priests and
elders of the people took counsel against Jesus, to put him to
2 death. And when they had bound him, they led him away,
and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor.

3 Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that
he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the
4 thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, saying ;
I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood.
5 And they said ; What is *that* to us ? see thou *to that*. And
he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and depart-
6 ed ; and went and hanged himself. And the chief

priests took the silver pieces, and said ; It is not lawful for to
put them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.
7 And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's
8 field, to bury strangers in. Wherefore that field was called,
9 the field of blood, unto this day. Then was fulfilled that
which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying ; " And
they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that
was valued ; whom they of the children of Israel did value,
10 and gave them for the potter's field ; as the Lord appointed
me."

11 And Jesus stood before the governor ; and the governor
asked him, saying ; Art thou the king of the Jews ? And
12 Jesus said unto him ; Thou sayest. And when he was ac-
cused of the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing.
13 Then saith Pilate unto him ; Hearest thou not how many
14 things they witness against thee ? And he answered him to
never a word ; insomuch that the governor marvelled great-
15 ly. Now at *that* feast the governor was wont to release unto
16 the people a prisoner, whom they would. And they had
17 then a notable prisoner, called Barabbas. Therefore, when
they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them ; Whom
will ye that I release unto you ? Barabbas ? or Jesus, which
18 is called Christ ? For he knew that for envy they had de-
19 livered him.

When he was set down on the judg-
ment-seat, his wife sent unto him, saying ; Have thou nothing
to do with that just man ; for I have suffered many things this
20 day in a dream because of him. But the chief priests
and elders persuaded the multitude, that they should ask

- 21 Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. The governor answered and said unto them ; Whether of the twain will ye that I release
22 unto you ? They said ; Barabbas. Pilate said unto them ; What shall I do then with Jesus, which is called Christ ?
23 *They* all said unto him ; Let him be crucified. And the governor said ; Why ? what evil hath he done ? But they
24 cried out the more, saying ; Let him be crucified. When Pilate saw that he could prevail nothing, but *that* rather a tumult was made, he took water, and washed *his* hands before the multitude, saying ; I am innocent of the blood of
25 this just person ; see ye *to it*. Then answered all the people, and said ; His blood *be* on us, and on our children.
26 Then released he Barabbas unto them ; and when he had
27 scourged Jesus, he delivered *him* to be crucified. Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the common hall,
28 and gathered unto him the whole band of *soldiers*. And they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe. And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put it upon
29 his head, and a reed in his right hand ; and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, saying ; Hail, King of
30 the Jews ! And they spit upon him, and took the reed and
31 smote him on the head. And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him ; and led him away to crucify *him*.
32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name ; him they compelled to bear his cross. And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is
34 to say, a place of a scull, they gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall ; and when he had tasted *thereof*, he would
35 not drink. And they crucified him, and parted his garments, casting lots. And sitting down, they watched him
37 there. And they set up over his head his accusation written ;
38 "THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS." Then were there two thieves crucified with him ; one on the right
39 hand, and another on the left. And they that passed by,
40 reviled him, wagging their heads, and saying ; Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself ; if thou be the Son of God, come down from the
41 cross. Likewise also the chief priests, mocking *him*, with the scribes and elders, said ; He saved others, himself he cannot save ; if he be the King of Israel, let him now come
43 down from the cross, and we will believe him. He trusted in God ; let him deliver him now, if he will have him ; for

- 44 he said ; I am the Son of God. The thieves also which were
45 crucified with him, cast the same in his teeth. Now
from the sixth hour there was darkness over all the land,
46 unto the ninth hour. And about the ninth hour Jesus cried
with a loud voice, saying ; Eli, Eli ; lama sabachthani ? that
is to say ; My God, my God ; why hast thou forsaken me ?
47 Some of them that stood there, when they heard *that*, said ;
48 *This man* calleth for Elias. And straightway one of them
ran, and took a sponge, and filled *it* with vinegar, and put *it*
49 on a reed, and gave him to drink. The rest said ; Let be ; let
50 us see whether Elias will come to save him. Jesus,
when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the
51 ghost. And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent
in twain from the top to the bottom ; and the earth did
52 quake, and the rocks rent, and the graves were opened ;
53 and many bodies of the saints which slept, arose, and came
out of the graves, and went into the holy city after his res-
54 urrection, and appeared unto many. Now when the cen-
turion, and they that were with him watching Jesus, saw the
earthquake, and those things that were done, they feared
55 greatly, saying ; Truly this was the Son of God. And
many women were there, beholding afar off ; which followed
56 Jesus from Galilee, ministering unto him ; among which was
Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James and Joses,
and the mother of Zebedee's children.
- 57 When the even was come, there came a rich man of Ari-
mathea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disci-
58 ple. He went to Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.
59 Then Pilate commanded the body to be delivered. And
when Joseph had taken the body, he wrapped it in a clean
60 linen cloth, and laid it in his own new tomb, which he had
hewn out in the rock ; and he rolled a great stone to the
61 door of the sepulchre, and departed. And there was Mary
Magdalene, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sep-
ulchre.
- 62 Now the next day, that followed the day of the prepara-
tion, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto
63 Pilate, saying ; Sir, we remember that that deceiver said,
while he was yet alive ; After three days I will rise again.
64 Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until
the third day, lest his disciples come and steal him away,
and say unto the people ; He is risen from the dead ; so the
65 last error shall be worse than the first. Pilate said unto

them ; Ye have a watch ; go your way, make it as sure as
66 ye can. So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, seal-
ing the stone, and setting a watch.

XXVIII. In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward
the first *day* of the week, came Mary Magdalene, and the
2 other Mary, to see the sepulchre. And, behold, there was
a great earthquake ; for the angel of the Lord descended
from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the
3 door, and sat upon it. His countenance was like lightning,
4 and his raiment white as snow. And for fear of him the
5 keepers did shake, and became as dead *men*. And the an-
gel answered and said unto the women ; Fear not ye ; for
6 I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified. He is not
here ; for he is risen, as he said. Come, see the place
7 where the Lord lay. And go quickly, and tell his disciples
that he is risen from the dead ; and, behold, he goeth before
you into Galilee ; there shall ye see him ; lo, I have told
8 you. And they departed quickly from the sepulchre with
fear and great joy, and did run to bring his disciples word.
9 And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, Jesus met them,
saying ; All hail. And they came and held him by the feet,
10 and worshipped him. Then said Jesus unto them ; Be not
afraid ; go tell my brethren that they go into Galilee, and
there shall they see me.

11 Now when they were going, behold, some of the watch
came into the city, and shewed unto the chief priests all the
12 things that were done. And when they were assembled
with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave large
13 money unto the soldiers, saying ; Say ye, his disciples came
14 by night, and stole him *away*, while we slept. And if this
come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and se-
15 cure you. So they took the money, and did as they were
taught. And this saying is commonly reported among the
Jews until this day.

16 Then the eleven disciples went away into Galilee, into a
17 mountain, where Jesus had appointed them. And when
they saw him, they worshipped him ; but some doubted.
18 And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying ; All power is
19 given unto me in heaven and in earth. Go ye, and teach all
nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the
20 Son, and of the Holy Ghost ; teaching them to observe all
things, whatsoever I have commanded you. And, lo, I am
with you alway, *even* unto the end of the world.

THE

G O S P E L

ACCORDING TO MARK.

THE beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of
 2 God. As it is written in *Esaias* the prophet ; " Behold, I
 send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy
 3 way ; The voice of ~~one~~ crying in the wilderness ; Prepare ye
 4 the way of the Lord, make his paths straight ;" John did bap-
 tize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance
 5 for the remission of sins. And there went out unto him all the
 land of Judea, and all they of Jerusalem ; and were baptized
 6 of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins. And
 John was clothed with camel's hair, and with a girdle of a
 skin about his loins, and he did eat locusts and wild honey.
 7 And he preached, saying ; There cometh one mightier than I
 after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to
 8 stoop down and unloose. I indeed have baptized you with
 water ; but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.
 9 And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from
 Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.
 10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the
 heavens opened, and the Spirit, like a dove, descending upon
 11 him. And there came a voice from heaven, *saying* ; " Thou
 art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."
 12 And immediately the Spirit driveth him into the wilder-
 13 ness. And he was in the wilderness forty days, tempted of
 Satan, and was with the wild beasts ; and the angels minis-
 tered unto him.
 14 Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into
 15 Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God, and

- saying ; The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at
16 hand ; repent ye, and believe the gospel. Now as
he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew
his brother, casting a net into the sea ; for they were fishers.
17 And Jesus said unto them ; Come ye after me, and I will make
18 you to become fishers of men. And straightway they for-
19 sook their nets, and followed him. And when he had
gone a little farther thence, he saw James the son of Zebe-
20 dee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mend-
ing their nets ; and straightway he called them. And
they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired ser-
vants, and went after him.
21 And they went into Capernaum ; and straightway on the
sabbath-day he entered into the synagogue, and taught.
22 And they were astonished at his doctrine ; for he taught
them as one that had authority, and not as the
23 scribes. And there was in their synagogue a man
24 with an unclean spirit, and he cried out, saying ; Let us
alone ; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth ?
thou art come to destroy us ; I know thee who thou art, the
25 Holy One of God. And Jesus rebuked him, saying ; Hold
26 thy peace, and come out of him. And when the unclean
spirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out
27 of him. And they were all amazed, insomuch that they
questioned among themselves, saying ; What thing is this ?
what new doctrine is this ? for with authority commandeth
28 he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him. And im-
mediately his fame spread abroad throughout all the region
round about Galilee.
29 And forthwith, when they were come out of the syna-
gogue, they entered into the house of Simon and Andrew,
30 with James and John. But Simon's wife's mother lay sick
31 of a fever ; and anon they tell him of her. And he came
and took her by the hand, and lift her up ; and imme-
diately the fever left her ; and she ministered unto
32 them. And at even, when the sun did set, they
brought unto him all that were diseased, and them that were
33 possessed with devils ; and all the city was gathered to-
34 gether at the door. And he healed many that were sick of
divers diseases ; and cast out many devils, and suffered not
35 the devils to speak, because they knew him. And
in the morning, a great while before day, rising up he went
out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon and they that were with him followed after him.
37 And when they had found him, they said unto him ;
38 All men seek for thee. And he said unto them ; Let
us go into the next towns, that I may preach there also ;
39 for therefore came I forth. And he preached in their syn-
agogues, throughout all Galilee, and cast out devils.
40 And there came a leper to him beseeching him, and
kneeling down to him, and saying unto him ; If thou wilt,
41 thou canst make me clean. And Jesus, moved with com-
passion, put forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto
42 him ; I will ; be thou clean. And as soon as he had spok-
en, immediately the leprosy departed from him, and he was
43 cleansed. And he straightly charged him, and forthwith
44 sent him away, and saith unto him ; See thou say nothing to
any man ; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and
offer for thy cleansing those things which Moses command-
45 ed, for a testimony unto them. But he went out, and be-
gan to publish it much, and to blaze abroad the matter, inso-
much that Jesus could no more openly enter into the city ;
but was without in desert places, and they came to him from
every quarter.

II. And again he entered into Capernaum after some days ;
2 and it was noised that he was in the house. And straightway
many were gathered together, insomuch that there was no
room to receive them, no, not so much as about the door ;
3 and he preached the word unto them. And they come unto
him, bringing one sick of the palsy, which was borne of four.
4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for the press,
they uncovered the roof, where he was ; and when they had
broken it up, they let down the bed, wherein the sick of the
5 palsy lay. When Jesus saw their faith, he said unto the
6 sick of the palsy ; Son, thy sins be forgiven. But there
were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in
7 their hearts ; Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies ?
8 who can forgive sins but God only ? And immediately
when Jesus perceived in his spirit that they so reasoned
within themselves, he said unto them ; Why reason ye these
9 things in your hearts ? Whether is it easier ? to say to the
sick of the palsy ; Thy sins be forgiven ? or to say ; Arise,
10 take up thy bed, and walk ? But that ye may know that
the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins ; (he
11 saith to the sick of the palsy ;) I say unto thee ; Arise, take
12 up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house. And imme-

diately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all ; insonmuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying ; We never saw it on this fashion.

13 And he went forth again by the sea-side ; and all the
14 multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them. And as he passed by, he saw Levi the son of Alphaeus, sitting at the receipt of custom, and said unto him ; Follow me. And he
15 arose and followed him. And it came to pass, that, as Jesus sat at meat in his house, many publicans and sinners sat also together with Jesus and his disciples ; for there were many,
16 and they followed him. And when the scribes and Pharisees saw him eat with publicans and sinners, they said unto his disciples ; How is it that he eateth and drinketh with
17 publicans and sinners ? When Jesus heard it, he saith unto them ; They that are whole have no need of the physician, but they that are sick. I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.

18 And the disciples of John and the Pharisees used to fast ; and they come and say unto him ; Why do the disciples of John and of the Pharisees fast, but thy disciples fast
19 not ? And Jesus said unto them ; Can the children of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them ? as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot
20 fast. But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then shall they fast in that
21 day. No man seweth a piece of new cloth on an old garment ; else the new piece that filled it up taketh away from
22 the old, and the rent is made worse. And no man putteth new wine into old bottles ; else the new wine doth burst the bottles, and the wine is spilled, and the bottles will be marred ; but new wine must be put into new bottles.

23 And it came to pass, that he went through the corn-fields on the sabbath-day, and his disciples began, as they went, to
24 pluck the ears of corn. And the Pharisees said unto him ; Behold, why do they on the sabbath-day that which is not
25 lawful ? And he said unto them ; Have ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was a hungered, he, and
26 they that were with him ? how he went into the house of God in the days of Abiathar the high priest, and did eat the shew-bread, which is not lawful to eat, but for the priests,
27 and gave also to them which were with him ? And he said unto them ; The Sabbath was made for man, and not man
28 for the Sabbath. Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath.

- III. And he entered again into the synagogue ; and there
2 was a man there which had a withered hand ; and they
watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath-
3 day, that they might accuse him. And he saith unto the
4 man which had the withered hand ; Stand forth. And he
saith unto them ; Is it lawful to do good on the sabbath-days,
or to do evil ? to save life, or to kill ? But they held their
5 peace. And when he had looked round about on them with
anger, being grieved for the hardness of their hearts, he
saith unto the man ; Stretch forth thine hand. And he
6 stretched it out ; and his hand was restored. And the
Pharisees went forth, and straightway took counsel with
the Herodians against him, how they might destroy him.
- 7 But Jesus withdrew himself with his disciples to the sea ;
and a great multitude from Galilee followed him ; and from
8 Judea, and from Jerusalem, and from Idumea, and from be-
yond Jordan, and they about Tyre and Sidon, a great multi-
tude, ~~when they had heard what~~ great things he did, came
9 unto him. And he spake to his disciples, ~~that a small ship~~
should wait on him because of the multitude, lest they should
10 ~~throng him. For he had healed many,~~ insomuch that they
pressed upon him, for to touch him, ~~as many as~~ had
11 plagues. And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down
before him, and cried, saying ; Thou art the Son of God.
- 12 And he straitly charged them that they should not make
him known.
- 13 And he goeth up into a mountain, and calleth unto him
14 whom he would ; and they came unto him. And he or-
dained twelve, that they should be with him, and that he
15 might send them forth to preach, and to have power to
16 heal sicknesses, and to cast out devils. And Simon he sur-
17 named Peter ; and James the *son* of Zebedee, and John
the brother of James ; and he surnamed them Boanerges,
18 which is, the sons of thunder ; and Andrew, and Philip, and
Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the
son of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the zealot,
19 and Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him.
- 20 And they went into a house. And the multitude cometh
together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread.
- 21 And when his friends heard *of it*, they went out to lay hold
22 on him ; for they said ; He is beside himself. And the
scribes, which came down from Jerusalem, said ; He hath
Beelzebub ; and ; By the prince of the devils casteth he out

23 devils. And he called them unto him, and said unto them
24 in parables ; How can Satan cast out Satan ? And if a
kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand ;
25 and if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot
26 stand ; and if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided,
27 he cannot stand, but hath an end. No man can enter into a
strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he will first
bind the strong man ; and then he will spoil his house.
28 Verily I say unto you, all sins shall be forgiven unto the sons
of men, and the blasphemies wherewith soever they shall
29 blaspheme ; but he that shall blaspheme against the Holy
Ghost hath never forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal
30 damnation. Because they said ; He hath an unclean spirit.
31 There came then his mother and his brethren ; and, stand-
32 ing without, sent unto him, calling him. And the multitude
sat about him ; and they said unto him ; Behold, thy moth-
33 er and thy brethren without seek for thee. And he answer-
ed them, saying ; Who is my mother, or my brethren ?
34 And he looked round about on them which sat about him,
35 and said ; Behold my mother and my brethren. For who-
soever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and
my sister, and mother.

IV. And he began again to teach by the sea-side ; and there
was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entered
into a ship, and sat in the sea ; and the whole multitude
2 was by the sea on the land. And he taught them many
things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine ;
3 Harken ; Behold, there went out a sower to sow.
4 And it came to pass, as he sowed, some fell by the way-side ;
5 and the fowls came and devoured it up. And some fell on
stony ground, where it had not much earth ; and immedi-
6 ately it sprang up, because it had no depth of earth. But
when the sun was up, it was scorched, and because it had no
7 root, it withered away. And some fell among thorns ; and
the thorns grew up, and choked it, and it yielded no fruit.
8 And other fell on good ground ; and did yield fruit that
sprang up and increased ; and brought forth, some thirty, and
9 some sixty, and some a hundred. And he said ; He that
10 hath ears to hear, let him hear. And when he was
alone, they that were about him, with the twelve, asked of
11 him the parable. And he said unto them ; Unto you it is
given to know the mystery of the kingdom of God ; but
unto them that are without all *these* things are done in para-

12 bles ; that seeing they may see, and not perceive ; and hearing they may hear, and not understand ; lest at any time they should be converted, and *their* sins should be forgiven
13 them. And he said unto them ; Know ye not this parable ?
14 and how then will ye know all parables ? The sower soweth
15 the word. And these are they by the way-side, where the word is sown, but when they have heard, Satan cometh immediately, and taketh away the word that was sown in their
16 hearts. And these are they likewise which are sown on stony ground, who, when they have heard the word, immediately
17 receive it with gladness ; and have no root in themselves, and so endure but for a time ; afterward, when affliction or persecution ariseth for the word's sake, immediately they are offend-
18 ed. And others are they which are sown among thorns ;
19 these are they who hear the word, and the cares of the world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word ; and it becometh unfruitful.
20 And these are they which are sown on good ground, such as hear the word, and receive it ; and bring forth fruit, some
21 thirty fold, some sixty, and some a hundred. And he said unto them ; Is a candle brought to be put under a bushel, or under a bed ? and not to be set on a candlestick ?
22 For there is nothing hid, which shall not be manifested ; neither was any thing kept secret, but that it should come
23 abroad. If any man have ears to hear, let him hear.
24 And he said unto them ; Take heed what ye hear. With what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you. For he that hath, to him shall be given ; and he that hath not,
25 from him shall be taken even that which he hath. And he said ; So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast
26 seed into the ground, and should sleep and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth
27 not how. For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself, first the blade, then the ear, after that the full corn in the ear.
28 But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth
29 in the sickle, because the harvest is come. And he said ; Whercunto shall we liken the kingdom of God ? or
30 with what comparison shall we compare it ? It is like a grain of mustard-seed, which, when it is sown in the earth, is
31 less than all the seeds that be in the earth ; but when it is sown, it groweth up, and becometh greater than all herbs, and shooteth out great branches, so that the fowls of the
32 air may lodge under the shadow of it. And with many
33

- such parables spake he the word unto them, as they were
34 able to hear it. But without a parable spake he not unto
them ; and when they were alone, he expounded all things
to his disciples.
- 35 And the same day, when the even was come, he saith un-
36 to them ; Let us pass over unto the other side. And when
they had sent away the multitude, they took him even as he
was in the ship ; and there were also with him other ships.
- 37 And there arose a great storm of wind ; and the waves beat
38 into the ship, so that it was now full. And he was in the hinder
part of the ship, asleep on a pillow ; and they awake him,
and say unto him ; Master, carest thou not that we perish ?
- 39 And he arose, and rebuked the wind, and said unto the sea ;
Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a
40 great calm. And he said unto them ; Why are ye so fear-
41 ful ? how is it that ye have no faith ? And they feared exceed-
ingly, and said one to another ; What manner of man
is this, that even the wind and the sea obey him ?
- V. And they came over unto the other side of the sea, into
2 the country of the Gadarenes. And when he was come out
of the ship, immediately there met him out of the tombs a
3 man with an unclean spirit, who had *his* dwelling among the
tombs ; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains,
4 because that he had been often bound with fetters and
chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him,
and the fetters broken in pieces ; neither could any *man*
5 tame him ; and always, night and day, he was in the tombs,
and in the mountains, crying, and cutting himself with
6 stones. But when he saw Jesus afar off, he came, and
7 worshipped him ; and cried with a loud voice, and said ;
What have I to do with thee, Jesus, *thou* Son of the most
high God ? I adjure thee by God, that thou torment me
8 not. (For he said unto him ; Come out of the man, *thou*
9 unclean spirit.) And he asked him ; What *is* thy name ?
And he saith to him ; My name *is* Legion ; for we are many.
- 10 And he besought him much that he would not send them
11 away out of the country. Now there ~~was~~ there, nigh unto
12 the mountain, a great herd of swine feeding. And the
devils besought him, saying ; Send us into the swine, that
13 we may enter into them. And forthwith Jesus gave them
leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into
the swine ; and the herd ran violently down a steep place
into the sea ; they were about two thousand ; and were

14 choked in the sea. And they that fed them fled, and told
it in the city, and in the country. And they went out to
15 see what it was that was done. And they come to Jesus,
and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the
legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind; and they
16 were afraid. And they that saw *it* told them how it befel to
him that was possessed with the devil, and *also* concerning
17 the swine. And they began to pray him to depart out of
18 their coasts. And when he was come into the ship, he that
had been possessed with the devil prayed him that he might
19 be with him. And he suffered him not, but saith unto him;
Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the
Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compassion on
20 thee. And he departed, and began to publish in Deca-
polis how great things Jesus had done for him; and all *men*
did marvel.

21 And when Jesus was passed over again by ship unto the
other side, much people gathered unto him; and he was
22 nigh unto the sea. And, behold, there cometh one
of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and when
23 he saw him, he fell at his feet, and besought him greatly,
saying; My little daughter lieth at the point of death; *I*
pray thee, come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be
24 healed; and she shall live. And Jesus went with him; and
25 much people followed him, and thronged him.

And
a certain woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years,
26 and had suffered many things of many physicians, and had
spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather
27 grew worse, when she had heard of Jesus, came in the press
28 behind, and touched his garment. (For she said; If I may
29 touch but his clothes, I shall be whole.) And straightway
the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in *her*
30 body that she was healed of that plague. And Jesus imme-
diately knowing in himself that virtue had gone out of him,
turned him about in the press, and said; Who touched my
31 clothes? And his disciples said unto him; Thou seest the
multitude thronging thee; and sayest thou; Who touched
32 me? And he looked round about to see her that had done
33 this thing. But the woman fearing and trembling, knowing
what was done in her, came and fell down before him, and
34 told him all the truth. And he said unto her; Daughter,
thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole
35 of thy plague. While he yet spake, there came

from the ruler of the synagogue's *house certain* which said ;
Thy daughter is dead ; why troublest thou the Master any
36 further ? As soon as Jesus heard the word that was spoken,
he saith unto the ruler of the synagogue ; Be not afraid,
37 only believe. And he suffered no man to follow him, save
38 Peter, and James, and John the brother of James. And he
cometh to the house of the ruler of the synagogue, and
seeth the tumult, and them that wept and wailed greatly.
39 And when he was come in, he saith unto them ; Why make
ye this ado, and weep ? the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.
40 And they laughed him to scorn. But when he had put
them all out, he taketh the father and the mother of the dam-
sel, and them that were with him, and entereth in where the
41 damsel was. And he took the damsel by the hand, and said
unto her ; Talitha, cumi ; which is, being interpreted ;
42 Damsel, I say unto thee, arise. And straightway the damsel
arose and walked ; for she was *of the age* of twelve years.
43 And they were astonished with a great astonishment. And
he charged them straitly that no man should know it ; and
commanded that something should be given her to eat.

VI. And he went out from thence, and came into his own
2 country ; and his disciples follow him. And when the sab-
bath day was come, he began to teach in the synagogue.
And many hearing *him* were astonished, saying ; From
whence hath this man these things ? and what wisdom is this
which is given unto him ? even such mighty works are
3 wrought by his hands. Is not this the carpenter, the son
of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and
Simon ? and are not his sisters here with us ? And they
4 were offended at him. But Jesus said unto them ; A pro-
phet is not without honor, but in his own country, and among
5 his own kin, and in his own house. And he could there do
no mighty work, save that he laid his hand upon a few sick
6 folk, and healed *them*. And he marvelled because of their
unbelief.

7 And he went around about the villages teaching. And
he calleth unto him the twelve, and began to send them
forth by two and two ; and gave them power over unclean
8 spirits, and commanded them that they should take nothing
for *their* journey, save a staff only ; no scrip, no bread, no
9 money in *their* purse ; but *be* shod with sandals ; and put
10 not on two coats. And he said unto them ; In what place
soever ye enter into a house, there abide till ye depart

- 11 from that place. And whosoever shall not receive you, nor
12 hear you, when ye depart thence shake off the dust un-
13 der your feet for a testimony against them. And
14 they went out, and preached that men should repent ;
15 and they cast out many devils, and anointed with oil many
16 that were sick, and healed *them*.
17 And king Herod heard of *him*, (for his name was spread
18 abroad,) and he said ; That John the Baptist was risen from
19 the dead, and therefore mighty works do shew forth them-
20 selves in him. Others said ; That it is Elias. And others
21 said ; That it is a prophet, *even* as one of the prophets. But
22 when Herod heard *thereof*, he said ; John, whom I behead-
23 ed, is risen from the dead. For Herod himself
24 had sent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in
25 prison, for Herodias' sake, his brother Philip's wife, for he
26 had married her. For John had said unto Herod ; It is
27 not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife. Therefore
28 Herodias had a quarrel against him, and would have killed
29 him ; but she could not. For Herod feared John, knowing
30 that he was a just man and a holy ; and observed him ;
and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him
gladly. And when a convenient day was come, that Herod
on his birth day made a supper to his lords, high captains,
and chief estates of Galilee ; and when the daughter of the
said Herodias came in, and danced, and pleased Herod and
them that sat with him, the king said unto the damsel ; Ask
of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee. And he
swore unto her ; Whatsoever thou shall ask of me, I will
give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom. And she went
forth, and said unto her mother ; What shall I ask ? And
she said ; The head of John the Baptist. And she came in
straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying ; I
will that thou give me by and by in a charger the head of
John the Baptist. And the king was exceeding sorry,
yet for his oath's sake, and for their sakes which sat with
him, he would not reject her. And immediately the king
sent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought.
And he went and beheaded him in the prison ; and brought
his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel ; and the
damsel gave it to her mother. And when his disciples
heard of *it*, they came and took up his corpse, and laid it in
a tomb.
- 30 And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Jesus,

- and told him all things, both what they had done, and what
31 they had taught. And he said unto them ; Come ye yourselves apart into a desert place, and rest a while. For there were many coming and going ; and they had no leisure so
32 much as to eat. And they departed into a desert place by
33 ship privately. And *the people* saw them departing ; and many knew *him* ; and ran afoot thither out of all cities.
34 And when he came out he saw much people, and was moved with compassion toward them, because they were as sheep, not having a shepherd ; and he began to teach them
35 many things. And when the day was now far spent, his disciples came unto him, and said ; This is a desert
36 place, and now the time is far passed ; send them away, that they may go into the country round about, and into the villages, and buy themselves bread ; for they have nothing
37 to eat. He answered and said unto them ; Give ye them to eat. And they say unto him ; Shall we go and buy two
38 hundred pennyworth of bread, and give them to eat ? He saith unto them ; How many loaves have ye ? go and see. And when they knew, they say ; Five, and two fishes.
39 And he commanded them to make all sit down by companies upon the green grass. And they sat down in ranks, by
40 hundreds, and by fifties. And when he had taken the five loaves and the two fishes, he looked up to heaven, and blessed, and brake the loaves, and gave *them* to his disciples to set before them ; and the two fishes divided he
42 among them all. And they did all eat, and were filled.
43 And they took up twelve baskets full of the fragments, and
44 of the fishes. And they that did eat of the loaves were five thousand men.
45 And straightway he constrained his disciples to get into the ship, and to go to the other side before unto Bethsaida, while he sent away the people. And when he had sent them
46 away, he departed into a mountain to pray. And when even was come, the ship was in the midst of the sea ;
47 and he alone on the land. And he saw them toiling in rowing ; for the wind was contrary unto them. And about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking upon the sea ; and would have passed by them. But when
48 they saw him walking upon the sea, they supposed it had been a spirit, and cried out. For they all saw him, and were troubled. And immediately he talked with them, and
49 saith unto them ; Be of good cheer ; it is I, be not afraid.
50

51 And he went up unto them into the ship ; and the wind ceased.
And they were sore amazed in themselves beyond measure,
52 and wondered. For they considered not *the miracle* of the
53 loaves ; for their heart was hardened. And when they had
passed over, they came into the land of Gennesaret ; and
drew to the shore.

54 And when they were come out of the ship, straightway
55 they knew him, and ran through that whole region round
about, and began to carry about in beds those that were sick,
56 where they heard he was. And whithersoever he entered,
into villages, or cities, or country, they laid the sick in the
streets, and besought him that they might touch if it were but
the border of his garment ; and as many as touched him
were made whole.

VII. Then came together unto him the Pharisees, and cer-
2 tain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem ; and when
they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled, that is
3 to say, with unwashen hands ; (for the Pharisees, and all the
Jews, except they *wash their* hands oft, eat not, holding the
4 tradition of the elders ; and *when they come* from the mar-
ket, except they wash, they eat not ; and many other things
there be which they have received to hold, *as* the washing of
5 cups, and pots, and of brazen vessels, and tables ;) then the
Pharisees and scribes asked him ; Why walk not thy disci-
ples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread
6 with defiled hands ? He answered and said unto them ; Well
hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written ;
“ This people honoureth me with *their* lips, but their heart
7 is far from me. Howbeit, in vain do they worship me,
8 teaching *for* doctrines the commandments of men.” For lay-
ing aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of
men, *as* the washing of pots and cups ; and many other
9 such like things ye do. And he said unto them ; Full well
ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your
10 own tradition. For Moses said ; “ Honour thy father and
thy mother ; ” and ; “ Whoso curseth father or mother, let
11 him die the death.” But ye say ; If a man shall say to his
father or mother ; *It is* Corban, (that is to say, a gift,) by
whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me, *he shall be*
12 *free* ; and ye suffer him no more to do aught for his father
13 or his mother, making the word of God of none effect
through your tradition, which ye have delivered ; and many
14 such like things do ye. And when he had called all

- the people unto him, he said unto them ; Hearken unto me
15 every one *of you*, and understand. There is nothing from
without a man, that entering into him, can defile him ; but
the things which come out of him, those are they that de-
16 file the man. If any man have ears to hear, let him
17 hear. And when he was entered into the house from
the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable.
18 And he saith unto them ; Are ye so without understanding
also ? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from with-
19 out entereth into the man, *it* cannot defile him ? because it
entereth not into his heart, but into the belly ; and goeth
20 out into the draught, purging all meats. And he said ;
That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man.
21 For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil
22 thoughts ; adulteries, fornications, murders, thefts, covetous-
ness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphe-
23 my, pride, foolishness ; all these evil things come from with-
in, and defile the man.
- 24 And from thence he arose, and went into the borders of
Tyre and Sidon ; and entered into a house, and would
25 have no man know *it* ; but he could not be hid. For a
certain woman, whose young daughter had an unclean spirit,
26 heard of him, and came and fell at his feet ; (the woman
was a Greek, a Syrophenician by nation ;) and she besought
him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.
27 But Jesus said unto her ; Let the children first be filled ;
for it is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast *it*
28 unto the dogs. And she answered and said unto him ;
Yes, Lord ; yet the dogs under the table eat of the chil-
29 dren's crumbs. And he said unto her ; For this saying go
30 thy way ; the devil is gone out of thy daughter. And
when she was come to her house, she found the devil gone
out, and her daughter laid upon the bed.
- 31 And again departing from the coasts of Tyre and Sidon,
he came unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the
32 coasts of Decapolis. And they bring unto him one that was
deaf, and had an impediment in his speech, and they beseech
33 him to put his hand upon him. And he took him aside
from the multitude, and put his fingers into his ears, and he
34 spit, and touched his tongue ; and looking up to heaven, he
sighed, and saith unto him ; Ephphatha, that is, be opened.
35 And straightway his ears were opened ; and the string of his
36 tongue was loosed, and he spake plain. And he charged

them that they should tell no man ; but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it.

37 And they were beyond measure astonished, saying ; He hath done all things well ; he maketh both the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

VIII. In those days, the multitude being very great, and having nothing to eat, he called his disciples unto him, and

2 saith unto them ; I have compassion on the multitude ; because it is now three days *that* they have been with me, and

3 they have nothing to eat. And if I send them away fasting to their own houses, they will faint by the way ; for divers of

4 them came from far. And his disciples answered him ;

From whence can a man satisfy these *men* with bread here

5 in the wilderness ? And he asked them ; How many loaves

6 have ye ? And they said ; Seven. And he commanded the

people to sit down on the ground ; and he took the seven loaves, and gave thanks, and brake, and gave to his disciples

to set before *them* ; and they did set *them* before the people.

7 And they had a few small fishes ; and he blessed, and com-

8 manded to set them also before *them*. So they did eat, and

were filled ; and they took up of the broken *meat* that was

9 left, seven baskets. And they that had eaten were about

four thousand ; and he sent them away.

10 And straightway he entered into a ship with his disciples,

11 and came into the parts of Dalmanutha. And the Pharisees

came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him

12 a sign from heaven, tempting him. And he sighed deeply

in his spirit, and saith ; Why doth this generation seek after

a sign ? Verily I say unto you, there shall no sign be given

13 to this generation. And he left them, and entering into the

ship again, departed to the other side.

14 Now *the disciples* had forgotten to take bread, neither had

15 they in the ship with them more than one loaf. And he

charged them, saying ; Take heed, beware of the leaven of

16 the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod. And they rea-

soned among themselves, saying ; *It is* because we have no

17 bread. And when Jesus knew *it*, he saith unto them ;

Why reason ye, because ye have no bread ? Perceive ye

not yet, neither understand ? have ye your heart yet hard-

18 ened ? Having eyes, see ye not ? and having ears, hear ye

19 not ? and do ye not remember ? When I brake the five

loaves among five thousand, how many baskets full of frag-

20 ments took ye up ? They say unto him ; Twelve. And

- when the seven among four thousand, how many baskets full
21 of fragments took ye up ? And they said ; Seven. And
he said unto them ; How is it that ye do not understand ?
22 And he cometh to Bethsaida. And they bring a blind
23 man unto him, and besought him to touch him. And he
took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the
town ; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands
24 upon him, he asked him if he saw aught. And he looked
25 up, and said ; I see men, as trees, walking. After that, he
put *his* hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up ;
26 and he was restored, and saw every man clearly. And he
sent him away to his house, saying ; Neither go into the
town, nor tell it to any in the town.
- 27 And Jesus went out, and his disciples, into the towns of
Cesarea Philippi. And by the way he asked his disciples,
28 saying unto them ; Whom do men say that I am ? And
they answered ; John the Baptist ; but some *say* Elias ;
29 and others, one of the prophets. And he saith unto them ;
But whom say ye that I am ? And Peter answereth and
30 saith unto him ; Thou art the Christ. And he charged
31 them that they should tell no man of him. And he
began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many
things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests,
and the scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again ;
32 and he spake that saying openly. And Peter took him, and
33 began to rebuke him. But when he had turned about, and
looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying ; Get
thee behind me, Satan ; for thou savourest not the things
34 that be of God, but the things that be of men. And
when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also,
he said unto them ; Whosoever will follow after me, let him
35 deny himself, and take up his cross and follow me. For
whosoever will save his life, shall lose it ; but whosoever
shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, shall save it.
36 (For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole
37 world, and lose his own soul ? or what shall a man give in
38 exchange for his soul ?) Whosoever therefore shall be
ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sin-
ful generation, of him also shall the Son of man be ashamed,
when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy
IX. angels. And he said unto them ; Verily I say unto
you, that there be some of them that stand here, which

shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power.

2 And after six days Jesus taketh with him Peter, and James, and John, and leadeth them up into a high mountain apart by themselves ; and he was transfigured before them.

3 And his raiment became shining, exceeding white as snow, 4 so as no fuller on earth can white them. And there appeared unto them Elias, with Moses ; and they were talking with Jesus.

5 And Peter answered and said to Jesus ; Master, it is good for us to be here ; and let us make three tabernacles, one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for

6 Elias. For he wist not what to say ; for they were sore 7 afraid. And there was a cloud that overshadowed them ;

and a voice came out of the cloud ; This is my beloved Son ; hear him. And suddenly, when they had

8 looked round about, they saw no man any more, save Jesus 9 only with themselves. And as they came down from the

mountain, he charged them, that they should tell no man what things they had seen, till the Son of man were risen

10 from the dead. And they kept that saying with themselves, questioning one with another what the rising

11 from the dead should mean. And they asked him, saying ; 12 Why say the scribes that Elias must first come ? And he

answered and told them ; Elias verily cometh first, and restoreth all things ; and how it is written of the Son of man,

13 that he must suffer many things, and be set at nought. But I say unto you, that Elias is indeed come, and they have done

unto him whatsoever they listed, as it is written of him. 14 And when he came to his disciples, he saw a great multi-

tude about them, and the scribes questioning with them. 15 And straightway all the people, when they beheld him, were

16 greatly amazed, and running to him, saluted him. And he 17 asked them ; What question ye among yourselves ? And one

of the multitude answered and said ; Master, I have brought 18 unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit. And where-

soever he taketh him, he teareth him ; and he foameth, and gnasheth with his teeth, and pineth away. And I spake to

thy disciples that they should cast him out, and they could 19 not. He answereth, and saith unto them ; O faithless generation, how long shall I be with you ? how long shall I suffer

20 you ? bring him unto me. And they brought him unto him. And when he saw him, straightway the spirit tare him ; and

he fell on the ground, and wallowed, foaming. And he

- 21 asked his father ; How long is it ago, since this came unto
22 him? And he said ; Of a child ; and oft-times it hath cast
him into the fire, and into the waters, to destroy him ; but if
thou canst do any thing, have compassion on us, and help us.
23 Jesus said unto him ; If thou canst believe ; all things *are*
24 possible to him that believeth. And straightway the father
of the child cried out, and said with tears ; I believe ; help
25 thou mine unbelief. When Jesus saw that the people came
running together, he rebuked the foul spirit, saying unto him ;
Thou dumb and deaf spirit, I charge thee ; Come out of
26 him, and enter no more into him. And *the spirit* cried, and
rent *him* sore, and came out of him. And he was as one
27 dead, insomuch that many said, he is dead. But Jesus
took him by the hand, and lifted him up ; and he
28 arose. And when he was come into the house, his
disciples asked him privately ; Why could not we cast him
29 out. And he said unto them ; This kind can come forth by
nothing, but by prayer and fasting.
30 And they departed thence, and passed through Galilee ;
31 and he would not that any man should know it. For he
taught his disciples, and said unto them ; The Son of man
is delivered into the hands of men, and they shall kill him ;
and after that he is killed, he shall rise the third day.
32 But they understood not that saying, and were afraid to ask
him.
33 And he came to Capernaum ; and being in the house, he
asked them ; What was it that ye disputed among yourselves
34 by the way ? But they held their peace ; for by the way
they had disputed among themselves, who *should be* the
35 greatest. And he sat down, and called the twelve, and saith
unto them ; If any man desire to be first, *the same* shall be
36 last of all, and servant of all. And he took a child, and set
him in the midst of them, and when he had taken him in his
37 arms, he said unto them ; Whosoever shall receive one of
such children in my name, receiveth me ; and whosoever
shall receive me, receiveth not me, but him that sent
38 me. And John answered him, saying ; Master, we
saw one casting out devils in thy name ; and we forbade
39 him, because he followeth not us. But Jesus said ; Forbid
him not. For there is no man which shall do a miracle in
40 my name, that can lightly speak evil of me. For he that is
41 not against you, is on your part. For whosoever shall give
you a cup of water to drink for the reason that ye belong to

Christ, verily I say unto you, he shall not lose his reward. And whosoever shall offend one of *these* little ones that believe in me, it is better for him that a mill-stone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea. And if thy hand offend thee, cut it off; it is better for thee to enter into life maimed, than having two hands to go into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched, where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thy foot offend thee, cut it off; it is better for thee to enter halt into life, than having two feet to be cast into hell, into the fire that never shall be quenched, where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out; it is better for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, than having two eyes to be cast into hell-fire, where their worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched. For every one shall be salted with fire; and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. Salt is good; but if the salt have lost his saltiness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another.

X. And he arose from thence, and cometh into the coasts of Judea, by the farther side of Jordan; and the people resort unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again. And the Pharisees came to him, and asked him; Is it lawful for a man to put away *his* wife? tempting him. And he answered and said unto them; What did Moses command you? And they said; Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put *her* away. And Jesus answered and said unto them; For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept. But from the beginning of the creation, God made them male and female. "For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife; and they twain shall be one flesh." So then they are no more twain, but one flesh. What therefore, God hath joined together, let not man put asunder. And in the house his disciples asked him again of the same *matter*. And he saith unto them; Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.

And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them; and *his* disciples rebuked those that brought *them*. But when Jesus saw *it*, he was much displeased,

- and said unto them ; Suffer the little children to come unto me, forbid them not ; for of such is the kingdom of God.
- 15 Verily I say unto you, whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.
- 16 And he took them up in his arms, put *his* hands upon them, and blessed them.
- 17 And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and asked him ; Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life ?
- 18 And Jesus said unto him ; Why callest thou me good ?
- 19 *there is none good, but one, that is God.* Thou knowest the commandments ; “ Do not commit adultery ; Do not kill ; Do not steal ; Do not bear false witness ; Defraud not ; Honour thy father and mother.” And he answered and said unto him ; Master, all these have I observed from my youth.
- 21 Then Jesus beholding him, loved him, and said unto him ; One thing thou lackest ; go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor ; and thou shalt have treasure in heaven ; and come, take up the cross, and follow me. And he was sad at that saying, and went away grieved ; for he
- 22 had great possessions. And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto his disciples ; How hardly shall they
- 24 that have riches enter into the kingdom of God ! And the disciples were astonished at his words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them ; Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the kingdom of God !
- 25 It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.
- 26 And they were astonished out of measure, saying among
- 27 themselves ; Who *then can be saved ?* And Jesus looking upon them, saith ; With men *it is impossible*, but not with God ; for with God all things are possible.
- 28 Peter began to say unto him ; Lo, we have left all, and
- 29 have followed thee. Jesus answered and said ; Verily I say unto you, *there is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or*
- 30 *lands, for my sake, and for the gospel's sake, but he shall receive a hundred-fold, now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with per-*
- 31 *secutions, and in the world to come, eternal life.* But many *that are first shall be last ; and the last, first.*
- 32 And they were in the way, going up to Jerusalem ; and Jesus went before them ; and they were amazed, and as they

followed, they were afraid. And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them what things should happen unto him, 33 *saying* ; Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests, and unto the scribes ; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him to the Gentiles, and they shall mock him, and shall scourge him, and shall spit upon him, and shall kill him ; and the third day he shall rise again. 34 And James and John, the sons of Zebedee, come unto him, saying ; Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall desire. And he said unto them ; 35 What would ye that I should do for you ? They said unto him ; Grant unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, 36 and the other on thy left hand, in thy glory. But Jesus said unto them ; Ye know not what ye ask. Can ye drink of the cup that I drink of, and be baptized with the baptism that 37 I am baptized with ? And they said unto him ; We can. And Jesus said unto them ; Ye shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of ; and with the baptism that I am baptized 38 withal shall ye be baptized ; but to sit on my right hand and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to 39 them for whom it is prepared. And when the ten heard it, they began to be much displeased with James and John. 40 But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them ; Ye know, that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles, exercise lordship over them, and their great ones exercise authority upon them. But so shall it not be among you ; 41 but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your minister ; and whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be servant 42 of all ; for even the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many. 43 And they came to Jericho ; and as he went out of Jericho with his disciples, and a great number of people, blind Bartimeus, the son of Timeus, sat by the highway-side begging. And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say ; Jesus, *thou* son of 44 David, have mercy on me. And many charged him that he should hold his peace ; but he cried the more a great deal ; 45 Thou son of David, have mercy on me. And Jesus stood still, and commanded him to be called ; and they call the blind man, saying unto him ; Be of good comfort, rise ; 46 he calleth thee. And he, casting away his garment, rose, 47 and came to Jesus. And Jesus answered and said unto him ;

What wilt thou that I should do unto thee ? The blind man
52 said unto him ; Lord, that I might receive my sight. And
Jesus said unto him ; Go thy way ; thy faith hath made
thee whole. And immediately he received his sight, and
followed him in the way.

XI. And when they came nigh to Jerusalem, unto Beth-
phage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth
2 forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them ; Go your
way into the village over against you ; and as soon as ye be
entered into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon never man
3 sat ; loose him, and bring *him*. And if any man say unto
you ; Why do ye this ? say ye ; The Lord hath need of
4 him ; and straightway he will send him hither. And they
went their way, and found a colt tied by the door without,
5 in a place where two ways met ; and they loose him. And
certain of them that stood there said unto them ; What do
6 ye, loosing the colt ? And they said unto them even as
7 Jesus had commanded ; and they let them go. And they
brought the colt to Jesus, and cast their garments on him ;
8 and he sat upon him. And many spread their garments in
the way ; and others cut down branches off the trees, and
9 strewed them in the way. And they that went before, and
they that followed, cried, saying ; Hosanna ; blessed is he
10 that cometh in the name of the Lord ; Blessed *be* the
coming kingdom of our father David ; Hosanna in the
11 highest. And Jesus entered into Jerusalem, and
into the temple ; and when he had looked round about upon
all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto
Bethany, with the twelve.

12 And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany,
13 he was hungry ; and seeing a fig-tree afar off, having leaves,
he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon ; and when
he came to it, he found nothing but leaves ; for the time of
14 figs was not yet. And he answered and said unto it ; No
man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his disciples
15 heard it. And they come to Jerusalem ; and he
went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold
and bought in the temple ; and overthrew the tables of the
16 money-changers, and the seats of them that sold doves ; and
would not suffer that any man should carry *any* vessel through
17 the temple. And he taught, saying unto them ; Is it not
written ; " My house shall be called, of all nations, the house
18 of prayer ? but ye have made it a den of thieves." And

the scribes and chief priests heard it, and sought how they might destroy him; for they feared him, because all the people was astonished at his doctrine. And when even was
19 come, he went out of the city. And in the morning,
20 as they passed by, they saw the fig-tree dried up from the roots. And Peter calling to remembrance, saith unto him;
21 Master, behold, the fig-tree which thou cursedst is withered away. And Jesus answering, saith unto them; Have faith
22 in God. For verily I say unto you, that whosoever shall say unto this mountain; Be thou removed, and be thou cast
23 into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he
24 shall have whatsoever he saith. Therefore I say unto you, what things soever ye desire when ye pray, believe that ye
25 receive them; and ye shall have them. And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have aught against any; that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses.
26 But, if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

27 And they come again to Jerusalem. And as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief priests,
28 and the scribes, and the elders, and say unto him; By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this
29 authority, to do these things? And Jesus answered and said unto them; I will also ask of you one question; and
30 answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things. The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or of
31 men? answer me. And they reasoned with themselves, saying; If we shall say; From heaven, he will say; Why
32 then did ye not believe him? But if we shall say; Of men; they feared the people; for all men counted John, that he
33 was a prophet indeed. And they answered and said unto Jesus; We cannot tell. And Jesus answering, saith unto them; Neither do I tell you, by what authority I do these
XII. things.

And he began to speak unto them by parables; A certain man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged a place for the wine-fat, and built a tower; and let it out to husbandmen, and went into a far
2 country. And at the season he sent to the husbandmen a servant, that he might receive from the husbandmen of the
3 fruit of the vineyard. And they caught him, and beat him,
4 and sent him away empty. And again he sent unto them another servant; and at him they cast stones, and wounded

5 *him* in the head, and sent *him* away shamefully handled. And he sent another; and *him* they killed; and many others,
6 beating some, and killing some. Having yet therefore one son, his well-beloved, he sent him also last unto them, saying; They will reverence my son. But those husbandmen said among themselves; This is the heir; come, let us kill
7 him, and the inheritance shall be ours. And they took him, and killed *him*, and cast *him* out of the vineyard. What shall, therefore, the lord of the vineyard do? He will come and destroy the husbandmen, and will give the vineyard
8 unto others. And have ye not read this scripture; "The stone which the builders rejected, is become the head of the
9 corner; this was the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes?" And they sought to lay hold on him, but
10 feared the people; for they knew that he had spoken the parable against them. And they left him, and went their way.
11 And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees, and of the Herodians, to catch him in *his* words. And when they
12 were come, they say unto him; Master, we know that thou art true, and carest for no man; for thou regardest not the person of men, but teachest the way of God in truth; is it
13 lawful to give tribute to Cesar, or not? shall we give, or shall we not give? But he, knowing their hypocrisy, said
14 unto them; Why tempt ye me? bring me a penny, that I may see it. And they brought it. And he saith unto them; Whose is this image, and superscription? And they said
15 unto him; Cesar's. And Jesus answering, said unto them; Render to Cesar the things that are Cesar's, and to God the things that are God's. And they marvelled at him.
16 Then come unto him the Sadducees, which say **there is no resurrection**; and they asked
17 him, saying; Master, Moses wrote unto us, "if a man's brother die, and leave *his wife behind him*, and leave no children, that his brother should take his wife, and raise
18 up seed unto his brother." Now there were seven brethren; and the first took a wife, and dying left no seed. And the
19 second took her and died, neither left he any seed; and the third likewise. And the seven had her, and left no
20 seed. Last of all, the woman died also. In the resurrection therefore, when they shall rise, whose wife shall she be
21 of them? for the seven had her to wife. And Jesus answering, said unto them; Do ye not therefore err, because
22 ye know not the scriptures, neither the power of God? For

when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor
26 are given in marriage, but are as the angels in heaven. And
as touching the dead, that they rise, have ye not read in the
book of Moses, how in the bush God spake unto him, say-
ing; "*I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and*
27 *the God of Jacob?*" He is not the God of the dead, but
28 of the living. Ye therefore do greatly err. And
one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning
together, and perceiving that he had answered them well,
29 asked him; Which is the first commandment of all? And
Jesus answered him; The first commandment of all *is*;
30 "*Hear, O Israel, the Lord our God is one Lord; and thou*
shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all
thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength."
31 *This is the first commandment. And the second is like,*
namely this; "Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself."
32 *There is none other commandment greater than these. And*
the scribe said unto him; Well Master, thou hast said the truth,
33 *for there is one God, and there is none other but he; and*
to love him with all the heart, and with all the understand-
ing, and with all the soul, and with all the strength, and to
love his neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt-
34 *offerings and sacrifices. And when Jesus saw that he an-*
swered discreetly, he said unto him; Thou art not far from
the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him
35 *any question.* And Jesus answered and said,
while he taught in the temple; How say the scribes, that
36 Christ is the son of David? For David himself said by the
Holy Ghost; "*The Lord saith to my Lord; Sit thou on*
37 *my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool.*" David
therefore himself calleth him Lord; and whence is he *then* his
38 son? And the common people heard him gladly.
And he said unto them in his doctrine; Beware of the scribes,
which love to go in long clothing, and *love* salutations in the
39 market-places, and the chief seats in the synagogues, and
40 the uppermost rooms at feasts; which devour widows'
houses, and for a pretence make long prayers; these shall
receive greater damnation.
41 And Jesus sat over against the treasury, and beheld how
the people cast money into the treasury. And many that
42 were rich cast in much. And there came a certain poor
widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing.
43 And he called unto him his disciples, and said unto them;

Verily I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast more
44 in, than all they which have cast into the treasury. For all
they did cast in of their abundance ; but she of her want did
cast in all that she had, *even* all her living.

XIII. And as he went out of the temple, one of his disciples
saith unto him ; Master, see what manner of stones, and
2 what buildings *are here* ! And Jesus answering, said
unto him ; Seest thou these great buildings ? there shall not be
left one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown
3 down. And as he sat upon the mount of Olives,
over against the temple, Peter, and James, and John, and
4 Andrew, asked him privately ; Tell us, when shall these
things be, and what *shall be* the sign, when all these things
5 shall be fulfilled ? And Jesus answering them, began to
6 say ; Take heed lest any *man* deceive you. For many
shall come in my name, saying ; I am *Christ* ; and shall
7 deceive many. And when ye shall hear of wars, and ru-
mours of wars, be ye not troubled ; for *such things* must
8 needs be ; but the end *shall not be* yet. For nation shall
rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom ; and there
shall be earthquakes in *divers* places, and there shall be
famines, and troubles. These *are* the beginnings of sor-
9 rows. But take heed to yourselves ; for they shall deliver
you up to councils, and in the synagogues ye shall be beaten,
and ye shall be brought before rulers and kings, for my sake,
10 for a testimony against them. And the gospel must first be
11 published among all nations. But when they shall lead *you*,
and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye
shall speak, neither do ye premeditate ; but whatsoever
shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye ; for it is not
12 ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost. Now, the brother shall
betray the brother to death, and the father the son ; and
children shall rise up against *their* parents, and shall cause
13 them to be put to death. And ye shall be hated of all *men*,
for my name's sake. But he that shall endure unto the end,
14 the same shall be saved. But when ye shall see the
abomination of desolation standing where it ought not ;
(let him that readeth understand ;) then let them that be in
15 Judea flee to the mountains ; and let him that is on the
house-top not go down into the house, neither enter *therein*,
16 to take any thing out of his house ; and let him that is in
17 the field not turn back again for to take up his garment. But
wo to them that are with child, and to them that give suck in

18 those days ! And pray ye, that your flight be not in the win-
19 ter. For in those days shall be affliction, such as was not
from the beginning of the creation, which God created, unto
20 this time, neither shall be. And except that the Lord had
shortened those days, no flesh should be saved ; but for the
elect's sake, whom he hath chosen, he hath shortened the
21 days. And then if any man shall say to you ; Lo,
22 here is Christ ; or ; Lo, he is there ; believe him not. For
false Christs, and false prophets shall rise, and shall shew
signs and wonders, to seduce, if it were possible, even the
23 elect. But take ye heed ; behold, I have foretold you
24 all things. But in those days, after that tribu-
lation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not
25 give her light ; and the stars of heaven shall fall, and the
26 powers that are in heaven shall be shaken. And then shall
they see the Son of man coming in the clouds, with great
27 power and glory. And then shall he send his angels, and
shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the
uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of hea-
28 ven. Now learn a parable of the fig-tree ; when
her branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know
29 that summer is near. So ye in like manner, when ye shall
see these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, even
30 at the doors. Verily I say unto you, that this generation
31 shall not pass, till all these things be done. Heaven and earth
32 shall pass away ; but my words shall not pass away. But
of that day or that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels
33 which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father. Take
ye heed, watch and pray ; for ye know not when the time is.
34 For the Son of man is as a man taking a far journey, who
left his house, and gave authority to his servants, and to
every man his work, and commanded the porter to watch.
35 Watch ye therefore ; for ye know not when the master of
the house cometh, at even, or at midnight, or at the cock-
36 crowing, or in the morning ; lest coming suddenly, he find
37 you sleeping. And what I say unto you, I say unto all ;
Watch.

XIV. After two days was the feast of the passover, and of
unleavened bread ; and the chief priests and the scribes
sought how they might take him by craft, and put him to
2 death. But they said ; Not on the feast-day, lest there be an
uproar of the people.

3 And being in Bethany in the house of Simon the leper,

as he sat at meat, there came a woman having an alabaster-box of ointment, of spikenard very precious ; and she brake
4 the box, and poured *it* on his head. And there were some that had indignation within themselves, and said ; Why was
5 this waste of the ointment made ? For this ointment might have been sold for more than three hundred pence, and have been given to the poor. And they murmured
6 against her. And Jesus said ; Let her alone ; why trouble
7 ye her ? she hath wrought a good work on me. For ye have the poor with you always, and whensoever ye will ye
8 may do them good ; but me ye have not always. She hath done what she could ; she is come aforehand to anoint my
9 body to the burying. Verily I say unto you, wheresoever this gospel shall be preached throughout the whole world, *this* also that she hath done shall be spoken of, for a memorial of her.

10 And Judas Iscariot, one of the twelve, went unto the chief
11 priests, to betray him unto them. And when they heard *it*, they were glad ; and promised to give him money. And he sought, how he might conveniently betray him.
12 And the first day of unleavened bread, when they killed the passover, his disciples said unto him ; Where wilt thou that we go and prepare, that thou mayest eat the passover ?
13 And he sendeth forth two of his disciples, and saith unto them ; Go ye into the city ; and there shall meet you a man
14 bearing a pitcher of water ; follow him ; and wheresoever he shall go in, say ye to the good-man of the house ; The Master saith ; Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall
15 eat the passover with my disciples ? And he will show you a large upper room furnished *and* prepared ; there make
16 ready for us. And ~~his disciples~~ went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them ; and they
17 made ready the passover. And in the evening he cometh with the twelve. And as they sat, and did eat, Jesus
18 said ; Verily I say unto you, one of you which eateth with
19 me, shall betray me. And they began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him one by one ; *Is it I ?* and another *said ;*
20 *Is it I ?* And he answered and said unto them ; *It is one*
21 of the twelve that dippeth with me in the dish. The son of man indeed goeth, as it is written of him ; but wo to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed ! good were it
22 for that man if he had never been born. And as they did eat, Jesus took bread, and blessed and brake *it*, and

23 gave to them, and said ; Take ; this is my body. And he took the cup, and when he had given thanks, he gave it to
24 them ; and they all drank of it. And he said unto them ; This is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for
25 many. Verily I say unto you, I will drink no more of the fruit of the vine, until that day, that I drink it new in the kingdom of God.

26 And when they had sung a hymn, they went out into
27 the mount of Olives. And Jesus saith unto them ; All ye shall be offended because of me this night ; for it is written ; "I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep shall be
28 scattered." But after that I am risen, I will go before you
29 into Galilee. But Peter said unto him ; Although all shall be
30 offended, yet *will* not I. And Jesus saith unto him ; Verily I say unto thee, that this day, *even* in this night, before the cock
31 crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. But he spake the more vehemently ; If I should die with thee, I will not deny thee in any wise. Likewise also said they all.

32 And they came to a place, which was named Gethsemane ; and he ~~saith to~~ his disciples ; Sit ye here, while I shall pray. And he taketh ~~with him~~ Peter, and James, and John ; and began to be sore amazed, ~~and to be~~ very heavy.
34 And he saith unto them ; My soul is exceeding sorrowful unto death ; tarry ye here, and watch. And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground ; and prayed that, if it
35 were possible, the hour might pass from him. And he said ; Abba, Father, all things *are* possible unto thee ; take away this cup from me. Nevertheless, not what I will, but what
36 thou wilt. And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping ; and saith unto Peter ; Simon, sleepest thou ? couldest not thou
37 watch one hour ? Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation ; the spirit truly is ready, but the flesh *is* weak.
39 And again he went away, and prayed, and spake the same words. And when he returned, he found them asleep again ; for their eyes were heavy, neither wist they what to an-
40 swer him. And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them ; Are ye sleeping on now, and taking *your* rest ? it is enough, the hour is come ; behold, the son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. Rise up, let us go ; lo, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

43 And immediately, while he yet spake, cometh Judas, one of the twelve, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests, and the scribes, and the

44 elders. And he that betrayed him, had given them a token,
saying; Whomsoever I shall kiss, that same is he; take him,
45 and lead him away safely. And as soon as he was come,
he goeth straightway to him, and saith; Master, master;
46 and kissed him. And they laid their hands on him, and
47 took him. And one of them that stood by, drew a
sword, and smote a servant of the high priest, and cut off
48 his ear. And Jesus answered and said unto them; Ye
are come out as against a thief, with swords and *with*
49 staves to take me. I was daily *with you* in the tem-
ple, teaching; and ye took me not; but the scriptures must
50 ~~be~~ fulfilled. And they all forsook him and fled. And
there followed him a certain young man, having a linen
cloth cast about *his naked body*; and the young men laid
52 hold on him. And he left the linen cloth, and fled from them
naked.

53 And they led Jesus away to the high priest; and with
him were assembled all the chief priests, and the elders, and
54 the scribes. And Peter followed him afar off, even into the
palace of the high priest; and he sat with the servants, and
55 warmed himself at the fire. And the chief priests, and all
the council, sought for witness against Jesus to put him to
56 death; and found none. For many bare false witness
57 against him, but their witness agreed not together. And
there arose certain, and bare false witness against him, saying;
58 We heard him say; I will destroy this temple that is made
with hands, and within three days I will build another made
59 without hands. But neither so did their witness agree to-
60 gether. And the high priest stood up in the midst, and
asked Jesus, saying; Answerest thou nothing? what is it
61 ~~which~~ these witness against thee? But he held his peace,
and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him,
and said unto him; Art thou the Christ, the Son of the
62 Blessed? And Jesus said; I am; and ye shall see the
Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and com-
63 ing in the clouds of heaven. Then the high priest rent his
64 clothes, and saith; What need we any further witnesses? Ye
have heard the blasphemy; what think ye? And they all
65 condemned him to be guilty of death. And some
began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet
him, and to say unto him; Prophecy. And the servants
did strike him with the palms of their hands.

66 And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there cometh

67 one of the maids of the high priest ; and when she saw Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and said ; And
 68 thou also wast with Jesus of Nazareth. But he denied, saying ; I know not, neither understand I what thou sayest. And he went out into the porch ; and the cock
 69 crew. And a maid saw him again, and began to say to them that stood by ; This is ~~one~~ of them. And he denied it again. And a little after, they that stood by said again to Peter ; Surely thou art *one* of them ; for thou art a Galilean, and thy speech agreeth *thereto*. But he began to curse and to swear, *saying* ; I know not this man of whom
 72 ye speak. And the second time the cock crew. And Peter called to mind the word that Jesus said unto him ; Before the cock crow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice. And when he thought thereon, he wept.

XV. And straightway in the morning the chief priests held a consultation with the elders and scribes, and the whole council, and bound Jesus, and carried ~~him~~ away, and delivered ~~him~~ to Pilate. And Pilate asked him ; Art thou the King of the Jews ? And ~~he answering~~, said unto him ; Thou sayest it. And the chief priests ~~accused him~~ of many things. And Pilate asked ~~him~~ again, saying ; Answerest thou nothing ? behold how many things ~~they witness~~ against thee. But Jesus yet answered nothing ; so that Pilate marvelled. Now at *that* feast he released unto them one prisoner, whomsoever they desired. And there was *one* named Barabbas, *which lay* bound with them that had made insurrection with him, who had committed murder in the insurrection. And the multitude crying aloud, began to desire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them. But Pilate answered them, saying ; Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews ? For he knew that the chief priests had delivered him for envy. But the chief priests moved the people, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them. And Pilate answered, and said again unto them ; What will ye then that I shall do *unto him* whom ye call the King of the Jews ? And they cried out again ; Crucify him. Then Pilate said unto them ; Why, what evil hath he done ? And they cried out exceedingly ; Crucify him. And *so* Pilate, willing to content the people, released Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged ~~him~~, to be crucified. And the soldiers led him away into the hall, called Pretorium ; and they

17 call together the whole band. And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about
18 his head. And they began to salute him; Hail, King of
19 the Jews! And they smote him on the head with a reed, and did spit upon him, and bowing *their* knees, worshipped
20 him. And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him.

21 And they led him out to crucify him. And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who passed by, coming out of the country, (the father of Alexander and Rufus,) to bear his
22 cross. And they bring him unto the place Golgotha; which is, being interpreted, the place of a skull. And they gave him to drink wine mingled with myrrh; but
24 he received it not. And when they had crucified him, they part his garments, casting lots upon them, what every
25 man should take. And it was the third hour, and they crucified him. And the superscription of his accusation was written over; "THE KING OF THE JEWS."
27 And with him they crucify two thieves; the one on his right hand, and the other on his left. And the scripture was fulfilled, which saith; "And he was numbered with
29 the transgressors." And they that passed by, railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying; Ah; thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days; save thyself, and come down from the cross. Likewise also the chief priests, mocking among themselves with the scribes,
32 said; He saved others, cannot he save himself? Let Christ, the King of Israel, descend now from the cross, that we may see and believe. And they that were crucified
33 with him, reviled him.

And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land, until
34 the ninth hour. And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying; Eloi, Eloi; lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted; My God, my God; why hast thou
35 forsaken me? And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said; Behold, he calleth Elias. And one ran and filled a sponge full of vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink, saying; Let alone; let us see whether
36 Elias will come to take him down.

37 And Jesus cried with a loud voice, and gave up the ghost. And the vail of the temple was rent in
38 twain, from the top to the bottom. And when the centurion which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and

gave up the ghost, he said ; Truly this man was the Son of
40 God.

There were also women looking on afar off ; among whom was Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother
41 of James the less, and of Joses, and Salome ; who also, when he was in Galilee, followed him, and ministered unto him ; and many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

42 And now, when the even was come, (because it was the
43 preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath,) Joseph of Arimathea, an honourable counsellor, which also waited for the kingdom of God, came, and went in boldly unto Pilate,
44 and craved the body of Jesus. And Pilate marvelled, if he were already dead ; and calling unto him the centurion, he
45 asked him whether he had been any while dead. And when he knew it of the centurion, he gave the body to Jo-
46 seph. And he bought fine linen, and took him down, and wrapped him in the linen ; and laid him in a sepulchre which was hewn out of a rock ; and rolled a stone unto the door
47 of the sepulchre. And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses beheld where he was laid.

XVI. And when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet
2 spices, that they might come and anoint him. And very early in the morning, the first *day* of the week, they came unto the
3 sepulchre, at the rising of the sun. And they said among themselves ; Who shall roll us away the stone from the door
4 of the sepulchre ? And when they looked they saw that the
5 stone was rolled away ; for it was very great. And entering into the sepulchre, they saw a young man sitting on the right
side, clothed in a long white garment ; and they were
6 affrighted. And he saith unto them ; Be not affrighted ; ye seek Jesus of Nazareth, which was crucified ; he is risen,
7 he is not here ; behold the place where they laid him. But go your way, tell his disciples and Peter, that he goeth before you into Galilee ; there shall ye see him, as he said un-
8 to you. And they went out, and fled from the sepulchre ; for they trembled, and were amazed, neither said they any thing to any man ; for they were afraid.

9 Now, when Jesus was risen early, the first *day* of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom
10 he had cast seven devils. And she went and told them
11 that had been with him, as they mourned and wept. And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been

- 12 seen of her, believed not. After that, he appeared
in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went
13 into the country. And they went and told it unto the resi-
14 duo ; neither believed they them. Afterward he
appeared unto the eleven, as they sat at meat ; and upbraided
them with their unbelief, and hardness of heart, because
they believed not them which had seen him after he was
15 risen. And he said unto them ; Go ye into all the world,
16 and preach the Gospel to every creature. He that believeth
and is baptized, shall be saved ; but he that believeth not,
17 shall be damned. And these signs shall follow them that be-
lieve ; In my name shall they cast out devils ; they shall
18 speak with new tongues ; they shall take up serpents ; and if
they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them ; they
shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.
19 So then, after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was
received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of
20 God ; and they went forth, and preached every where, the
Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs
following.

THE

G O S P E L

ACCORDING TO LUKE.

- FORASMUCH as many have taken in hand to set forth in
order a declaration of those things which are most surely be-
2 lieved among us, even as they delivered them unto us, which
from the beginning were eye-witnesses and ministers of the
3 word ; it seemed good to me also, having had perfect under-
standing of all things from the very first, to write unto thee
4 in order, most excellent Theophilus, that thou mightest know
the certainty of those things wherein thou hast been in-
structed.

5 **THERE** was in the days of Herod, the king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abia ; and his wife *was* of the daughters of Aaron, and her name *was*
6 Elizabeth. And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the
7 Lord blameless. And they had no child, because that Elizabeth was barren, and they both were *now* well stricken in
8 years. And it came to pass, that, while he executed the
9 priest's office before God in the order of his course, according to the custom of the priest's office his lot was to burn incense, when he went into the temple of the Lord ; and the
10 whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incense. And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord, standing on the right side of the altar of incense.
12 And when Zacharias saw *him*, he was troubled, and fear
13 fell upon him. But the angel said unto him ; Fear not, Zacharias ; for thy prayer is heard, and thy wife Elizabeth shall bear thee a son ; and ~~thou shalt~~ call his name John.
14 And thou shalt have joy and gladness, and many shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord ; and shall drink ~~neither wine nor strong drink~~ ; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, ~~even~~ from his mother's
16 womb. And many of the children of Israel shall be turned to the Lord their God. And he shall go before him in the spirit and power of Elias, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to the wisdom of the just,
18 to make ready a people prepared for the Lord. And Zacharias said unto the angel ; Whereby shall I know this ? for
19 I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. And the angel answering said unto him ; I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God ; and am sent to speak unto
20 thee, and to shew thee these glad tidings. And behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed ; because thou believest not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.
21 And the people waited for Zacharias ; and marvelled that
22 he tarried so long in the temple. And when he came out, he could not speak unto them ; and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple ; for he beckoned unto them,
23 and remained speechless. And it came to pass, that as soon as the days of his ministration were accomplished, he departed to his own house. And after those days his wife Elizabeth conceived ; and hid herself five months,

- 25 saying ; Thus hath the Lord dealt with me in the days,
wherein he looked on *me* to take away my reproach among
men.
- 26 And in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from
27 God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, to a virgin es-
poused to a man, whose name was Joseph, of the house of
28 David ; and the virgin's name *was* Mary. And the angel
came in unto her, and said ; Hail, *thou that art* highly fa-
voured ; the Lord is with thee ; blessed *art* thou among
29 women. And she was troubled at *his* saying, and cast in her
30 mind what manner of salutation this should be. And the
angel said unto her ; Fear not, Mary ; for thou hast found
31 favour with God. And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy
womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name JESUS.
32 He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the High-
est ; and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his
33 father David ; and he shall reign over the house of Jacob for
34 ever, and of his kingdom there shall be no end. Then said
Mary unto the angel ; How shall this be, seeing I know not
35 a man ? And the angel answered and said unto her ; The
Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the
Highest shall overshadow thee ; therefore also that holy
thing which shall be born, shall be called the Son of God.
36 And behold, thy cousin Elizabeth, she hath also conceived
a son in her old age ; and this is the sixth month with her
37 who was called barren. For with God nothing shall be im-
38 possible. And Mary said ; Behold, the handmaid of the
Lord ; be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel
departed from her.
- 39 And Mary arose in those days, and went into the hill-coun-
40 try with haste, into a city of Juda. And she entered into
41 the house of Zacharias, and saluted Elizabeth. And it
came to pass, that when Elizabeth heard the salutation of
Mary, the babe leaped in her womb ; and Elizabeth was
42 filled with the Holy Ghost, and she spake out with a loud
voice, and said ; Blessed *art* thou among women ; and bles-
43 sed is the fruit of thy womb. And whence is this to me,
44 that the mother of my Lord should come to me ? For lo, as
soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the
45 babe leaped in my womb for joy. And blessed is she that
believed, for there shall be a performance of those things
46 which were told her from the Lord. And Mary
47 said ; My soul doth magnify the Lord, and my spirit hath

48 rejoiced in God my Saviour; for he hath regarded the low
estate of his handmaiden. For behold, from henceforth all
49 generations shall call me blessed; for he that is mighty
50 hath done to me great things; and holy is his name, and his
mercy is on them that fear him, from generation to genera-
51 tion. He hath shewed strength with his arm; he hath
scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.
52 He hath put down the mighty from *their* seats, and exalted
53 them of low degree. He hath filled the hungry with good
54 things, and the rich he hath sent empty away. He hath
55 holpen his servant Israel, in remembrance of *his* mercy, (as
he spake to our fathers,) to Abraham, and to his seed, for
56 ever. And Mary abode with her about three months;
and returned to her own house.

57 Now Elizabeth's full time came that she should be deliv-
58 cred; and she brought forth a son. And her neighbours
and her cousins heard how the Lord had shewed great
59 mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her. And
it came to pass, that on the eighth day they came to circum-
cise the child; and they called him Zacharias, after the
60 name of his father. And his mother answered and said;
61 Not *so*; but he shall be called John. And they said unto
her; There is none of thy kindred that is called by this
62 name. And they made signs to his father, how he would
63 have him called. And he asked for a writing table,
and wrote, saying; His name is John. And they marvelled
64 all. And his mouth was opened immediately, and his
65 tongue *loosed*; and he spake, and praised God. And fear
came on all that dwelt round about them; and all these say-
ings were noised abroad throughout all the hill-country of
66 Judea. And all they that heard *them*, laid *them* up in their
hearts, saying; What manner of child shall this be? And
67 the hand of the Lord was with him. And his father
Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied,
68 saying; Blessed *be* the Lord God of Israel; for he hath
69 visited and redeemed his people, and hath raised up a horn
of salvation for us, in the house of his servant David;
70 (as he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets, which
71 have been since the world began;) that we should be saved
from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us;
72 to perform the mercy *promised* to our fathers, and to remem-
73 ber his holy covenant, the oath which he sware to our father
74 Abraham, that he would grant unto us, that we, being deliv-

ered out of the hand of our enemies, might serve him without fear, in holiness and righteousness before him, all our days. And thou, child, shalt be called the Prophet of the Highest ; for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways, to give knowledge of salvation unto his people, by the remission of their sins, through the tender mercy of our God, whereby the day-spring from on high hath visited us, to give light to them that sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace. And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit ; and was in the deserts, till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

II. And it came to pass in those days, that there went out a decree from Cesar Augustus, that all the world should be taxed. (*And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.*) And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city. And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judea, unto the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, (because he was of the house and lineage of David,) to be taxed with Mary his espoused wife, being great with child. And so it was, that while they were there, the days were accomplished that she should be delivered. And she brought forth her first born son, and wrapped him in swaddling-clothes, and laid him in a manger ; because there was no room for them in the inn. And there were in the same country shepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night. And lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them ; and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them ; Fear not ; for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which shall be to all people ; for unto you is born this day, in the city of David, a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this *shall be* a sign unto you ; Ye shall find the babe wrapped in swaddling-clothes, lying in a manger. And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host, praising God, and saying ; “ Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace ; good will toward men.” And it came to pass, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another ; Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing which is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us. And they came with haste, and found Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in a

- 17 manger. And when they had seen *it*, they made known abroad the saying which was told them concerning this child.
- 18 And all they that heard *it*, wondered at those things which
- 19 were told them by the shepherds. But Mary kept all these
- 20 things, and pondered *them* in her heart. And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, as it was told unto them.
- 21 And when eight days were accomplished for his circumcising, his name was called JESUS, which was so named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.
- 22 And when the days of their purification according to the law of Moses were accomplished, they brought him to Jerusalem, to present *him* to the Lord, (as it is written in the law of the Lord ; “ Every male that openeth the womb shall
- 23 be called holy to the Lord ;”) and to offer a sacrifice, according to that which is said in the law of the Lord ; “ A pair
- 24 of turtle doves, or two young pigeons.” And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name *was* Simeon ; and the same man *was* just and devout, waiting for the consolation of Israel. And the Holy Ghost was upon him ;
- 25 and it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghost, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord’s Christ.
- 26 And he came by the Spirit into the temple ; and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, to do for him after the
- 27 custom of the law ; then took he him up in his arms, and blessed God, and said ; Lord, now lettest thou thy servant
- 28 depart in peace, according to thy word ; for mine eyes have seen thy salvation, which thou hast prepared before
- 29 the face of all people ; a light to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of thy people Israel. And his father and
- 30 mother marvelled at those things which were spoken of him.
- 31 And Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother ; Behold, this *child* is set for the fall and rising again of many in Israel, and for a sign which shall be spoken against ;
- 32 (yea, a sword shall pierce through thy own soul also ;) that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed. And
- 33 there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asor ; she was of a great age, and had lived
- 34 with a husband seven years from her virginity ; and she *was* a widow of about fourscore and four years, which departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day. And she, coming in that instant, gave thanks likewise unto the Lord, and spake of him to all them

39 that looked for redemption in Jerusalem. And when they
had performed all things according to the law of the Lord,
they returned into Galilee, to their own city Naza-
40 reth. And the child grew, and waxed strong
in spirit, filled with wisdom ; and the grace of God was upon
him.

41 Now his parents went to Jerusalem every year at the
42 feast of the passover. And when he was twelve years old,
they went up to Jerusalem after the custom of the feast ;
43 and when they had fulfilled the days, as they returned, the
child Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem ; and Joseph and his
44 mother knew not of it. But they, supposing him to have
been in the company, went a day's journey, and they sought
45 him among *their* kinsfolk and acquaintance. And when they
found *him* not, they turned back again to Jerusalem, seeking
46 him. And it came to pass, that after three days they found
him in the temple sitting in the midst of the doctors, both
47 hearing them and asking them questions. And all that heard
him were astonished, at his understanding and answers.
48 And when they saw him, they were amazed ; and his mother
said unto him ; Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us ? be-
49 hold, thy father and I have sought thee sorrowing. And he
said unto them ; How is it that ye sought me ? wist ye not
50 that I must be about my Father's business ? And they under-
51 stood not the saying which he spake unto them. And he
went down with them, and came to Nazareth ; and was sub-
ject unto them. But his mother kept all these sayings in her
52 heart. And Jesus increased in wisdom, and stature, and in
favour with God and man.

III. Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius
Cesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod
being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of
Iturea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the
2 tetrarch of Abilene, Annas being high priest, and Cai-
aphas, the word of God came unto John, the son of Zach-
3 arias, in the wilderness. And he came into all the country
about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance, for the
4 remission of sins ; as it is written in the book of the words of
Esaias the prophet, saying ; " The voice of one crying in the
wilderness ; Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his
5 paths straight ; Every valley shall be filled, and every moun-
tain and hill shall be brought low ; and the crooked shall be
made straight, and the rough ways *shall* be made smooth ;

- 6 7 and all flesh shall see the salvation of God." Then
said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of
him ; O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee
8 from the wrath to come ? Bring forth therefore fruits worthy
of repentance ; and begin not to say within yourselves ; We
have Abraham to *our* father. For I say unto you, that God
is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.
9 And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees ;
every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit, is
10 hewn down, and cast into the fire. And the people
11 asked him, saying ; What shall we do then ? He answer-
eth and saith unto them ; He that hath two coats, let him
impart to him that hath none ; and he that hath meat, let
12 him do likewise. Then came also publicans to be baptized,
13 and said unto him ; Master, what shall we do ? And he
said unto them ; Exact no more than that which is appoint-
14 ed you. And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, say-
ing ; And what shall we do ? And he said unto them ; Do
violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely ; and be con-
15 tent with your wages. And as the people were in
expectation, and all men moved in their hearts of John,
16 whether he were the Christ, or not, John answered them
all, saying ; I indeed baptize you with water ; but one
mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whose shoes I am not
worthy to unloose ; he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost
17 and with fire. Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly
purge his floor ; and will gather the wheat into his garner,
18 but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable. And
many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the
19 people. But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved
by him for Herodias his brother's wife, and for all the evils
20 which Herod had done, added yet this above all, that he
shut up John in prison.
21 Now, when all the people were baptized, it came to pass,
that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was
22 opened, and the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape,
like a dove, upon him, and a voice came from heaven,
which said ; "Thou art my beloved Son, in thee I am well
pleased."
23 And Jesus himself was about thirty years of age, when he
began his ministry, being, as was supposed, the son of Joseph,
24 which was the son of Heli, which was the son of Matthat, which
was the son of Levi, which was the son of Melchi, which was

25 *the son of Janna, which was the son of Joseph, which was the*
son of Mattathias, which was the son of Amos, which was the
 26 *son of Naum, which was the son of Esli, which was the son*
of Nagge, which was the son of Maath, which was the son
 27 *of Mattathias, which was the son of Semei, which was the*
son of Joseph, which was the son of Juda, which was the
son of Joanna, which was the son of Rhesa, which was the
 28 *son of Zorobabel, which was the son of Salathiel, which was*
the son of Neri, which was the son of Melchi, which was the
 29 *son of Addi, which was the son of Cosam, which was the*
son of Elmodam, which was the son of Er, which was the
 30 *son of Jose, which was the son of Eliezer, which was the*
son of Jorinn, which was the son of Matthat, which was the
 31 *son of Levi, which was the son of Simeon, which was the*
son of Juda, which was the son of Joseph, which was the son
 32 *of Jonan, which was the son of Eliakim, which was the son*
of Melea, which was the son of Menan, which was the son
 33 *of Mattathia, which was the son of Nathan, which was the*
son of David, which was the son of Jesse, which was the son
 34 *of Obed, which was the son of Booz, which was the son of*
 35 *Salmon, which was the son of Naasson, which was the son*
of Aminadab, which was the son of Arum, which was the
 36 *son of Esrom, which was the son of Phares, which was the son*
 37 *of Juda, which was the son of Jacob, which was the son of*
 38 *Isaac, which was the son of Abraham, which was the son of*
 39 *Thara, which was the son of Nachor, which was the son of*
 40 *Saruch, which was the son of Ragau, which was the son of*
 41 *Phalcc, which was the son of Heber, which was the son of*
 42 *Sala, which was the son of Cainan, which was the son of*
 43 *Arphaxad, which was the son of Sem, which was the son of*
 44 *Noc, which was the son of Lamech, which was the son of*
 45 *Mathusala, which was the son of Enoch, which was the son*
 46 *of Jared, which was the son of Maleleel, which was the son*
 47 *of Cainan, which was the son of Enos, which was the son of*
 48 *Seth, which was the son of Adam, which was the son of*
 49 *God.*

IV. And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost, returned from
 2 Jordan; and was led by the spirit into the wilderness, being
 3 forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he
 4 did eat nothing; and when they were ended, he afterward
 5 hungered. And the devil said unto him; If thou be the Son
 6 of God, command this stone that it be made bread. And
 7 Jesus answered him, saying; It is written; "Man

shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of
5 God." And the devil, taking him up into a high moun-
tain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a
6 moment of time. And the devil said unto him; All this
power will I give thee, and the glory of them; for that is de-
7 livered unto me, and to whomsoever I will, I give it; if
8 thou therefore wilt worship me, it shall all be thine. And
Jesus answered and said unto him; It is written; "Thou
shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou
9 serve." And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him
on a pinnacle of the temple; and said unto him; If thou be
10 the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence; for it is writ-
ten; "He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep
11 thee; and in *their* hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any
12 time thou dash thy foot against a stone." And Jesus an-
swering, said unto him; It is said; "Thou shalt not tempt
13 the Lord thy God." And when the devil had ended all the
temptation, he departed from him for a season.
14 And Jesus returned in the power of the spirit into Galilee;
and there went out a fame of him through all the region
15 round about. And he taught in their synagogues, being
16 glorified of all. And he came to Nazareth, where
he had been brought up; and, as his custom was on the
sabbath day, he went into the synagogue; and stood up for to
17 read. And there was delivered unto him the book of the
prophet Esaias; and when he had opened the book, he found
18 the place where it was written; "The Spirit of the Lord is
upon me; because he hath anointed me to preach the gos-
pel to the poor, he hath sent me to preach deliverance to
the captives, and recovering of sight to the blind, to set at
19 liberty them that are bruised, to preach the acceptable year
20 of the Lord." And he closed the book, and he gave it
again to the minister, and sat down; and the eyes of all them
21 that were in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he
began to say unto them; This day is this scripture fulfilled
22 in your ears. And all bare him witness, and wondered at
the gracious words which proceeded out of his mouth, and
23 they said; Is not this Joseph's son? And he said unto them;
Ye will surely say unto me this proverb; "Physician, heal
thyself;" whatsoever we have heard done in Capernaum, do
24 also here in thy country. And he said; Verily I say unto
25 you, no prophet is accepted in his own country. But I tell
you of a truth, many widows were in Israel in the days of

Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land ;
26 but unto none of them was Elias sent, save unto Sarepta *a city*
27 of Sidon, unto a woman *that was* a widow. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Eliseus the prophet ; and none
28 of them was cleansed, saving Naaman the Syrian. And all they in the synagogue, when they heard these things,
29 were filled with wrath. And they rose up, and thrust him out of the city ; and led him unto the brow of the hill, whereon their city was built, that they might cast him down
30 headlong ; but he, passing through the midst of them, went his way.

31 And he came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee ; and
32 taught them on the sabbath days. And they were astonished at his doctrine ; for his word was with power. And in
33 the synagogue there was a man which had a spirit of an unclean devil, and he cried out with a loud voice, saying ; Let us alone, what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth ? thou art come to destroy us ; I know thee who
35 thou art, the holy one of God. And Jesus rebuked him, saying ; Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the midst, he came out of him,
36 and hurt him not. And they were all amazed ; and spake among themselves, saying ; What a word is this ! for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and
37 they come out. And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.

38 And he arose out of the synagogue, and entered into Simon's house ; and Simon's wife's mother was taken with
39 a great fever ; and they besought him for her. And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever ; and it left her. And immediately she arose and ministered unto
40 them. Now, when the sun was setting, all they that had any sick with divers diseases, brought them unto him ; and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed

41 them. And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying ; Thou art the Son of God. And he, rebuking *them*, suffered them not to speak, for they knew that he was
42 Christ. And when it was day, he departed, and went into a desert place ; and the people sought him, and came unto him, and stayed him, that he should not depart

43 from them. And he said unto them ; I must preach the

kingdom of God to other cities also ; for therefore am I
44 sent. And he preached in the synagogues of Galilee.

V. And it came to pass, that as the people pressed upon him
to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennes-
2 aret ; and saw two ships standing by the lake ; but the
fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing *their*
3 nets. And he entered into one of the ships, which was
Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little
from the land ; and he sat down, and taught the people out of
4 the ship. Now, when he had left speaking, he said

unto Simon ; Launch out into the deep, and let down your
5 nets for a draught. And Simon answering, said unto him ;
Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing ;
6 nevertheless, at thy word I will let down the net. And
when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of
7 fishes ; and their net brake. And they beckoned unto *their*
partners, which were in the other ship, that they should
come, and help them ; and they came, and filled both the
8 ships, so that they began to sink. When Simon Peter saw
it, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying ; Depart from me,
9 for I am a sinful man, O Lord. For he was astonished,
and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes
10 which they had taken ; and so ~~was~~ also James and John
the sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And
Jesus said unto Simon ; Fear not ; from henceforth thou
11 shalt catch men. And when they had brought their ships
to land, they forsook all, and followed him.

12 And it came to pass, when he was in a certain city, be-
hold, a man full of leprosy ; who seeing Jesus, fell on *his*
face, and besought him, saying ; Lord, if thou wilt, thou
13 canst make me clean. And he put forth *his* hand and
touched him, saying ; I will, be thou clean. And immedi-
14 ately the leprosy departed from him. And he charged him
to tell no man ; but go, and shew thyself to the priest, and
offer for thy cleansing, according as Moses commanded, for
15 a testimony unto them. But so much the more

went there a fame abroad of him ; and great multitudes
came together to hear, and to be healed by him of their
16 infirmities. And he withdrew himself into the wilderness,
and prayed.

17 And it came to pass on a certain day, as he was teaching,
that there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by,
which were come out of every town of Galilee and Judea,

- and Jerusalem; and the power of the Lord was *present* to
18 heal them. And behold, men brought in a bed, a man
which was taken with a palsy; and they sought *means* to
19 bring him in, and to lay *him* before him. And when they
could not find *by* what *way* they might bring him in, because
of the multitude, they went upon the house-top, and let him
down through the tiling with *his* couch, into the midst before
20 Jesus. And when he saw their faith, he said; Man, thy
21 sins are forgiven thee. And the scribes and the Pharisees
began to reason, saying; Who is this which speaketh blas-
22 phemies? *who can forgive sins but God alone?* But when
Jesus perceived their thoughts, he answering, said unto them;
23 What reason ye in your hearts? Whether is easier? to say;
Thy sins be forgiven thee? or to say; Rise up and walk?
24 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power up-
on earth to forgive sins, (he said unto the sick of the palsy;)
I say unto thee; Arise, and take up thy couch, and go into
25 thine house. And immediately he arose up before them, and
took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own house,
26 glorifying God. And they were all amazed, and they glo-
rified God; and were filled with fear, saying; We have
seen strange things to-day.
- 27 And after these things he went forth, and saw a publican
named Levi, sitting at the receipt of custom; and he said
28 unto him; Follow me. And he left all, rose up, and followed
29 him. And Levi made him a great feast in his own house;
and there was a great company of publicans, and of others,
30 ~~that sat down with them.~~ But their scribes and Pharisees
murmured against his disciples, saying; Why do ye eat and
31 drink with the publicans and sinners? And Jesus answering,
said unto them; They that are whole need not a physician;
32 ~~but they that are sick; I came not to call the righteous, but~~
sinners to repentance.
- 33 And they said unto him; Why do the disciples of John
fast often, and make prayers, and likewise *the disciples* of
34 the Pharisees; but thine eat and drink? And he said unto
them; Can ye make the children of the bride-chamber fast
35 while the bridegroom is with them? But the days will come,
when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and
36 then shall they fast in those days. And he spake also a par-
able unto them; No man putteth a piece of a new garment
upon an old; if otherwise, then both the new maketh a
rent, and the piece that was *taken* out of the new agreeth

37 not with the old. And no man putteth new wine into old
bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be
38 spilled, and the bottles shall perish; but new wine must be
39 put into new bottles; and both are preserved. No man also
having drunk old *wine*, straightway desireth new; for he
saith; The old is better.

VI. And it came to pass on the second sabbath after the first,
that he went through the corn-fields; and his disciples
plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing *them in their*
2 hands. And certain of the Pharisees said unto them;
Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the sabbath-
3 days? And Jesus answering them, said; Have ye not read
so much as this, what David did, when himself was a hung-
4 ered, and they which were with him? how he went into the
house of God, and did take and eat the shew-bread, and
gave also to them that were with him; which is not lawful
5 to eat, but for the priests alone? And he said unto them;
That the son of man is Lord also of the sabbath.

6 And it came to pass also on another sabbath, that he entered
into the *synagogue*, and taught; and there was a man
7 whose right hand was withered. And the scribes and Pharisees
watched him, ~~whether he would heal~~ on the sabbath-day,
that they might find an accusation ~~against~~ him.
8 But he knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had
the withered hand; Rise up, and stand forth in the midst.
9 And he arose, and stood forth. Then said Jesus unto them;
I will ask you; What is lawful on the sabbath-days? *(to do*
10 *good, or to do evil? to save life, or to kill? And looking*
round about upon them all, he said unto him; Stretch forth
thy hand. And he did *so*; and his hand was restored as
11 the other. And they were filled with madness, and communed
one with another what they might do to Jesus.

12 And it came to pass in those days, that he went out into
a mountain to pray; and continued all night in prayer to
13 God. And when it was day, he called unto him his disci-
14 ples; and of them he chose twelve, whom also he named
apostles; (Simon, whom he also named Peter, and Andrew
15 his brother, James and John, Philip and Bartholomew, Mat-
thew, and Thomas, James the *son* of Alpheus, and Simon called
16 the zealot, and Judas *the brother* of James, and Judas Iscariot,
17 which also was the traitor;) and he came down with them, and
stood in the plain; and the company of his disciples, and a
great multitude of people out of all Judea, and Jerusalem,

and from the sea-coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to
18 hear him, and to be healed of their diseases ; and they that
were vexed with unclean spirits ; and they were healed.
19 And the whole multitude sought to touch him ; for there
went virtue out of him, and healed *them* all.
20 And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said ; Blessed
21 *be ye* poor ; for yours is the kingdom of God. Blessed *are ye*
that hunger now ; for ye shall be filled. Blessed *are ye* that
22 weep now ; for ye shall laugh. Blessed *are ye* when men
shall hate you, and when they shall separate you *from*
their company, and shall reproach *you*, and cast out your
23 name as evil, for the Son of man's sake. Rejoice ye in
that day, and leap for joy ; for behold, your reward is great
in heaven ; for in the like manner did their fathers unto the
24 prophets. But wo unto you that are rich ; for ye have re-
25 ceived your consolation. Wo unto you that are full ; for ye
shall hunger. Wo unto you that laugh now ; for ye shall
26 mourn and weep. Wo *unto you*, when men shall speak well
of you ; for so did their fathers to the false proph-
27 ets. But I say unto you which hear ; Love your
28 enemies ; do good to them which hate you ; bless them that
curse you ; pray for them which despitefully use you.
29 Unto him that smiteth thee on the *one* cheek, offer also
the other ; and him that taketh away thy cloak, forbid not
30 *to take thy* coat also. Give to every man that asketh of
thee ; and of him that taketh away thy goods, ask *them* not
31 again. And as ye would that men should do to you, do ye
32 also to them likewise. For if *ye love them* which love you,
what thank have ye ? for sinners also love those that love
33 them. And if ye do good to them which do good to you,
what thank have ye ? for sinners also do even the same.
34 And if ye lend *to them* of whom ye hope to receive, what
thank have ye ? for sinners also lend to sinners, to receive as
35 much again. But love ye your enemies, and do good and
lend hoping for nothing again ; and your reward shall be
great, and ye shall be the children of the Highest ; for he is
36 kind unto the unthankful and to the evil. Be ye therefore
37 merciful, as your Father also is merciful. Judge not, and
ye shall not be judged ; condemn not, and ye shall not be
38 condemned ; forgive, and ye shall be forgiven. Give, and
it shall be given unto you ; good measure, pressed down,
and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into
your bosom ; for with the same measure that ye mete withal,

39 it shall be measured to you again. And he spake a
parable unto them ; Can the blind lead the blind ? shall they
40 not both fall into the ditch ? The disciple is not above his
master ; but every one that is perfect, shall be as his mas-
41 ter. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy
brother's eye, but perceivest not the beam that is in thine
42 own eye ? either how canst thou say to thy brother ; Brother,
let me pull out the mote that is in thine eye ; when thou
thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye ?
Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own
eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to pull out the mote that
43 is in thy brother's eye. For a good tree bringeth not forth
corrupt fruit ; neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good
44 fruit. For every tree is known by his own fruit ; for of
thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a bramble-bush gather
45 they grapes. A good man out of the good treasure of his
heart, bringeth forth that which is good ; and an evil man
out of the evil treasure of his heart, bringeth forth that
which is evil ; for of the abundance of the heart his mouth
46 speaketh. And why call ye me Lord, Lord ; and do
47 not the things which I say ? Whosoever cometh to me, and
heareth my sayings, and doeth them, I will shew you to
48 whom he is like. He is like a man which built a house, and
dugged deep, and laid the foundation on a rock ; and when
the flood arose, the stream beat vehemently upon that house,
and could not shake it ; for it was founded upon a rock.
49 But he that heareth and doeth not, is like a man that without
a foundation built a house upon the earth ; against which the
stream did beat vehemently ; and immediately it fell, and
the ruin of that house was great.

VII. Now, when he had ended all his sayings in the audi-
2 ence of the people, he entered into Capernaum. And a
certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was
3 sick, and ready to die. And when he heard of Jesus, he
sent unto him the elders of the Jews, beseeching him that
4 he would come and heal his servant. And when they
came to Jesus, they besought him instantly, saying ; He is
5 worthy for whom thou shalt do this ; for he loveth our na-
6 tion, and he hath built us a synagogue. Then Jesus went
with them. And when he was now not far from the house,
the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him ; Lord,
trouble not thyself ; for I am not worthy that thou shouldst
7 enter under my roof ; wherefore neither thought I myself

- worthy to come unto thee ; but say in a word, and my servant shall be healed. For I also am a man set under authority, having under me soldiers ; and I say unto one ; Go, and he goeth ; and to another ; Come, and he cometh ; and
- 9 to my servant ; Do this, and he doeth it. When Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him ; and turned him about and said unto the people that followed him ; I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.
- 10 And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole that had been sick.
- 11 And it came to pass the day after, that he went into a city called Nain ; and many of his disciples went with him,
- 12 and much people. Now, when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow ; and much people
- 13 of the city was with her. And when the Lord saw her, he
- 14 had compassion on her, and said unto her ; Weep not. And he came and touched the bier ; and they that bare *him* stood still. And he said ; Young man, I say unto thee, arise.
- 15 And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak ; and he
- 16 delivered him to his mother. And there came a fear on all, and they glorified God, saying ; That a great prophet is
- 17 risen up among us, and that God hath visited his people. And this rumor of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.
- 18 And the disciples of John shewed him of all these things.
- 19 And John, calling unto him two of his disciples, sent *them* unto Jesus, saying ; ~~Art thou he that should come~~, or look we
- 20 for another ? When the men were come unto him, they said ; John Baptist hath sent us unto thee, saying ; Art thou
- 21 he that should come, or look we for another ? And in that same hour he cured many of *their* infirmities, and plagues, and of evil spirits, and unto many *that were* blind he gave
- 22 sight. Then Jesus answering, said unto them ; Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard ; how that the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the
- 23 gospel is preached. And blessed is *he*, whosoever shall not
- 24 be offended in me. And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John ; What went ye out into the wilderness for
- 25 to see ? a reed shaken with the wind ? But what went ye out for to see ? a man clothed in soft raiment ? Behold, they

which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in
26 kings' courts. But what went ye out for to see ? a prophet ? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.
27 This is *he* of whom it is written ; "Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee."
28 For I say unto you, among those that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist ; but he that is least in the kingdom of God, is greater than he.
29 And all the people that heard *him*, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John. But the
30 Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him. Whereunto then
31 shall I liken the men of this generation ? and to what are they like ? They are like unto children sitting in the
32 market-place, and calling one to another, and saying ; We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced ; we have
33 mourned to you, and ye have not wept. For John the Baptist came neither eating bread, nor drinking wine ; and ye
34 say ; He hath a devil. The Son of man is come eating and drinking ; and ye say ; Behold, a gluttonous man, and
35 a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. But wisdom is justified of all her children.
36 And one of the Pharisees desired him that ~~he would~~ eat with him ; and he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to
37 meat. And behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that *Jesus* sat at meat in the Pharisee's
38 house, brought an alabaster-box of ointment, and stood at his feet behind *him*, weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears ; and did wipe *them* with the hairs of her head, and
39 kissed his feet, and anointed *them* with the ointment. Now, when the Pharisee which had bidden him, saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying ; This man, if he were a prophet, would have known who, and what manner of woman *this is*
40 that toucheth him ; for she is a sinner. And Jesus answering, said unto him ; Simon, I have somewhat to say unto
41 thee. And he saith ; Master, say on. There was a certain creditor, which had two debtors ; the one owed five hundred
42 pence, and the other fifty. And when they had nothing to pay, he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore,
43 which of them will love him most ? Simon answered and said, I suppose that *he*, to whom he forgave most. And he
44 said unto him ; Thou hast rightly judged. And he turned to the woman, and said unto Simon ; Seest thou this woman ?

I entered into thine house ; thou gavest me no water for my feet ; but she hath washed my feet with tears, and wiped
45 *them* with her hair. Thou gavest me no kiss ; but this woman, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my
46 feet. Mine head with oil thou didst not anoint ; but this
47 woman hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore, I say unto thee, her sins, which are many, are forgiven, for she loved much ; but to whom little is forgiven, *the same*
48 loveth little. And he said unto her ; Thy sins are forgiven.
49 And they that sat at meat with him, began to say within
50 themselves ; Who is this that forgiveth sins also ? And he said to the woman ; Thy faith hath saved thee ; go in peace.

VIII. And it came to pass afterward, that he went throughout every city and village, preaching and shewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God ; and the twelve *were* with him,
2 and certain women, which had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities ; Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went
3 seven devils, and Joanna, the wife of Chuza, Herod's steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto him of their substance.

4 And when much people were gathered together, and were
5 come to him out of every city, he spake by a parable ; A sower went out to sow his seed ; and as he sowed, some fell by the way side ; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of
6 the air devoured it. And some fell upon a rock ; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked
7 moisture. And some fell among thorns ; and the thorns
8 sprang up with it, and choked it. And other fell on good ground ; and sprang up, and bare fruit a hundred fold.
When he had said these things, he cried ; He that hath
9 ears to hear, let him hear. And his disciples asked
10 him, saying ; What might this parable be ? And he said ; Unto you it is given to know the mysteries of the kingdom of God ; but to others in parables ; that seeing they might not
11 see, and hearing they might not understand. Now the parable is this ; The seed is the word of God. Those by the way-side, are they that hear ; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, lest they should
13 believe and be saved. They on the rock *are they*, which, when they hear, receive the word with joy ; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation
14 fall away. And that which fell among thorns, are they, which, when they have heard, go forth, and are choked

with cares and riches and pleasures of *this* life, and bring no
15 fruit to perfection. But that on the good ground are they,
which in an honest and good heart, having heard the word,
16 keep *it*, and bring forth fruit with patience. No man,
when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or
putteth *it* under a bed ; but setteth *it* on a candlestick, that
17 they which enter in may see the light. For nothing is secret,
that shall not be made manifest ; neither any thing hid, that
18 shall not be known, and come abroad. Take heed therefore
how ye hear ; for whosoever hath, to him shall be given ;
and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that
which he seemeth to have.

19 Then came to him *his* mother and his brethren, and could
20 not come at him for the press. And it was told him *by cer-*
tain, which said ; Thy mother and thy brethren stand with-
21 out, desiring to see thee. And he answered and said unto
them ; My mother and my brethren are these which hear
the word of God, and do *it*.

22 Now it came to pass on a certain day, that he went into a
ship with his disciples ; and he said unto them ; Let us go
over unto the other side of the lake ; and they launched
23 forth. But as they sailed, he fell asleep. And there came
down a storm of wind on the lake, and they were filled
24 with water, and were in jeopardy. And they came to him,
and awoke him, saying ; Master, master, we perish. Then
he arose, and rebuked the wind, and the raging of the water ;
25 and they ceased, and there was a calm. And he said unto
them ; Where is your faith ? And they being afraid, won-
dered, saying one to another ; What manner of man is this,
for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they
obey him ?

26 And they arrived at the country of the Gadarenes, which
27 is over against Galilee. And when he went forth to land,
there met him out of the city a certain man, which had dev-
ils long time, and ware no clothes, neither abode in *any*
28 house, but in the tombs. When he saw Jesus he cried out,
and fell down before him, and with a loud voice said ; What
have I to do with thee, Jesus, thou Son of God most high ?
29 I beseech thee, torment me not. (For he had commanded
the unclean spirit to come out of the man ; for oftentimes it
had caught him ; and he was kept bound with chains, and
in fetters ; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the
30 devil into the wilderness.) And Jesus asked him, saying ;

- What is thy name ? And he said ; Legion ; because many
31 devils were entered into him. And they besought him, that
32 he would not command them to go out into the deep. And
there was there a herd of many swine feeding on the moun-
tain ; and they besought him that he would suffer them to
33 enter into them. And he suffered them. Then went the
devils out of the man, and entered into the swine ; and the
herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were
34 choked. When they that fed *them* saw what was done,
they fled, and told *it* in the city and in the country.
35 Then they went out to see what was done ; and came to
Jesus, and found the man out of whom the devils were de-
parted, sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right
36 mind ; and they were afraid. They also which saw *it*, told
them by what means he that was possessed of the devils was
37 healed. Then the whole multitude of the country of the
Gadarenes round about, besought him to depart from them ;
for they were taken with great fear. And he went up into
38 the ship, and returned back again. Now the man out of
whom the devils were departed, besought him that he might
39 be with him. But Jesus sent him away, saying ; Return to
thine own house, and shew how great things God hath
done unto thee. And he went his way, and published
throughout the whole city, how great things Jesus had done
unto him.
- 40 And it came to pass, that, when Jesus was returned, the
people *gladly* received him ; for they were all waiting for
41 him. And behold, there came a man, named Jairus, and he
was a ruler of the synagogue ; and he fell down at Jesus'
feet, and besought him that he would come into his house ;
42 for he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age,
and she lay a dying. But as he went, the people
43 thronged him. And a woman having an issue of blood
twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians,
44 neither could be healed of any, came behind *him* and
touched the border of his garment ; and immediately her
45 issue of blood stanch'd. And Jesus said ; Who touched
me ? When all denied, Peter, and they that were with him,
said ; Master, the multitude throng thee, and press *thee* ;
46 and sayest thou ; Who touched me ? And Jesus said ; Some-
body hath touched me ; for I perceive that virtue is gone
47 out of me. And when the woman saw that she was not
hid, she came trembling, and, falling down before him, she

declared unto him before all the people for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.
48 And he said unto her ; Daughter, be of good comfort ; thy
49 faith hath made thee whole ; go in peace. While
he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying to him ; 'Thy daughter is dead ; trouble
50 not the master. But when Jesus heard it, he answered him, saying ; Fear not ; believe only and she shall be made
51 whole. And when he came to the house, he suffered no man to go in, save Peter, and James, and John, and the
52 father and the mother of the maiden. And all wept and bewailed her. But he said ; Weep not ; she is not dead, but
53 sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead. And he put them all out, and took her by the
54 hand, and called, saying ; Maid, arise. And her spirit came again, and she arose straightway. And he commanded to
55 give her meat. And her parents were astonished. But he charged them that they should tell no man what was done.

IX. Then he called the twelve together, and gave them power and authority over all devils, and to cure diseases.
2 And he sent them to preach the kingdom of God, and to
3 heal the sick. And he said unto them ; Take nothing for your journey, neither staff, nor scrip, neither bread, neither
4 money ; neither have two coats a piece. And whatsoever house ye enter into, there abide, and thence depart.
5 And whosoever will not receive you, when ye go out of that city, shake off the very dust from your feet, for a testimony
6 against them. And they departed, and went through the towns, preaching the gospel and healing every where.

7 Now Herod the tetrarch heard of all that was done by him ; and he was perplexed, because that it was said of some, that John was risen from the dead ; and of some, that Elias had appeared ; and of others, that one of the old
9 prophets was risen again. And Herod said ; John have I beheaded ; but who is this of whom I hear such things ? And he desired to see him.

10 And the apostles, when they were returned, told him all that they had done ; and he took them, and went aside privately into a desert place, belonging to the city called Bethsaida. And the people, when they knew it, followed him.
11 And he received them, and spake unto them of the kingdom
12 of God, and healed them that had need of healing. And when the day began to wear away, then came the twelve,

- and said unto him ; Send the multitude away, that they may go into the towns and country round about, and lodge, and
13 get victuals ; for we are here in a desert place. But he said unto them ; Give ye them to eat. And they said ; We have no more but five loaves, and two fishes, except
14 we should go and buy meat for all this people. For they were about five thousand men. And he said to his disci-
15 ples ; Make them sit down by fifties in a company. And
16 they did so, and made them all sit down. Then he took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them ; and brake, and gave to the disciples, to
17 set before the multitude. And they did eat, and were all filled ; and there was taken up of fragments that remained to them twelve baskets.
- 18 And it came to pass as he was alone praying, his disciples were with him ; and he asked them, saying ; Whom say the
19 people that I am ? They answering, said ; John the Baptist ; but some say, Elias ; and others say, that one of the old
20 prophets is risen again. He said unto them ; But whom say ye that I am ? Peter answering, said ; The Christ of God.
21 And he straitly charged them, and commanded *them* to tell
22 no man that thing ; saying ; The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and chief priests, and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third
23 day. And he said to *them* all ; If any man will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross
24 daily, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life, shall lose it ; but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the
25 same shall save it. For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away ?
26 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Father's, and of the holy
27 angels. But I tell you of a truth, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the kingdom of God.
- 28 And it came to pass, about an eight days after these sayings, he took Peter, and John, and James, and went up into
29 a mountain to pray. And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment was white and
30 glistening. And behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias ; who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease, which he should accomplish at Jerusa-

32 lem. But Peter and they that were with him were heavy
with sleep. And when they were awake, they saw his glory,
33 and the two men that stood with him. And it came to pass
as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus ; Master,
it is good for us to be here ; and let us make three tabernacles,
one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias ; not
34 knowing what he said. While he thus spake, there came a
cloud, and overshadowed them ; and they feared as they
35 entered into the cloud. And there came a voice out of the
36 cloud, saying ; "This is my beloved Son ; hear him." And
when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone. And they
kept it close, and told no man in those days any of those
things which they had seen.

37 And it came to pass, that on the next day, when they
38 were come down from the hill, much people met him. And
behold, a man of the company cried out, saying ; Master, I
beseech thee, look upon my son, for he is mine only child ;
39 and lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out, and
it teareth him that he foameth again, and bruising him, hard-
40 ly departeth from him. And I besought thy disciples to
41 cast him out ; and they could not. And Jesus answering,
said ; O faithless and perverse generation ; how long shall I
42 be with you, and suffer you ? Bring thy son hither. And
as he was yet a coming, the devil threw him down, and tare
him. And Jesus rebuked the unclean spirit, and healed the
43 child, and delivered him again to his father. And they were
all amazed at the mighty power of God.

But while they wondered every one at all things which
44 Jesus did, he said unto his disciples ; Let these sayings sink
down into your ears ; for the Son of man shall be delivered
45 into the hands of men. But they understood not this say-
ing, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not ;
and they feared to ask him of that saying.

46 Then there arose a reasoning among them, which of them
47 should be greatest. And Jesus perceiving the thought of
48 their heart, took a child, and set him by him, and said unto
them ; Whosoever shall receive this child in my name, re-
ceiveth me ; and whosoever shall receive me, receiveth him
that sent me. For he that is least among you all, the same
49 shall be great. And John answered and said ; Mas-
ter, we saw one casting out devils in thy name ; and we for-
50 bad him, because he followeth not with us. And Jesus

said unto him ; Forbid *him* not ; for he that is not against you, is for you.

51 And it came to pass, when the time was come that he should be received up, he steadfastly set his face to go to
52 Jerusalem. And he sent messengers before his face ; and they went and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to
53 make ready for him. And they did not receive him, because
54 his face was as though he would go to Jerusalem. And when his disciples James and John, saw *this*, they said ; Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from
55 heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did ? But he turned, and rebuked them, and said ; Know ye not what manner of
56 spirit ye are of ? And they went to another village.

57 And it came to pass, that as they went in the way, a certain *man* said unto him ; Lord, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus said unto him ; Foxes have holes, and birds of the air *have* nests ; but the Son of man hath
58 not where to lay *his* head. And he said unto another ; Follow me. But he said ; Lord, suffer me first
60 to go and bury my father. Jesus said unto him ; Let the dead bury their dead ; but go thou and preach the kingdom
61 of God. And another also said ; Lord, I will follow thee ; but let me first go bid them farewell which are at
62 home at my house. And Jesus said unto him ; No man having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

X. After these things, the Lord appointed other seventy also, and sent them two and two before his face into every city
2 and place, whither he himself would come. Therefore said he unto them ; The harvest truly is great, but the labourers
3 are few ; pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he would send forth labourers into his harvest. Go your ways ;
4 behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves. Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes ; and salute no man by
5 the way. And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say ;
6 Peace be to this house. And if a son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon it ; if not, it shall turn to you
7 again. And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give ; for the labourer is worthy of his
8 hire ; go not from house to house. And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set
9 before you, and heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them ; The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you.

- 10 But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not,
go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say ;
11 Even the very dust of your city which cleaveth on us, we
do wipe off against you ; notwithstanding, be ye sure of this,
12 that the kingdom of God is come nigh. I say unto you,
that it shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for
13 that city. Wo unto thee, Chorazin ; wo unto thee, Bethsa-
ida ! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and
Sidon, which have been done in you, they had a great while
14 ago repented, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. But it shall be
more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon at the judgment, than for
15 you. And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted to heaven,
16 shalt be thrust down to hell. He that heareth you, heareth
me ; and he that despiseth you, despiseth me ; and he
that despiseth me, despiseth him that sent me.
- 17 And the seventy returned again with joy, saying ; Lord,
even the devils are subject unto us through thy name.
18 And he said unto them ; I beheld Satan as lightning fall
19 from heaven. Behold, I give unto you power to tread on
serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy ;
20 and nothing shall by any means hurt you. Notwithstanding,
in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you ; but re-
21 joice because your names are written in heaven. In
that hour Jesus rejoiced in spirit, and said ; I thank thee, O
Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou hast hid these
things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them
unto babes ; even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy
22 sight. All things are delivered to me of my Father ; and no
man knoweth who the Son is but the Father ; and who the
Father is, but the Son, and *he* to whom the Son will reveal
23 *him*. And he turned him unto *his* disciples, and said pri-
vately ; Blessed *are* the eyes which see the things that ye
24 see. For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have de-
sired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen
them ; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have
not heard *them*.
- 25 And behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him,
saying ; Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life ?
26 He said unto him ; What is written in the law ? how readest
27 thou ? And he answering said ; "Thou shalt love the Lord
thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all
thy strength, and with all thy mind ; and thy neighbour as
28 thyself." And he said unto him ; Thou hast answered right ;

29 this do, and thou shalt live. But he, willing to justify him-
30 self, said unto Jesus ; And who is my neighbour ? And Jesus
answering, said ; A certain man went down from Jerusalem
to Jericho, and fell among thieves ; which stripped him of
his raiment, and wounded *him*, and departed, leaving *him*
31 half dead. And by chance there came down a certain
priest that way ; and when he saw him, he passed by on
32 the other side. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the
place, came and looked on *him*, and passed by on the other
33 side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where
he was, and when he saw him, he had compassion on *him*.
34 And he went to *him*, and bound up his wounds, pouring in
oil and wine ; and set him on his own beast, and brought
35 him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow,
when he departed, he took out two pence and gave *them* to
the host, and said unto him ; Take care of him ; and what-
soever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay
36 thee. Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neigh-
37 bour unto him that fell among the thieves ? And he said ;
He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him ;
Go, and do thou likewise.

38 Now it came to pass, as they went, that he entered into a
certain village ; and a certain woman, named Martha, received
39 him into her house. And she had a sister called Mary, which
40 also sat at Jesus' feet, and heard his word. But Martha was
cumbered about much serving ; and came to him, and said ;
~~Lord, dost thou not care that my sister hath left me to serve~~
41 ~~alone ?~~ bid her therefore that she help me. And Jesus
answered, and said unto her ; Martha, Martha, thou art
42 careful and troubled about many things ; but one thing is
needful. And Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall
not be taken away from her.

XI. And it came to pass, that as he was praying in a certain
place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him ;
Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.
2 And he said unto them ; When ye pray, say ; Father, hal-
3 lowed be thy name ; thy kingdom come ; give us day by
4 day our daily bread ; and forgive us our sins, for we also
forgive every one that is indebted to us ; and lead us not in-
5 to temptation. And he said unto them ; Which of
you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight,
6 and say unto him ; Friend, lend me three loaves ; for a
friend of mine in his journey has come to me, and I have

- 7 nothing to set before him ? And he from within shall answer and say ; Trouble me not ; the door is now shut, and my
8 children are with me in bed ; I cannot rise and give thee. I say unto you, though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will
9 rise and give him as many as he needeth. And I say unto you ; Ask, and it shall be given you ; seek, and ye shall
10 find ; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh, receiveth ; and he that seeketh, findeth ;
11 and to him that knocketh, it shall be opened. If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone ? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a
12 serpent ? or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion ? If ye then, being evil, know *how* to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall *your* heavenly
13 Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him ?
14 And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb ; and it came to pass when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake ;
15 and the people wondered. But some of them said ; He casteth out devils through Beelzebub, the chief of the
16 devils ; and others, tempting him, sought of him a sign from
17 heaven. But he, knowing their thoughts, said unto them ; Every kingdom divided against itself, is brought to desolation,
18 and a house divided against a house falleth. If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand ? because ye say that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.
19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out ? Therefore shall they be your judges.
20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt
21 the kingdom of God is come upon you. When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace ;
22 but when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him all his armour wherein he
23 trusted, and divideth his spoils. He that is not with me is against me ; and he that gathereth not with me, scattereth.
24 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest ; and finding none, he saith ;
25 I will return unto my house whence I came out. And when
26 he cometh, he findeth it swept and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh to him seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in, and dwell there ; and the last
27 state of that man is worse than the first. And it came to pass, as he spake these things, a certain woman of

the company lifted up her voice, and said unto him ; Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the paps which thou hast
28 sucked. But he said ; Yea, rather blessed *are* they that
29 hear the word of God, and keep it. And when the people were gathered thick together, he began to say ; This is an evil generation ; they seek a sign ; and there shall no
30 sign be given it, but the sign of Jonas. For as Jonas was a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to
31 this generation. The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with the men of this generation, and condemn them ; for she came from the utmost parts of the earth, to hear the wisdom of Solomon ; and behold, a greater than
32 Solomon is here. The men of Nineveh shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it ; for they repented at the preaching of Jonas ; and behold, a
33 greater than Jonas is here. No man when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it into a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the
34 light. The light of the body is the eye ; therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light ; but when *thine eye* is evil, thy body also is full of darkness.
35 Take heed therefore, that the light which is in thee be not darkness. If thy whole body therefore *be* full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.
37 And as he spake, a certain Pharisee besought him to dine with him. And he went in and sat down to meat.
38 And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not
39 first washed before dinner. And the Lord said unto him ; Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter ; but your inward part is full of ravening and
40 wickedness. Ye fools, did not he that made that which is without, make that which is within also ? But rather give alms of such things as ye have ; and behold, all things are clean
42 unto you. But wo unto you Pharisees, for ye tithe mint, and rue, and all manner of herbs ; and pass over judgment and the love of God. These ought ye to have done, and
43 not to leave the other undone. Wo unto you Pharisees, for ye love the uppermost seats in the synagogues, and greetings in the markets. Wo unto you, for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over *them* are not
45 aware of *them*. Then answered one of the lawyers, and said unto him ; Master, thus saying, thou re-

46 proachest us also. And he said ; Wo unto you also, ye
lawyers ! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne,
and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your
47 fingers. Wo unto you, for ye build the sepulchres of the
48 prophets, and your fathers killed them. Truly ye bear wit-
ness, that ye allow the deeds of your fathers ; for they in-
49 deed killed them, and ye build their sepulchres. Therefore
also said the wisdom of God ; I will send them prophets
and apostles, and *some* of them they shall slay and perse-
50 cute ; that the blood of all the prophets, which was shed
from the foundation of the world, may be required of this
51 generation ; from the blood of Abel unto the blood of
Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the tem-
ple. Verily I say unto you, it shall be required of this gen-
52 eration. Wo unto you lawyers, for ye have taken away
the key of knowledge ; ye entered not in yourselves, and
53 them that were entering in ye hindered. And as
he said these things unto them, the scribes and the Pharisees
began to urge him vehemently, and to provoke him to speak of
54 many things ; laying wait for him, and seeking to catch some-
XII. thing out of his mouth, that they might accuse him. In
the mean time, when there were gathered together an
innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode
one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples ; First
of all, beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is
2 hypocrisy. For there is nothing covered, that shall not be
3 revealed ; neither hid, that shall not be known. Therefore,
whatsoever ye have spoken in darkness, shall be heard in the
light ; and that which ye have spoken in the ear in closets,
4 shall be proclaimed upon the house tops. And I say unto
you, my friends ; Be not afraid of them that kill the body,
5 and after that, have no more that they can do. But I will
forewarn you whom ye shall fear ; fear him, which after he
hath killed, hath power to cast into hell ; yea, I say unto
6 you, fear him. Are not five sparrows sold for two far-
7 things ? and not one of them is forgotten before God. But
even the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear
not therefore ; ye are of more value than many spar-
8 rows. Also I say unto you ; Whosoever shall con-
fess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess
9 before the angels of God. But he that denieth me before
10 men, shall be denied before the angels of God. And who-
soever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall

- be forgiven him ; but unto him that blasphemeth against the
11 Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven. And when they bring
you unto the synagogues, and *unto* magistrates, and powers,
take ye no thought, how or what thing ye shall answer, or
12 what ye shall say ; for the Holy Ghost shall teach you in
the same hour what ye ought to say.
- 13 And one of the company said unto him ; Master, speak
14 to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me. And
he said unto him ; Man, who made me a judge, or a divider
15 over you ? And he said unto them ; Take heed, and
beware of covetousness ; for a man's life consisteth not in
16 the abundance of the things which he possesseth. And
he spake a parable unto them, saying ; The ground of a
17 certain rich man brought forth plentifully. And he thought
within himself, saying ; What shall I do ? because I have no
18 room where to bestow my fruits. And he said ; This will
I do ; I will pull down my barns, and build greater ; and
19 there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods ; and I will
say to my soul ; Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for
20 many years ; take thine ease, eat, drink, *and* be merry. But
God said unto him ; *Thou* fool, this night thy soul shall be
required of thee ; then whose shall those things be which
21 thou hast provided ? So is he that layeth up treasure for
22 himself, and is not rich towards God. And he
said unto his disciples ; Therefore I say unto you, take no
thought for your life, what ye shall eat ; neither for the body,
23 what ye shall put on. The life is more than meat ; and
24 the body is *more than raiment*. Consider the ravens, for
they neither sow nor reap ; which neither have store-house,
nor barn ; and God feedeth them. How much more are
25 ye better than the fowls ? And which of you with taking
26 thought can add to his stature one cubit ? If ye then be not
able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for
27 the rest ? Consider the lilies how they grow ; they toil not,
they spin not. And yet I say unto you, that Solomon in all
28 his glory was not arrayed like one of these. If then God
so clothe the grass in the field, which to-day is, and to-
morrow is cast into the oven, how much more *will he clothe*
29 you, O ye of little faith ? And seek not ye what ye shall
eat, or what ye shall drink ; neither be ye of doubtful mind.
For all these things do the nations of the world seek after ;
30 and your Father knoweth that ye have need of these
31 things. But rather seek ye the kingdom of God, and all

32 these things shall be added unto you. Fear not, little flock;
for it is your Father's good pleasure to give you the king-
33 dom. Sell that ye have, and give alms. Provide your-
selves bags which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens
that faileth not, where no thief approacheth, neither moth
34 corrupteth. For where your treasure is, there will your
35 heart be also. Let your loins be girded about,
36 and *your* lights burning; and ye yourselves like unto men
that wait for their lord, when he will return from the wed-
ding; that when he cometh and knocketh, they may open
37 unto him immediately. Blessed *are* those servants, whom
the lord when he cometh shall find watching; verily I
say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them to
38 sit down to meat, and will come forth and serve them. And
if he shall come in the second watch, or come in the third
39 watch, and find *them* so; blessed are those servants. And
this know, that if the good man of the house had known what
hour the thief would come, he would have watched, and
40 not have suffered his house to be broken through. Be ye
therefore ready also; for the Son of man cometh at an
41 hour when ye think not. Then Peter said unto
him; Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even to all?
42 And the Lord said; Who then is that faithful and wise stew-
ard, whom *his* lord shall make ruler over his household, to
43 give *them* *their* portion of meat in due season? Blessed is
that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so
44 doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will make him ruler
45 over all that he hath. But and if that servant say in his
heart; My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat
the men-servants, and maidens, and to eat and drink, and to
46 be drunken; the lord of that servant will come in a day
when he looketh not for *him*, and at an hour when he is not
aware; and will cut him in sunder, and will appoint him his
47 portion with the unbelievers. And that servant which knew
his lord's will, and prepared not *himself*, neither did accor-
48 ding to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes; but he
that knew not, and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall
be beaten with few stripes. For unto whomsoever much is
given, of him shall be much required; and to whom men have
49 committed much, of him they will ask the more. I
50 am come to send fire on the earth; and how I wish that it were
already kindled! But I have a baptism to be baptized with;
51 and how am I straightened till it be accomplished! Sup-

pose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you,
52 nay, but rather division. For from henceforth there shall
be five in one house divided, three against two, and two
53 against three. The father shall be divided against the son,
and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter,
and the daughter against the mother; the mother-in-law
against her daughter-in-law, and the daughter-in-law against
54 her mother-in-law. And he said also to the people;
When ye see a cloud rise out of the west, straightway ye
55 say; There cometh a shower; and so it is. And when ye
see the south wind blow, ye say; There will be heat; and it
56 cometh to pass. Ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of
the sky, and of the earth; but how is it, that ye do not discern
57 this time? Yea, and why even of yourselves
58 judge ye not what is right? When thou goest with thine
adversary to the magistrate, *as thou art* in the way, give diligence
that thou mayest be delivered from him; lest he hale
thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer,
59 and the officer cast thee into prison. I tell thee, thou shalt
not depart thence, till thou hast paid the very last mite.

XIII. There were present at that season some that told him of
the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their
2 sacrifices. And Jesus answering said unto them; Suppose
ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans,
3 because they suffered such things? I tell you, nay; but
4 except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. Or those
eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them,
think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in
5 Jerusalem? I tell you, nay; but except ye repent, ye shall
6 all likewise perish.

He spake also this parable;
A certain man had a fig-tree planted in his vineyard; and
7 he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. Then
said he unto the dresser of his vineyard; Behold, these
three years I come seeking fruit on this fig-tree, and find
8 none; cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground? And he
answering said unto him; Lord, let it alone this year also,
9 till I shall dig about it, and dung it; and if it bear fruit,
well; and if not, *then* after that thou shalt cut it down.

10 And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath.
11 And behold, there was a woman which had a spirit
of infirmity eighteen years; and was bowed together, and
12 could in no wise lift up *herself*. And when Jesus saw her,
he called *her* to him, and said unto her; Woman, thou art

- 13 loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid *his* hands on her ;
and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.
- 14 And the ruler of the synagogue answered with indignation,
because that Jesus had healed on the sabbath-day, and said
unto the people ; There are six days in which men ought to
work ; in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the
15 sabbath-day. The Lord then answered him, and said ;
Thou hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the sabbath
loose his ox or *his* ass from the stall, and lead *him* away to
16 watering ? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of
Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, these eighteen years,
17 be loosed from this bond on the sabbath-day ? And when
he had said these things, all his adversaries were ashamed ;
and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that
were done by him.
- 18 Then said he ; Unto what is the kingdom of God like ? and
19 whereunto shall I resemble it ? It is like a grain of mustard-
seed, which a man took, and cast into his garden ; and it
grew, and waxed a great tree, and the fowls of the air
20 lodged in the branches of it. And again he said ;
21 Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God ? It is like
leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of
meal, till the whole was leavened.
- 22 And he went through the cities and villages, teaching, and
23 journeying towards Jerusalem. Then said one unto him ;
Lord, are there few that be saved ? And he said unto them ;
24 Strive to enter in at the straight door ; for many, I say unto
25 you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. When once
the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the
door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the
door, saying ; Lord, lord, open unto us ; and he shall
answer and say unto you ; I know you not whence you are ;
26 then shall ye begin to say ; We have eaten and drunk in
27 thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. But he
shall say ; I tell you, I know you not whence you are ; de-
28 part from me, all *ye* workers of iniquity. There shall be
weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham,
and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom
29 of God, and you *yourselves* thrust out. And they shall
come from the east, and *from* the west, and from the north
and *from* the south ; and shall sit down in the kingdom of
30 God. And behold, there are last, which shall be first ; and
there are first, which shall be last.

31 The same day there came certain of the Pharisees, saying
unto him ; Get thee out, and depart hence ; for Herod will
32 kill thee. And he said unto them ; Go ye and tell that fox ;
Behold, I cast out devils and I do cures to-day and to-mor-
33 row, and the third *day* I shall be perfected. Nevertheless,
I must walk to-day and to-morrow, and the *day* following ;
34 for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem. O
Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest
them that are sent unto thee, how often would I have gath-
ered thy children together, as a hen *doth* gather her brood
35 under *her* wings ! and ye would not. Behold, your house
is left unto you *desolate*. And I say unto you, ye shall not
see me, until *the time* come when ye shall say ; Blessed is
he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

XIV. And it came to pass, as he went into the house of one of
the chief Pharisees to eat bread on the sabbath-day, that
2 they watched him. And behold, there was a certain man
3 before him which had the dropsy. And Jesus answering,
spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying ; Is it lawful
4 to heal on the sabbath-day ? And they held their peace.
5 And he took *him*, and healed him and let *him* go. And he
answered them, saying ; Which of you shall have an ass or
an ox fall into a pit, and will not straightway pull *him* out on
6 the sabbath-day ? And they could not answer him again to
7 these things. And he put forth a parable to those
which were bidden, when he marked how they chose out
8 the chief rooms, saying unto them ; When thou art bidden
of any *man* to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room ;
lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him ;
9 and he that bade thee and him come and say to thee ; Give
this man place ; and thou begin with shame to take the low-
10 est room. But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in
the lowest room, that when he that bade thee cometh, he
may say unto thee ; Friend, go up higher. Then shalt
thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat
11 with thee. For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased ;
12 and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. Then
said he also to him that bade him ; When thou makest a din-
ner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither
thy kinsmen, nor *thy* rich neighbours ; lest they also bid
13 thee again, and a recompense be made thee. But when
thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame,
14 the blind ; and thou shalt be blessed, for they cannot recom-

- pense thee ; for thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just. And when one of them that sat at meat with him heard these things, he said unto him ; Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.
- 16 Then said he unto him ; A certain man made a great supper,
17 and bade many. And he sent his servant at supper-time, to say to them that were bidden ; Come, for all things are now
18 ready. And they all with one consent began to make excuse. The first said unto him ; I have bought a piece of ground, and I must needs go and see it ; I pray thee, have
19 me excused. And another said ; I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them ; I pray thee, have me excused. And another said ; I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. So that servant came, and shewed his lord these things. Then the master of the house, being angry, said to his servant ; Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the
22 maimed, and the halt, and the blind. And the servant said ; Lord, it is done as thou hast commanded, and yet there is
23 room. And the lord said unto the servant ; Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel them to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden, shall taste of my supper.
- 25 And there went great multitudes with him ; and he turned,
26 and said unto them ; If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. And whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come
27 after me, cannot be my disciple. For which of you intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth
28 the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it ? lest haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it,
29 all that behold it begin to mock him, saying ; This man began to build, and was not able to finish. Or what king going to make war against another king, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand ?
32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace. So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he
34 hath, he cannot be my disciple. Salt is good ; but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned ? It is

neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dung-hill ; *but* men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

- XV. Then drew near unto him all the publicans and sinners,
2 for to hear him. And the Pharisees and scribes murmured,
3 saying ; This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with
4 them. And he spake this parable unto them, saying ;
5 What man of you having a hundred shcep, if he lose one of
6 them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilder-
7 ness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it ? And
8 when he hath found *it*, he layeth *it* on his shoulders, rejoic-
9 ing ; and when he cometh home, he calleth together *his*
10 friends and neighbours, saying unto them ; Rejoice with me,
11 for I have found my sheep which was lost. I say unto you,
12 that likewise joy shall be in heaven over one sinner that re-
13 penteth, more than over ninety and nine just persons which
14 need no repentance. Either what woman having
15 ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a
16 candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently, till she find
17 *it* ? And when she hath found *it*, she calleth *her* friends and
18 *her* neighbours together, saying ; Rejoice with me ; for I
19 have found the piece which I had lost. Likewise, I say
20 unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God
21 over one sinner that repenteth. And he said ; A
22 certain man had two sons. And the younger of them said
23 to *his* father ; Father, give me the portion of goods that
24 falleth to *me*. And he divided unto them *his* living.
25 And not many days after, the younger son gathered all to-
26 gether, and took *his* journey into a far country ; and there
27 wasted his substance with riotous living. And when he had
28 spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land ; and he
29 began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to a
30 citizen of that country ; and he sent him into his fields to
31 feed swine. And he would fain have filled *his* belly with the
32 husks that the swine did eat ; and no man gave unto him.
33 And when he came to himself, he said ; How many hired
34 servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare ! and
35 I perish here with hunger. I will arise and go to my father,
36 and will say unto him ; Father, I have sinned against
37 Heaven, and before thee ; I am no more worthy to be called
38 thy son ; make me as one of thy hired servants. And he
39 arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a
40 great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion ; and
41 ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son

said unto him ; Father, I have sinned against Heaven and in thy sight ; and am no more worthy to be called thy son.
22 But the father said to his servants ; Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him, and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on
23 his feet. And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it ; and
24 let us eat and be merry ; for this my son was dead, and is alive again ; he was lost, and is found. And they began to
25 be merry. Now his elder son was in the field ; and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. And he called one of the servants, and asked what
26 these things meant. And he said unto him ; Thy brother is come ; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he
27 hath received him safe and sound. And he was angry, and would not go in. Therefore came his father out, and entreated him. And he answering said to his father ; Lo,
28 these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment ; and yet thou never gavest me
29 a kid, that I might make merry with my friends. But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf.
30 And he said unto him ; Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine. ~~It was meet that we should make merry,~~
31 ~~and be glad, for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again ; and was lost, and is found.~~

XVI. And he said also unto his disciples ; There was a certain rich man, which had a steward ; and the same was accused
2 unto him that he had wasted his goods. And he called him, and said unto him ; How is it that I hear this of thee ? give an account of thy stewardship ; for thou mayest be no
3 longer steward. Then the steward said within himself ; What shall I do, because my lord taketh away from me the
4 stewardship ? I cannot dig, to beg I am ashamed. I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the steward-
5 ship, they may receive me into their houses. So he called every one of his lord's debtors unto him, and said unto the
6 first ; How much owest thou unto my lord ? And he said ; A hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him ; Take
7 thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty. Then said he to another ; And how much owest thou ? And he said ; A hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him ;
8 Take thy bill, and write four-score. And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely ; for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the

- 9 children of light. And I say unto you; Make to yourselves friends of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when ye fail, they may receive you into everlasting habitations.
- 10 He that is faithful in that which is least, is faithful also in much; and he that is unjust in the least, is unjust also in much. If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true
- 12 riches? and if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who shall give you that which is your own?
- 13 No servant can serve two masters; for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.
- 14 And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things; and they derided him. And he said unto them; Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but God knoweth your hearts; for that which is highly esteemed among men, is abomination in the sight of God. The law and the prophets were until John; since that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man presseth into
- 17 it. And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail. Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery; and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from *her* husband, committeth
- 19 adultery. There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every
- 20 day. And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table; moreover, the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom. The rich man also died and was
- 23 buried. And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.
- 24 And he cried, and said; Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this
- 25 flame. But Abraham said; Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things; but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.
- 26 And besides all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, so that they which would pass from hence to you, cannot, neither can they pass to us, that *would come* from

27 thence. Then he said ; I pray thee therefore, father, that
28 thou wouldest send him to my father's house ; for I have
five brethren ; that he may testify unto them, lest they also
29 come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him ;
They have Moses and the prophets ; let them hear them.
30 And he said ; Nay, father Abraham ; but if one went unto
31 them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto
him ; If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither
will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.

XVII. Then said he unto the disciples ; It is impossible but
that offences will come ; but wo *unto him* through whom they
2 come ! It were better for him that a millstone were hanged
about his neck, and he cast into the sea, than that he should
3 offend one of these little ones. Take heed to your-
selves.

If thy brother trespass against thee, re-
4 buke him ; and if he repent, forgive him. And if he tres-
pass against thee seven times in a day, and seven times in a
day turn again, saying ; I repent ; thou shalt forgive
5 him.

And the apostles said unto the Lord ; In-
6 crease our faith. And the Lord said ; If ye had faith as a
grain of mustard seed, ye might say unto this sycamine-tree ;
Be thou plucked up by the root, and be thou planted in the
7 sea ; and it should obey you. But which of you having a
servant ploughing, or feeding cattle, will say unto him, when
he is come from the field ; Go immediately and sit down to
8 meat ? Will he not rather say unto him ; Make ready
wherewith I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I
have eaten and drunken ; and afterward thou shalt eat and
9 drink ? Doth he thank that servant, because he did the
10 things that were commanded ? I trow not. So likewise ye,
when ye shall have done all those things which are com-
manded you, say ; We are unprofitable servants ; we have
done that which was our duty to do.

11 And it came to pass, as he went to Jerusalem, that he
12 passed through the midst of Samaria and Galilee. And as
he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that
13 were lepers, which stood afar off. And they lifted up *their*
14 voices, and said ; Jesus, Master, have mercy on us. And
when he saw *them*, he said unto them ; Go shew yourselves
unto the priests. And it came to pass, that, as they went,
15 they were cleansed. And one of them, when he saw that he
was healed, turned back, and with a loud voice glorified God ;
16 and fell down on *his* face at his feet, giving him thanks ; and

17 he was a Samaritan. And Jesus answering, said ; Were
18 there not ten cleansed ? but where *are* the nine ? Are there
not found that returned to give glory to God, save this stran-
19 ger ? And he said unto him ; Arise, go thy way ; thy faith
hath made thee whole.

20 And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the
kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said ;
21 The kingdom of God cometh not with observation ; neither
shall they say ; Lo here, or, lo there ; for behold, the
22 kingdom of God is within you. And he said unto
the disciples ; The days will come, when ye shall desire to
see one of the days of the Son of man ; and ye shall not
23 see it. And they shall say to you ; See here, or see there ;
24 go not after *them*, nor follow *them*. For as the lightning that
lighteneth out of the one *part* under heaven, shineth unto the
other *part* under heaven ; so shall the Son of man be in his
25 day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected
26 of this generation. And as it was in the days of Noe, so
27 shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. They did
eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in mar-
riage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark ; and the
28 flood came, and destroyed them all. Likewise also as it
was in the days of Lot ; they did eat, they drank, they
29 bought, they sold, they planted, they builded ; but the same
day that Lot went out of Sodom, it rained fire and brimstone
30 from heaven, and destroyed them all ; even thus shall it be
31 in the day when the Son of man is revealed. In that day,
he which shall be upon the house-top, and his stuff in the
house, let him not come down to take it away ; and he that
32 is in the field, let him likewise not return back. Remember
33 Lot's wife. Whosoever shall seek to save his life, shall lose
34 it ; and whosoever shall lose his life, shall preserve it. I tell
you ; In that night there shall be two *men* in one bed ;
35 one shall be taken, and the other shall be left. Two *women*
shall be grinding together ; the one shall be taken and the
37 other left. And they answered and said unto him ;
Where, Lord ? And he said unto them ; Wheresoever
the body is, thither will the eagles be gathered togeth-

XVIII. er. And he spake a parable unto them *to this*

2 *end* ; That men ought always to pray, and not to faint, saying ;
There was in a city a judge, which feared not God, neither
3 regarded man. And there was a widow in that city ; and
she came unto him, saying ; Avenge me of mine adversary.

- 4 And he would not for a while. But afterward he said within
5 himself ; Though I fear not God, nor regard man ; yet,
because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her ; lest by
6 her continual coming she weary me. And the Lord said ;
7 Hear what the unjust judge saith. And shall not God avenge
his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he
8 bear long with them ? I tell you that he will avenge them
speedily. Nevertheless, when the Son of man cometh,
shall he find faith on the earth ?
- 9 And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in
themselves that they were righteous, and despised others ;
10 Two men went up into the temple to pray ; the one a Phar-
11 isee, and the other a publican. The Pharisee stood by him-
self, and prayed thus ; God, I thank thee, that I am not as
other men *are*, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as
12 this publican. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all
13 that I possess. And the publican, standing afar off, would
not lift up so much as *his* eyes unto heaven ; but smote upon
14 his breast, saying ; God, be merciful to me a sinner. I tell
you, this man went down to his house justified *rather* than
the other ; for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased ;
and he that ~~humbleth himself~~ *shall be exalted*.
- 15 And they brought unto him also infants, that he would
touch them ; but when *his* disciples saw *it*, they rebuked
16 them. But Jesus called them unto him, and said ; Suffer
little children to come unto me, and forbid them not ; for of
17 such is the kingdom of God. Verily I say unto you, who-
soever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child,
shall in no wise enter therein.
- 18 And a certain ruler asked him, saying ; Good master, what
19 shall I do to inherit eternal life ? And Jesus said unto him ;
Why callest thou me good ? none is good, save one, *that is*
20 God. Thou knowest the commandments ; " Do not com-
mit adultery ; do not kill ; do not steal ; do not bear false
21 witness ; honour thy father and thy mother." And he said ;
22 All these have I kept from my youth up. Now, when
Jesus heard these things, he said unto him ; Yet lackest thou
one thing ; sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the
poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven ; and come,
23 follow me. And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful ;
24 for he was very rich. And when Jesus saw that he
was very sorrowful, he said ; How hardly shall they that
25 have riches enter into the kingdom of God ! For it is easier

for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich
26 man to enter into the kingdom of God. And they that
27 heard *it*, said ; Who then can be saved ? And he said ; The
things which are impossible with men, are possible with
God.

28 Then Peter said ; Lo, we have left all, and followed thee.
29 And he said unto them ; Verily I say unto you, there is
no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife,
30 or children, for the kingdom of God's sake, who shall not
receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world
to come life everlasting.

31 Then he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them ;
Behold we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written
by the prophets concerning the Son of man shall be accom-
32 plished. For he shall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and
shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on ;
33 and they shall scourge *him*, and put him to death ; and the
34 third day he shall rise again. And they understood none of
these things ; and this saying was hid from them, neither
knew they the things which were spoken.

35 And it came to pass, that, as he was come nigh unto Jeri-
36 cho, a certain blind man sat by the way side begging. And
hearing the multitude pass by, he asked what it meant.
37 And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.
38 And he cried, saying ; Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy
39 on me. And they which went before rebuked him, that he
should hold his peace. But he cried so much the more ;
40 Thou son of David, have mercy on me. And Jesus stood
and commanded him to be brought unto him. And when
41 he was come near, he asked him, saying ; What wilt thou
that I shall do unto thee ? And he said ; Lord, that I may
42 receive my sight. And Jesus said unto him ; Receive thy
43 sight ; thy faith hath saved thee. And immediately he
received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God ; and
all the people, when they saw *it*, gave praise unto God.

XIX. And *Jesus* entered and passed through Jericho.

2 And behold, *there was* a man named Zaccheus ; which was
3 the chief among the publicans, and he was rich. And he
sought to see Jesus who he was ; and could not for the press,
4 because he was little of stature. And he ran before, and
climbed up into a sycamore-tree to see him ; for he was to
5 pass that way. And when Jesus came to the place, he
looked up, and saw him, and said unto him ; Zaccheus,

make haste, and come down ; for to-day I must abide at thy
6 house. And he made haste, and came down, and received
7 him joyfully. And when they saw *it* they all murmured, say-
ing, that he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sin-
8 ner. And Zaccheus stood, and said unto the Lord ; Be-
hold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor ; and
if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation,
9 I restore *him* four-fold. And Jesus said unto him ; This
day is salvation come to this house ; forasmuch as he also is a
10 son of Abraham ; for the Son of man is come to seek and
to save that which was lost.

11 And as they heard these things, he added and spake a
parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they
thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear.
12 He said therefore ; A certain nobleman went into a far coun-
13 try to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And
he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds,
14 and said unto them ; Occupy till I come. But his citizens
hated him, and sent a message after him, saying ; We will
15 not have this *man* to reign over us. And it came to pass,
that when he was returned, having received the kingdom,
then he commanded ~~these servants~~ to be called unto him, to
whom he had given the money ; that he might know how
16 much every man had gained by trading. Then came the
first, saying ; Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds.
17 And he said unto him ; Well, thou good servant ; because
thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority
18 over ten cities. And the second came, saying ; Lord, thy
pound hath gained five pounds. And he said likewise to
19 him ; Be thou also over five cities. And another came, saying ;
20 Lord, behold *here is* thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a
napkin. For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man ;
21 thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that
thou didst not sow. And he saith unto him ; Out of thine
own mouth will I judge thee, *thou* wicked servant ; thou
knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not
22 down, and reaping that I did not sow ; wherefore then gavest
not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might
23 have required mine own with usury ? And he said unto
them that stood by ; Take from him the pound, and give it
24 to him that hath ten pounds. (And they said unto him ;
25 Lord, he hath ten pounds.) For I say unto you, that unto
26 every one which hath, shall be given ; and from him that

- hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him.
27 But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign
28 over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me. And
when he had thus spoken, he went before, ascending up to
Jerusalem.
- 29 And it came to pass, when he was come nigh to Bethphage
and Bethany, at the mount called *the mount* of Olives, he sent
30 two of his disciples, saying; Go ye into the village over
against *you*; in the which at your entering ye shall find a colt
tied, whereon yet never man sat; loose him, and bring *him*
31 *hither*. And if any man ask you; Why do ye loose *him*? thus
shall ye say unto him; Because the Lord hath need of him.
32 And they that were sent went their way, and found even as
33 he had said unto them. And as they were loosing the
colt, the owners thereof said unto them; Why loose ye the
34 colt? And they said; The Lord hath need of him.
35 And they brought him to Jesus; and they cast their gar-
36 ments upon the colt, and they sat Jesus thereon. And as he
37 went, they spread their clothes in the way. And
when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the
mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began
to rejoyce and praise God with a loud voice, for all the
38 mighty works that they had seen, saying; Blessed *be* the
King that cometh in the name of the Lord; peace in heaven,
39 and glory in the highest. And some of the Pharisees from
among the multitude said unto him; Master, rebuke thy
40 disciples. And he answered and said unto them; I tell
you, that if these should hold their peace, the stones would
41 immediately cry out. And when he was come
42 near, he beheld the city, and wept over it, saying; If thou
hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things
which belong unto thy peace! but now they are hid from
43 thine eyes. For the days shall come upon thee, that thine
enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee
44 round, and keep thee in on every side; and shall lay thee
even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and
they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because
thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.
- 45 And he went into the temple, and began to cast out
46 them that sold therein, and them that bought, saying unto
them; It is written; "My house is the house of prayer;
47 but ye have made it a den of thieves." And he
taught daily in the temple; but the chief priests, and the

scribes, and the chief of the people sought to destroy him.
48 And they could not find what they might do ; for all the people were very attentive to hear him.

XX. And it came to pass, *that* on one of those days, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the gospel, the chief priests and the scribes came upon *him*, with the
2 elders, and spake unto him, saying ; Tell us, by what authority doest thou these things ? or who is he that gave thee
3 this authority ? And he answered and said unto them ; I
4 will also ask you one thing, and answer me ; The baptism of
5 John, was it from heaven, or of men ? And they reasoned with themselves, saying ; If we shall say ; From heaven, he
6 will say ; Why then believed ye him not ? But and if we say ; Of men ; all the people will stone us ; for they be persuaded
7 that John was a prophet. And they answered, that they could
8 not tell whence *it was*. And Jesus said unto them ; Neither
9 tell I you by what authority I do these things.

Then began he to speak to the people this parable ; A man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to husbandmen ; and went
10 into a far country for a long time. And at the season he sent a servant to the husbandmen, that they should give him of the fruit of the vineyard ; but the husbandmen beat him,
11 and sent *him* away empty. And again he sent another servant ; and they beat him also, and entreated *him* shamefully, and sent *him* away empty. And again he sent a
12 third ; and they wounded him also, and cast *him* out. Then said the lord of the vineyard ; What shall I do ? I will send my beloved son ; it may be they will reverence *him* when
13 they see him. But when the husbandmen saw him, they reasoned among themselves, saying ; This is the heir ; come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be ours. So they cast him out of the vineyard, and killed *him*. What therefore shall the lord of the vineyard do unto them ? He shall come and destroy these husbandmen, and shall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard *it*, they said ; God
14 forbid. And he beheld them, and said ; What is this then that is written ; “ The stone which the builders rejected, the
15 same is become the head of the corner ? ” Whosoever shall fall upon that stone, shall be broken ; but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder. And the chief
16 priests and the scribes the same hour sought to lay hands on him ; and they feared the people ; for they perceived that he had spoken this parable against them.

20 And they watched *him*, and sent forth spies, which should feign themselves just men ; that they might take hold of his words, that so they might deliver him unto the power and
21 authority of the governor. And they asked him, saying ; Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, neither acceptest thou the person *of any*, but teachest the way
22 of God truly. Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Cesar,
23 or no ? But he perceived their craftiness, and said unto
24 them ; Why tempt ye me ? Shew me a penny ; whose image and superscription hath it ? They answered and said ;
25 Cesar's. And he said unto them ; Render therefore unto Cesar the things which be Cesar's ; and unto God the
26 things which be God's. And they could not take hold of his words before the people ; and they marvelled at his
27 answer, and held their peace. Then came to *him* certain of the Sadducees, which deny that there is any
28 resurrection, and they asked him, saying ; Master, Moses wrote unto us, " if any man's brother die, having a wife, and he die without children, that his brother should take his wife,
29 and raise up seed unto his brother." There were therefore seven brethren ; and the first took a wife and died without
30 children. And the second took her to wife, and he died
31 childless. And the third took her ; and in like manner the
32 seven also ; they left no children, and died. Last of all, the
33 woman died also. Therefore in the resurrection, whose
34 wife of them is she ? for seven had her to wife. And Jesus answering, said unto them ; The children of this world marry,
35 and are given in marriage ; but ~~they which shall be~~ *they which shall be* accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the
36 dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage ; neither can they die any more ; for they are equal unto the angels ; and are the children of God, being the children of the re-
37 surrection. Now that the dead are raised, even Moses shewed at the bush, when he calleth the Lord, the God of
38 Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. For he is not a God of the dead, but of the living ; for all live
39 unto him. Then certain of the scribes answering, said ;
40 Master, thou hast well said. And after that, they durst not
41 ask him any question *at all*. And he said unto
42 them ; How say they that Christ is David's son ? And David himself saith in the book of Psalms ; " The LORD said
43 unto my Lord ; Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine
44 enemies thy footstool." David therefore calleth him Lord,

45 how is he then his son? *Then in the audience of*
 46 all the people, he said unto his disciples; Beware of the
 scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love greet-
 ings in the markets, and the highest seats in the synagogues,
 47 and the chief rooms at feasts; which devour widow's
 houses, and for a ~~show~~ *make long prayers*; the same shall
 receive greater damnation.

XXI. And he looked up and saw the rich men casting their gifts
 2 into the treasury. And he saw also a certain poor widow,
 3 casting in thither two mites; and he said; Of a truth I say
 unto you, that this poor widow hath cast in more than they
 4 all. For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the
 offerings of God; but she of her penury hath cast in all the
 living that she had.

5 And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with
 6 goodly stones, and gifts, he said; *As for* these things which
 ye behold, the days will come, in the which there shall not be
 left ~~one stone upon another~~; *that* shall not be thrown down.
 7 And they asked him, saying; Master, ~~but when~~ shall these
 things be? and what sign *will there be* when these things
 8 shall come to pass? And he said; Take heed that ye
 be not deceived. ~~For many shall come in my name~~, saying;
 I am *Christ*, and the time draweth near. Go ye not there-
 9 fore after them. But when ye shall hear of wars, and com-
 motions, be not terrified; for these things ~~must first come~~
 10 to pass; but the end *is* not by and by. Then said he unto
 them; Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against
 11 kingdom; and great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and
 famines, and pestilences; and fearful sights, and great signs
 12 shall there be from heaven. But before all these they
 shall lay their hands on you, and persecute you, delivering
 you up to the synagogues, and into prisons, being brought
 13 before kings and rulers for my name's sake. And it shall
 14 turn to you for a testimony. Settle it therefore in your
 15 hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer. For I
 will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your ad-
 16 versaries shall not be able to gainsay or resist. And ye
 shall be betrayed both by parents, and brethren, and kins-
 folks, and friends; and *some* of you shall they cause to be
 17 put to death. And ye shall be hated of all *men* for my
 18 name's sake. But there shall not a hair of your head perish.
 19 20 In your patience possess ye your souls. And when ye
 shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that

- 21 the desolation thereof is nigh. Then let them which are in
 Judea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the
 midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the coun-
 22 tries enter thereinto. For these be the days of vengeance,
 23 that all things which are written may be fulfilled. But wo
 unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck
 in those days; for there shall be great distress in the land,
 24 and wrath upon this people; and they shall fall by the edge
 of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations;
 and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the
 25 times of the Gentiles be fulfilled. And there shall
 be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and
 upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity at the roar
 26 of the sea and the waves; men's hearts failing them for fear,
 and for looking after those things which are coming on the
 27 earth; for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. And then
 shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud, with power
 28 and great glory. And when these things begin to come to
 pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your re-
 29 demption draweth nigh. And he spake to them
 30 a parable; Behold the fig-tree and all the trees; when they
 now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that
 31 summer is now nigh at hand. So likewise ye, when ye see
 these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God
 32 is nigh at hand. Verily I say unto you, this generation shall
 33 not pass away, till all be fulfilled. Heaven and earth shall
 34 pass away; but my words shall not pass away. And take
 heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be over-
 charged with ~~worshipping~~ ^{worshipping}, and drunkenness, and cares of this
 35 life; and so that day come upon you unawares. For as a
 snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the
 36 whole earth. Watch ye therefore always, and pray that ye may
 be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall
 come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.
 37 And in the day-time he was teaching in the temple; and
 at night he went out, and abode in the mount that is called *the*
 38 *mount of Olives*. And all the people came early in the morn-
 XXII. ing to him in the temple, for to hear him. Now
 the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called
 2 the passover; and the chief priests and scribes sought how
 3 they might kill him; for they feared the people. Then en-
 tered Satan into Judas surnamed Iscariot, being of the num-
 4 ber of the twelve. And he went his way, and communed

with the chief priests and captains, how he might betray him
5 unto them. And they were glad ; and covenanted to give
6 him money. And he promised ; and sought opportunity
to betray him unto them in the absence of the multitude.
7 Then came the day of unleavened bread, when the pass-
8 ver must be killed ; and he sent Peter and John, saying ; Go
9 and prepare us the passover, that we may eat. And they
10 said unto him ; Where wilt thou that we prepare ? And he
said unto them ; Behold, when ye are entered into the city,
there shall a man meet you, bearing a pitcher of water ; fol-
11 low him into the house where he entereth in ; and ye shall
say unto the good man of the house ; The master saith un-
to thee ; Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the
12 passover with my disciples ? And he shall shew you a large
13 upper room furnished ; there make ready. And they went
and found as he had said unto them ; and they made ready
14 the passover. And when the hour was come, he
15 sat down, and the twelve apostles with him. And he
said unto them ; With desire I have desired to eat this pass-
16 over with you, before I suffer. For I say unto you, I will
not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the king-
17 dom of God. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and
18 said ; Take this, and divide it among yourselves. For I
say unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until
19 the kingdom of God shall come. And he took bread,
and gave thanks, and brake it, and gave unto them, saying ;
This is my body, which is given for you ; this do in remem-
20 brance of me. Likewise also the cup after supper, saying ;
This cup is the new testament in my blood, which is shed
21 for you. But behold, the hand of him that be-
22 trayeth me is with me on the table. And truly the Son of
man goeth as it was determined ; but wo unto that man by
23 whom he is betrayed. And they began to inquire among
themselves, which of them it was that should do this thing.
24 And there was also a strife among them, which of them
25 should be accounted the greatest. And he said unto them ;
The kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them ; and
they that exercise authority upon them are called benefac-
26 tors. But ye *shall not be* so ; but he that is greatest among
you, let him be as the younger ; and he that is chief, as he
27 that doth serve. For whether is greater ? he that sitteth at
meat, or he that serveth ? is not he that sitteth at meat ? but
28 I am among you as he that serveth. Ye are they which

- 29 have continued with me in my temptations. And as my
Father hath appointed unto me a kingdom, I appoint unto
30 you, that ye eat and drink at my table in my kingdom;
and ye shall sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of
Israel.
- 31 And the Lord said; Simon, Simon, behold Satan hath
32 desired *to have* you, that he may sift *you* as wheat. But I
have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not. And when thou
33 art converted, strengthen thy brethren. And he said unto
him; Lord, I am ready to go with thee, both into prison, and
34 to death. And he said; I tell thee, Peter, the cock shall
not crow this day, before that thou shalt thrice deny that thou
35 knowest me. And he said unto them; When I sent
you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any
36 thing? And they said; Nothing. Then said he unto them;
But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise
his scrip; and he that hath no sword, let him sell his gar-
37 ment, and buy one. For I say unto you, that this that is
written must yet be accomplished in me; "And he was reck-
oned among the transgressors." For the things con-
38 cerning me have an end. And they said; Lord, behold,
here *are* two swords. And he said unto them; It is enough.
- 39 And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount
40 of Olives; and his disciples also followed him. And when he
was at the place, he said unto them; Pray that ye enter not
41 into temptation. And he was withdrawn from them about a
42 stone's cast, and kneeled down, and prayed, saying; Father,
if thou be willing, remove this cup from me; neverthe-
43 less, not my will, but thine be done. And there appeared
44 an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. And
being in an agony he prayed more earnestly. And his sweat
was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.
- 45 And when he rose up from prayer, and was come to the dis-
46 ciples, he found them sleeping for sorrow; and said unto
them; Why sleep ye? rise and pray, lest ye enter into
temptation.
- 47 And while he yet spake, behold a multitude, and he that
was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and
48 drew near unto Jesus to kiss him. But Jesus said unto him;
49 Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss? When
they which were about him saw what would follow, they said
50 unto him; Lord, shall we smite with the sword? And one
of them smote the servant of the high priest, and cut off his

51 right ear. And Jesus answered and said ; Suffer ye thus
52 far. And he touched his ear, and healed him. Then

Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple,
and the elders, which were come to him ; Ye be come out
53 as against a thief, with swords and staves ; when I was daily
with you in the temple, ye stretched forth no hands against
me ; but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.

54 Then took they him, and led *him*, and brought him
into the high priest's house. And Peter followed afar
55 off. And when they had kindled a fire in the midst

of the hall, and were set down together, Peter sat down

56 among them. But a certain maid beheld him as he sat by the
fire, and earnestly looked upon him, and said ; This man was

57 also with him. And he denied him, saying ; Woman, I
58 know him not. And after a little while another saw him, and

said ; 'Thou art also of them. And Peter said ; Man, I am

59 not. And about the space of one hour after, another confi-
dently affirmed, saying ; Of a truth ~~this~~ *this fellow* also was with

60 him ; for he is a Galilean. And Peter said ; Man, I know not
what thou sayest. And immediately, while he yet spake,

61 the cock crew. And the Lord turned, and looked upon Pe-
ter ; and Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he
had said unto him ; Before the cock crew, ~~thou~~ shalt deny

62 me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

63 And the men that held Jesus, mocked him, and smote

64 *him* ; and when they had blindfolded him, they struck him
on the face, and asked him, saying ; Prophecy, who is it

65 that smote thee ? And many other things blasphemously
spake they against him.

66 And as soon as it was day, the elders of the people, and
the chief priests, and the scribes came together, and led him

67 into their council, saying ; If thou art the Christ, tell us.

And he said unto them ; If I tell you, ye will not believe ;

68 and if I also ask *you*, ye will not answer me, nor let *me* go.

69 Hereafter shall the Son of man sit on the right hand of the

70 power of God. Then said they all ; Art thou then

the Son of God ? And he said unto them ; Ye say *truth* ; for

71 I am. And they said ; What need we any further witness ?

For we ourselves have heard of his own mouth.

XXIII. And the whole multitude of them arose, and led him

2 unto Pilate. And they began to accuse him, saying ; We
found this *fellow* perverting the nation, and forbidding to
give tribute to Cesar, saying that he himself is Christ, a king.

3 And Pilate asked him, saying; Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answered him and said; Thou sayest it.
4 Then said Pilate to the chief priests, and to the people; I
5 find no fault in this man. And they were the more fierce, saying; He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all
6 Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place. When Pilate heard of Galilee, he asked whether the man were a Galilean.
7 And as soon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him to Herod, who himself was also at
8 Jerusalem at that time. And when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad; for he was desirous to see him of a long season, because he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have seen some miracle done by him.
9 Then he questioned with him in many words; but he
10 answered him nothing. And the chief priests and scribes
11 stood, and vehemently accused him. And Herod with his men of war set him at nought, and mocked him, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and sent him again to Pilate.
12 And the same day Pilate and Herod were made friends together; for before they were at enmity between themselves.
13 And Pilate, when he had called together
14 the chief priests, and the rulers, and the people, said unto them; Ye have brought this man unto me, as one that perverteth the people; and behold, I, having examined him before you, have found no fault in this man, touching those
15 things whereof ye accuse him. No, nor yet Herod; for I sent you to him, and lo, nothing worthy of death is done
16 unto him. I will therefore chastise him, and release
17 him. For of necessity he must release one unto
18 them at the feast. And they cried out all at once, saying;
19 Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas; who, for a certain sedition made in the city, and for murder, was
20 cast into prison. Pilate therefore, willing to release Jesus, spake again to them. But they cried, saying; Crucify him,
21 spake again to them. But they cried, saying; Crucify him, crucify him. And he said unto them the third time; Why,
22 what evil hath he done? I have found no cause of death in
23 him; I will therefore chastise him, and let him go. And they were instant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified; and the voices of them, and of the chief
24 priests, prevailed. And Pilate gave sentence that it should be
25 as they required. And he released him that for sedition and murder was cast into prison, whom they had desired; but he delivered Jesus to their will.

- 26 And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon
a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid
27 the cross, that he might bear it after Jesus. And there fol-
lowed him a great company of people, and of women ;
28 which also bewailed and lamented him. But Jesus turning
unto them, said ; Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me ;
29 but weep for yourselves, and for your children. For behold,
the days are coming, in the which they shall say ; Blessed
are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps
30 which never gave suck. Then shall they begin to say to
the mountains ; Fall on us ; and to the hills ; Cover us.
31 For if they do these things in a green-tree, what shall be
32 done in the dry ? And there were also two other,
malefactors, led to be put to death with him.
- 33 And when they were come to the place which is called
Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors ; one
34 on the right hand, and the other on the left. Then said Je-
sus ; Father, forgive them ; for they know not what they do.
35 And they parted his raiment, and cast lots. And
the people stood beholding ; and the rulers also with them
derided him, saying ; He saved others, let him save himself,
36 if he be Christ, the chosen of God. And the soldiers also
37 mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar, and
saying ; If thou be the King of the Jews, save thyself.
38 And a superscription also was written over him, in letters of
Greck, and Latin, and Hebrew ; "THIS IS THE KING
39 OF THE JEWS." And one of the malefac-
tors, which were hanged, railed on him, saying ; If thou be
40 Christ, save thyself and us. But the other answering,
rebuked him, saying ; Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou
41 art in the same condemnation ? And we indeed justly ; for
we receive the due reward of our deeds ; but this man hath
42 done nothing amiss. And he said unto Jesus ; Lord, re-
43 member me when thou comest into thy kingdom. And Je-
sus said unto him ; Verily I say unto thee, to-day shalt thou
44 be with me in paradise. And it was about the sixth
hour, and there was a darkness over all the earth, until the
45 ninth hour. And the sun was darkened ; and the vail of the
46 temple was rent in the midst. And when Jesus had cried
with a loud voice, he said ; Father, into thy hands I com-
mend my spirit. And having said thus, he gave up the
47 ghost. Now, when the centurion saw what was
done, he glorified God, saying ; Certainly this was a right-

48 eous man. And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their
49 breasts and returned. And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off, beholding these things.

50 And behold, a man named Joseph, a counsellor,
51 a good man, and a just, (the same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them,) of Arimathea, a city of the Jews, who also himself waited for the
52 kingdom of God; this *man* went unto Pilate, and begged
53 the body of Jesus. And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone,
54 wherein never man before was laid. And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also, which came with him from Galilee, followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body
56 was laid. And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments; and rested the sabbath-day, according to the com-
XXIV. mandment.

Now upon the first *day* of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared; and
2 certain *others* with them. And they found the stone rolled
3 away from the sepulchre; and they entered in, and found
4 not the body of the Lord Jesus. And it came to pass, as they were much perplexed thereabout, behold, two men
5 stood by them in shining garments. And as they were afraid, and bowed down *their* faces to the earth, they said unto
6 them; *Why seek ye the living among the dead? he is not here, but is risen.* Remember how he spake unto you
7 when he was yet in Galilee, saying; The Son of man must be delivered into the hands of sinful men, and be crucified,
8 and the third day rise again. And they remem-
9 bered his words; and returned from the sepulchre, and told
10 all these things unto the eleven, and to all the rest. It was Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary *the mother* of James, and other *women that were* with them, which told
11 these things unto the apostles. And their words seemed to
12 them as idle tales, and they believed them not. Then arose Peter, and ran unto the sepulchre, and stooping down, he beheld the linen clothes laid by themselves; and went home, wondering at that which was to come to pass.

13 And behold, two of them went that same day to a village called Emmaus, which was from Jerusalem *about three-*

14 score furlongs. And they talked together of all these
15 things which had happened. And it came to pass, that,
while they communed *together*, and reasoned, Jesus himself
16 drew near, and went with them. But their eyes were hol-
17 den, that they should not know him. And he said unto
them ; What manner of *communications are* these that ye
18 have one to another, as ye walk, and are sad ? And the one
of them, whose name was Cleopas, answering, said unto
him ; Art thou only a stranger in Jerusalem, and hast not
known the things which are come to pass there in these
19 days ? And he said unto them ; What things ? And they
said unto him ; Concerning Jesus of Nazareth, which was
a prophet, mighty in deed and word before God and all the
20 people ; and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered
21 him to be condemned to death, and have crucified him. But
we trusted that it had been he which should have redeemed
Israel ; and beside all this, to-day is the third day since
22 these things were done. Yea, and certain women also of
our company made us astonished, which were early at the
23 sepulchre ; and when they found not his body, they came,
saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which
24 said that he *was alive*. And certain of them which were
with us, went to the sepulchre, and found *it* even so as the
25 women had said ; but him they saw not. Then he said
unto them ; O fools, and slow of heart to believe all that the
26 prophets have spoken ! Ought not Christ to have suffered
27 these things, and to enter into his glory ? And beginning
at Moses, and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in
28 all the scriptures the things concerning himself. And they
drew nigh unto the village whither they went ; and he made
29 as though he would have gone further. But they con-
strained him, saying ; Abide with us, for it is toward even-
ing, and the day is far spent. And he went in to tarry with
30 them. And it came to pass, as he sat at meat with them,
he took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake and gave to them.
31 And their eyes were opened, and they know him ; and he
32 vanished out of their sight. And they said one to another ;
Did not our heart burn within us while he talked with
us by the way, and while he opened to us the scrip-
33 tures ? And they rose up the same hour, and re-
turned to Jerusalem ; and found the eleven gathered togeth-
34 er, and them that were with them, saying ; The Lord is
35 risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. And they told

what things *were done* in the way, and how he was known of them in breaking of bread.

- 36 And as they thus spake, he himself stood in the midst of
37 them, and saith unto them; Peace *be* unto you. But they
were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they had
38 seen a spirit. And he said unto them; Why are ye troub-
39 led? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts? Behold
my hands and my feet, that it is I myself; handle me, and
see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me
40 have. And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them *his*
41 hands and *his* feet. And while they yet believed not for
joy, and wondered, he said unto them; Have ye here any
42 meat? And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and
43 of a honey-comb. And he took *it*, and did eat before them.
44 And he said unto them; These *are* the words which I
spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things
must be fulfilled which were written in the law of Moses,
and *in* the prophets, and *in* the psalms, concerning me.
45 Then opened he their understanding, that they might un-
46 derstand the scriptures; and said unto them; Thus it is
written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from
47 the dead the third day, and that repentance and remission
of sins should be preached in his name among all nations,
48 beginning at Jerusalem. And ye are witnesses of these
49 things. And behold, I send the promise of my Father upon
you; but tarry ye in the city, until ye be endued with power
from on high.
50 And he led them out as far as to Bethany; and he lift
51 up his hands, and blessed them. And it came to pass,
while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and car-
52 ried up into heaven. And they worshipped him, and re-
53 turned to Jerusalem with great joy; and were continually
in the temple, praising and blessing God.

THE

G O S P E L

ACCORDING TO JOHN.

- IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with
 2 God, and the Word was God. The same was in the begin-
 3 ning with God. All things were made by him ; and without
 4 him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life,
 5 and the life was the light of men ; and the light shineth in dark-
 6 ness, and the darkness comprehended it not. There
 7 was a man sent from God, whose name *was* John ; the same
 came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all
 8 *men* through him might believe. He was not that Light,
 9 but *was sent* to bear witness of that Light. *That*
 was the true Light, which lighteth every man that cometh
 10 into the world. He was in the world, and the world was
 11 made by him, and the world knew him not. He came unto
 12 his own, and his own received him not. But as many as
 received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of
 13 God, *even* to them that believe on his name ; which were
 born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the
 14 will of man, but of God. And the Word was made flesh,
 and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as
 of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and
 15 truth. John bare witness of him, and cried say-
 ing ; This was he of whom I spake ; He that cometh after
 16 me, is preferred before me ; for he was before me. For of his
 17 fulness have all we received, and grace for grace. For the law
 was given by Moses ; *but* grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.
 18 No man hath seen God at any time ; the only begotten
 Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath de-
 clared *him*.
 19 And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests
 and Levites from Jerusalem, to ask him ; Who art thou ?
 20 And he confessed, and denied not ; but confessed ; I am not

21 the Christ. And they asked him ; What then ? Art thou
Elias ? And he saith ; I am not. Art thou that prophet ?
22 And he answered ; No. Then said they unto him ; Who art
thou ? that we may give an answer to them that sent us ;
23 what sayest thou of thyself ? He said ; I am " The voice of
one crying in the wilderness ; Make straight the way of the
24 Lord," as said the prophet Esaias. And they which were
25 sent were of the Pharisees ; and they asked him, and said
unto him ; Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that
26 Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet ? John answered them,
saying ; I baptize with water ; but there standeth one among
27 you, whom ye know not, *even* he who cometh after me, whose
28 shoe's latchet I am not worthy to unloose. These things
were done in Bethany beyond Jordan, where John was bap-
29 tizing. The next day he seeth Jesus coming unto
him, and saith ; Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh
30 away the sin of the world. This is he, of whom I said ;
After me cometh a man which is preferred before me ; for
31 he was before me. And I knew him not ; but that he should
be made manifest to Israel, therefore am I come baptizing
32 with water. And John bare record, saying ; I saw the
Spirit descending from heaven like a dove, and it abode upon
33 him. And I knew him not ; but he that sent me to baptize
with water, the same said unto me ; Upon whom thou shalt
see the Spirit descending and remaining on him, the same is
34 he which baptizeth with the Holy Ghost. And I saw, and
bare record, that this is the Son of God.
35 Again the next day after, John stood, and two of his dis-
36 ciples. And looking upon Jesus as he walked, he saith ; Be-
37 hold the Lamb of God. And the two disciples heard him
38 speak, and they followed Jesus. Then Jesus turned, and
saw them following, and saith unto them ; What seek ye ?
They said unto him ; Rabbi, (which is to say, being inter-
39 preted, master,) where dwellest thou ? He saith unto them ;
Come and see. They came and saw where he dwelt ; and
abode with him that day. It was about the tenth hour.
40 One of the two which heard John *speak*, and followed him,
41 was Andrew, Simon Peter's brother. He first findeth his
own brother Simon, and saith unto him ; We have found the
42 Messiah ; (which is, being interpreted, *the Christ*.) And he
brought him to Jesus. When Jesus beheld him, he said ;
Thou art Simon, the son of Jona ; thou shalt be called Ce-
43 phas ; which is by interpretation, a stone. The

day following he would go forth into Galilee; and findeth
44 Philip, and saith unto him; Follow me. Now Philip was
45 of Bethsaida, the city of Andrew and Peter. Philip findeth
Nathanael, and saith unto him; We have found him of
whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus
46 of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. And Nathanael said unto
him; Can there any good thing come out of Nazareth?
47 Philip saith unto him; Come and see. Jesus saw Nathanael
coming to him, and saith of him; Behold an Israelite indeed,
48 in whom is no guile. Nathanael saith unto him; Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto
him; Before that Philip called thee, when thou wast under
49 the fig-tree, I saw thee. Nathanael answered and saith unto
him; Rabbi, thou art the son of God, thou art the King of
50 Israel. Jesus answered and said unto him; Because I
said unto thee; I saw thee under the fig-tree, believest
51 thou? thou shalt see greater things than these. And he
saith unto him; *Verily, verily, I say unto you, hereafter ye*
shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and
descending upon the Son of man.

II. And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Gal-
2 ilce; and the mother of Jesus was there. And both Jesus
3 was called, and his disciples, to the marriage. And when
they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him;
4 They have no wine. Jesus saith unto her; Woman, what
5 have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come. His
mother saith unto the servants; Whatsoever he saith unto
6 you, do *it*. And there were set there six water-pots of stone,
after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing
7 two or three firkins apiece. Jesus saith unto them; Fill the
water-pots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.
8 And he saith unto them; Draw out now, and bear unto the
9 governor of the feast. And they bare *it*. When the ruler
of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine; (and
knew not whence it was; but the servants which drew the
water knew;) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom,
10 and saith unto him; Every man at the beginning doth set
forth good wine, and when men have well drunk, then that
which is worse; *but* thou hast kept the good wine until now
11 This beginning of miracles did Jesus in Cana of Galilee,
and manifested forth his glory; and his disciples believed on
12 him. After this he went down to Capernaum, he

and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples ; and they continued there not many days.

13 And the Jews' passover was at hand, and Jesus went up
14 to Jerusalem. And he found in the temple those that sold oxen, and sheep, and doves, and the changers of money, sitting. And when he had made a scourge of small cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the sheep, and the oxen ; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables ; and said unto them that sold doves ; Take these things hence ; make not my Father's house a house of merchandise. And his disciples remembered that it was written ; "The zeal of thy house eateth me up." Then answered the Jews, and said unto him ; What sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things ? Jesus answered and said unto them ; Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews ; Forty and six years was this temple in building ; and wilt thou rear it up in three days ? But he spake of the temple of his body. When therefore he was risen from the dead, his disciples remembered that he had said this ; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

23 Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast-day, many believed in his name, when they saw the
24 miracles which he did. But Jesus did not commit himself
25 unto them, because he knew all *men* ; and needed not that any should testify of man ; for he knew what was in
III. man.

There was a man of the Pharisees, named
2 Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews ; the same came to him by night, and said unto him ; Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God ; for no man can do these miracles
3 that thou doest, except God be with him. Jesus answered and said unto him ; Verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God.
4 Nicodemus saith unto him ; How can a man be born when he is old ? can he enter the second time into his mother's
5 womb, and be born ? Jesus answered ; Verily, verily, I say unto thee, except a man be born of water, and of the Spirit,
6 he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh, is flesh ; and that which is born of the
7 Spirit, is spirit. Marvel not, that I said unto thee ; Ye must
8 be born again. The wind bloweth where it listeth ; and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it

cometh, and whither it goeth ; so is every one that is born of
9 the Spirit. Nicodemus answered and said unto him ; How
10 can these things be ? Jesus answered and said unto him ; Art
thou a master of Israel, and knowest not these things ?
11 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, we speak that we do know,
and testify that we have seen ; and ye receive not our wit-
12 ness. If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not ;
13 how shall ye believe if I tell you of heavenly things ? And
no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down
from heaven, *even* the Son of man, which is in heaven.
14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, *even*
15 so must the Son of man be lifted up ; that whosoever be-
lieveth in him should not perish, but have eternal life.
16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten
Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but
17 have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the
world, to condemn the world, but that the world through him
18 might be saved. He that believeth on him, is not con-
demned ; but he that believeth not, is condemned already,
because he hath not believed in the name of the only begot-
19 ten Son of God. And this is the condemnation, that
light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather
20 than light ; because their deeds were evil. For every one
that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light,
21 lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that doeth truth
cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest,
that they are wrought in God.
22 After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the
land of Judca ; and there he tarried with them, and baptized.
23 And John also was baptizing in *Ænon*, near to Salim, be-
cause there was much water there ; and they came, and
24 were baptized. For John was not yet cast into prison.
25 Then there arose a question between *some* of John's disci-
26 ples and a Jew, about purifying. And they came unto
John, and said unto him ; Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond
Jordan, to whom thou barest witness, behold, the same bap-
27 tizeth, and all *men* come to him. John answered and said ;
A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from
28 heaven. Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said ; I am
29 not the Christ, but that I am sent before him. He that hath
the bride, is the bridegroom ; but the friend of the bride-
groom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly,
because of the bridegroom's voice. This my joy therefore

30 is fulfilled. He must increase, but I *must* decrease.
31 He that cometh from above is above all. He that is of the
32 earth is earthly, and speaketh of the earth; he that cometh
33 from heaven is above all, and what he hath seen and heard,
34 that he testifieth; and no man receiveth his testimony.
35 He that hath received his testimony, hath set to his seal that
36 God is true. For he whom God hath sent, speaketh the
words of God; for God giveth not the Spirit by measure
unto him. The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all
things into his hand. He that believeth on the Son hath
everlasting life; and he that believeth not the Son, shall not
see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

IV. When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had
heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than
2 John; (though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disci-
3 ples;) he left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.
45 And he must needs go through Samaria. Then cometh he
to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the
parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph.
6 Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore being wearied
with his journey, sat thus on the well; and it was about the
7 sixth hour. There cometh a woman of Samaria
to draw water. Jesus saith unto her; Give me to drink.
8 (For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy
9 meat.) Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him; How
is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a
woman of Samaria? (For the Jews have no dealings with
10 the Samaritans.) Jesus answered and said unto her; If
thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee;
Give me to drink; thou wouldst have asked of him, and he
11 would have given thee living water. The woman saith unto
him; Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is
12 deep; from whence then hast thou that living water? Art
thou greater than our father Jacob? which gave us the well,
and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle.
13 Jesus answered and said unto her; Whosoever drinketh of
14 this water, shall thirst again; but whosoever drinketh of the
water that I shall give him, shall never thirst; but the water
that I shall give him, shall be in him a well of water spring-
15 ing up into everlasting life. The woman saith unto him;
Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come
16 hither to draw. Jesus saith unto her; Go, call thy hus-
17 band, and come hither. The woman answered and said;

I have no husband. Jesus said unto her; Thou hast well
18 said; I have no husband. For thou hast had five husbands;
and he whom thou now hast, is not thy husband; in that
19 saidst thou truly. The woman saith unto him; Sir, I per-
20 ceive, that thou art a prophet. Our fathers worshipped in
this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place,
21 where men ought to worship. Jesus saith unto her; Woman,
believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this
22 mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. Ye
worship ye know not what; we know what we worship; for
23 salvation is of the Jews. But the hour cometh, and now is,
when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in
spirit and in truth; for the Father seeketh such to worship
24 him. God is a Spirit; and they that worship him, must wor-
25 ship *him* in spirit and in truth. The woman saith unto him;
I know that Messias cometh; (which is called Christ;)
26 when he is come, he will tell us all things. Jesus saith unto
27 her; I that speak unto thee am *he*. And upon this came
his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman.
Yet no man said; What seekest thou? for, why talkest thou
28 with her? The woman then left her water-pot,
and went *her way into the city*, and saith to the men;
29 Come, see a man which told me all things that ever I did;
30 is not this the Christ? They went out of the city, and
31 came unto him. In the mean while his disciples
32 prayed him, saying; Master, eat. But he said unto them;
33 I have meat to eat that ye know not of. Therefore said the
disciples one to another; Hath any man brought him *ought*
34 to eat? Jesus saith unto them; My meat is, to do the will
35 of him that sent me, and to finish his work. Say not ye,
there are yet four months, and *then* cometh harvest? Be-
hold, I say unto you, lift up your eyes, and look on the
36 fields, for they are white already to harvest. He that reap-
eth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal;
that both he that soweth, and he that reapeth, may rejoice
37 together. And herein is that saying true, "one soweth,
38 and another reapeth." I sent you to reap that whereon ye
bestowed no labour; other men laboured, and ye are en-
39 tered into their labours. And many of the Samar-
itans of that city believed on him for the saying of the
woman, which testified; He told me all that ever I did.
40 So when the Samaritans were come unto him, they besought
him that he would tarry with them; and he abode there

41 two days. And many more believed, because of his own word.
42 And they said unto the woman ; Now we believe, not because of thy saying ; for we have heard *him* ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Christ, the Saviour of the world.
43 Now, after two days he departed thence, and went into
44 Galilee. For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no
45 honour in his own country. Then when he was come into Galilee, the Galileans received him, having seen all the things that he did at Jerusalem at the feast ; for they also went unto
46 the feast. So he came again into Cana of Galilee, where he made the water wine. And there was a certain nobleman, whose son was sick, at Capernaum.
47 When he heard that Jesus was come out of Judea into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought him that he would come down, and heal his son ; for he was at the point of death.
48 Then said Jesus unto him ; Except ye see signs and
49 wonders, ye will not believe. The nobleman saith unto him ; Sir, come down ere my child die. Jesus saith unto him ; Go thy way ; thy son liveth. And the man believed the word that Jesus had spoken unto him, and he went
51 his way. And as he was now going down, his servants met
52 him, and told *him*, saying ; Thy son liveth. Then inquired he of them the hour when he began to amend. And they said unto him ; Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left
53 him. So the father knew that *it was* at the same hour, in the which Jesus said unto him ; Thy son liveth. And himself
54 believed, and his whole house. *This is again the second miracle that Jesus did, when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.*

V. After this there was a feast of the Jews, and Jesus
2 went up to Jerusalem. Now there is at Jerusalem, by the sheep *market*, a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue
3 Bethesda, having five porches. In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for
4 the moving of the water. For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water ; whosoever then first after the troubling of the water, stepped in,
5 was made whole, of whatsoever disease he had. And a certain man was there, which had an infirmity thirty and
6 eight years. When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him ;
7 Wilt thou be made whole ? The impotent man answered him ; Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put

me into the pool ; but while I am coming, another steppeth
8 down before me. Jesus saith unto him ; Rise, take up thy
9 bed, and walk. And immediately the man was made whole,
and took up his bed, and walked. And on the same day
10 was the sabbath. The Jews therefore said unto him
that was cured ; It is the sabbath-day ; it is not lawful for
11 thee to carry *thy* bed. He answered them ; He that made
me whole, the same said unto me ; Take up thy bed, and
12 walk. Then asked they him ; What man is that which said
13 unto thee ; Take up thy bed, and walk ? And he that was
healed wist not who it was ; for Jesus had conveyed himself
14 away, a multitude being in *that* place. Afterward Jesus
findeth him in the temple, and said unto him ; Behold, thou
art made whole ; sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto
15 thee. The man departed, and told the Jews that it was
16 Jesus which had made him whole. And therefore
did the Jews persecute Jesus, because he had done these
17 things on the sabbath-day. But Jesus answered them ; My
18 Father worketh hitherto, and I work. Therefore the Jews
sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken
the sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making
19 himself equal with God. Then answered Jesus, and said unto
them ; Verily, verily, I say unto you, the Son can do nothing
of himself, but what he seeth the Father do ; for what
things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise ;
20 for the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things
that himself doeth ; and he will shew him greater works
21 than these, that ye may marvel. For as the Father raiseth
up the dead, and quickeneth *them* ; even so the Son quick-
22 eneth whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man ; but
23 hath committed all judgment unto the Son ; that all *men*
should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He
that honoureth not the Son, honoureth not the Father which
24 hath sent him. Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that hear-
eth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath ever-
lasting life, and shall not come into condemnation, but is
25 passed from death unto life. Verily, verily, I say unto you,
the hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the
voice of the Son of God ; and they that hear shall live.
26 For as the Father hath life in himself ; so hath he given to
27 the Son to have life in himself. And he hath given him au-
thority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of
28 man. Marvel not at this ; for the hour is coming, in the

29 which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and shall come forth, they that have done good unto the resurrection of life ; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. I can of mine own self do nothing. As I hear, I judge ; and my judgment is just ; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of him which hath sent me. If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. 32 There is another that beareth witness of me ; and I know 33 that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true. Ye 34 sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. But I receive not testimony from man ; but these things I say, that 35 ye might be saved. He was a burning and a shining light ; and ye were willing for a season to rejoice in his light. 36 But I have greater witness than *that* of John ; for the works which the Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me. 37 And the Father himself which hath sent me, hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor 38 seen his shape. And ye have not his word abiding in you ; 39 for whom he hath sent, him ye believe not. Search the scriptures, for in them ye think ye have eternal life ; and 40 they are they which testify of me ; and ye will not come to 41 me, that ye might have life. I receive not honour from 42 men ; but I know you, that ye have not the love of God in 43 you. I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not ; if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. How can ye believe, which receive honour one 44 of another, ~~and seek not the honour that cometh from God~~ only ? Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father ; there is *one* that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. 46 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me ; 47 for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words ?

VI. After these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, 2 which is *the sea* of Tiberias. And a great multitude followed him, because they saw the miracles, which he did on 3 them that were diseased. And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples. And the passover, a 5 feast of the Jews, was nigh. When Jesus then lift up his eyes, and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip ; Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat ? 6 (And this he said to prove him ; for he himself knew, what 7 he would do.) Philip answered him ; Two hundred pen-

- nyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one
8 of them may take a little. One of his disciples, Andrew,
9 Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him ; There is a lad here,
which hath five barley-loaves, and two small fishes ; but what
10 are they among so many ? And Jesus said ; Make the men
sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So
11 the men sat down, in number about five thousand. And
Jesus took the loaves, and when he had given thanks,
he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them
that were set down ; and likewise of the fishes, as
12 much as they would. When they were filled, he said
unto his disciples ; Gather up the fragments that re-
13 main, that nothing be lost. Therefore they gathered *them*
together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the
five barley-loaves, which remained over and above unto
14 them that had eaten. Then those men, when they
had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said ; This is of a truth
15 that prophet that should come into the world. When Jesus
therefore perceived that they would come, and take him by
force, to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain
himself alone.
- 16 And when even was now come, his disciples went down
17 unto the sea. And they entered into a ship, and went over
the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Je-
18 sus was not come to them. And the sea arose by reason of
19 a great wind that blew. So when they had rowed about five
and twenty or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the
sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship ; and they were afraid.
20 21 But he saith unto them ; It is I ; be not afraid. Then
they willingly received him into the ship ; and immediately
the ship was at the land, whither they went.
- 22 The day following, when the people which stood on the
other side of the sea saw that there was none other boat
there, save one, and that Jesus went not with his disciples
into the ship, but *that* his disciples were gone away alone ;
23 (howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias nigh unto
the place, where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had
24 given thanks ;) when the people therefore saw that Jesus
was not there, neither his disciples, they took shipping, and
25 came to Capernaum, seeking for Jesus. And when
they had found him on the other side of the sea, they said
26 unto him ; Rabbi, when camest thou hither ? Jesus answer-
ed them and said ; Verily, verily, I say unto you ; Ye seek

me, not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat
27 of the loaves, and were filled. Labour not for the meat
which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto
everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you ;
28 for him hath God the Father sealed. Then said they unto
him ; What shall we do, that we might work the works of
29 God ? Jesus answered and said unto them ; This is the
work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.
30 They said therefore unto him ; What sign shewest thou
then, that we may see, and believe thee ? what dost thou
31 work ? Our fathers did eat manna in the desert, as it is writ-
32 ten ; "He gave them bread from heaven to eat." Then
Jesus said unto them ; Verily, verily, I say unto you, Moses
gave you not that bread from heaven ; but my Father giveth
33 you the true bread from heaven. For the bread of God is
he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the
34 world. Then said they unto him ; Lord, evermore give us
35 this bread. And Jesus said unto them ; I am the bread of
life ; he that cometh to me, shall never hunger ; and he that
36 believeth on me, shall never thirst. But I said unto you,
37 that ye also have seen me, and believe not. All that the Father
giveth me, shall come to me ; and him that cometh to me, I
38 will in no wise cast out ; for I came down from heaven, not
39 to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. And
this is the will of him which hath sent me, that of all which
he hath given me, I should lose nothing, but should raise it
40 up again at the last day. For this is the will of him that sent
me, that every one which ~~saith~~ ~~the~~ Son, and believeth on
him, may have everlasting life ; and I will raise him up at
41 the last day. The Jews then murmured at him, be-
cause he said ; I am the bread which came down from
42 heaven ; and they said ; Is not this Jesus the son of Joseph,
whose father and mother we know ? How is it then that he
43 saith ; I came down from heaven ? Jesus answered and
44 said unto them ; Murmur not among yourselves. No man
can come to me, except the Father, which hath sent me,
45 draw him, and I will raise him up at the last day. It is writ-
ten in the prophets ; "And they shall be all taught of God."
Every man that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father,
46 cometh unto me. Not that any man hath seen the Father,
47 save he which is of God ; he hath seen the Father. Verily,
48 49 verily, I say unto you, he that believeth on me hath ever-
lasting life. I am that bread of life. Your Fathers did

50 eat manna in the wilderness, and are dead; this is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat
 51 thereof, and not die. I am the living bread which came down from heaven; if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever. And the bread that I will give is my flesh,
 52 which I will give for the life of the world. The

Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying; How can
 53 this man give us *his* flesh to eat? Then Jesus said unto them; Verily, verily, I say unto you, except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in
 54 you. Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath
 55 eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. For
 56 my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. He that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me,
 57 and I in him. As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father; so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me.
 58 This is that bread which came down from heaven; not as your fathers did eat, and are dead; he that eateth of this
 59 bread shall live for ever. These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they had heard *this*,
 61 said; *This is a hard saying; who can hear it?* When Jesus knew in himself that his disciples murmured at it, he said
 62 unto them; Doth this offend you? *What* and if ye shall
 63 see the Son of man ascend up where he was before? It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing. The words that I speak unto you, *they* are spirit, and *they* are life.
 64 But there are some of you that believe not; for Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who
 65 should betray him. And he said; Therefore said I unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it were given
 66 unto him of my Father. From that *time* many of

his disciples went back; and walked no more with him.
 67 Then said Jesus unto the twelve; Will ye also go away?
 68 Simon Peter answered him; Lord, to whom shall we
 69 go? thou hast the words of eternal life; and we believe,
 70 and are sure, that thou art that Holy One of God. Jesus answered them; Have not I chosen you twelve? and one of
 71 you is a devil. He spake of Judas Iscariot *the son* of Simon; for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

VII. After these things Jesus walked in Galilee; for he would not walk in Jewry, because the Jews sought to kill

2 him. Now the Jews' feast of tabernacles was at
3 hand. His brethren therefore said unto him ; Depart hence,
and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may see the works
4 that thou doest. For *there is* no man *that* doeth any thing
in secret, and he himself seeketh to be known openly. If
5 thou do these things, shew thyself to the world. For neither
6 did his brethren believe in him. Then Jesus said unto
them ; My time is not yet come ; but your time is alway
7 ready. The world cannot hate you ; but me it hateth, be-
8 cause I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil. Go ye up
unto this feast ; I go not up *now* unto this feast, for my time
9 is not yet full come. When he had said these words unto
10 them, he abode *still* in Galilee. But when his brethren were
gone up, then went he also up unto the feast, not openly, but
11 as it were in secret. Then the Jews sought him at
12 the feast, and said ; Where is he ? And there was much
murmuring among the people concerning him. For some
said ; He is a good man ; others said ; Nay ; but he deceiveth
13 the people. Howbeit, no man spake openly of him, for fear
of the Jews.

14 Now, about the midst of the feast, Jesus went up into the
15 temple and taught. And the Jews marvelled, saying ; How
16 knoweth this man letters, having never learned ? Jesus an-
swered them, and said ; My doctrine is not mine, but his
17 that sent me. If any man will do his will, he shall know of
the doctrine, whether it be of God, or *whether* I speak of
18 myself. He that speaketh of himself, *seeketh his* own
glory ; but he that ~~seeketh his~~ glory that sent him, the same
19 is true, and no unrighteousness is in him. Did not Moses
give you the law ? and *yet* none of you keepeth the law ;
20 why go ye about to kill me ? The people answered and
said ; Thou hast a devil ; who goeth about to kill thee ?
21 Jesus answered and said unto them ; I have done one work,
22 and ye all marvel because of it. Moses gave unto you cir-
cumcision ; (not because it is of Moses, but of the fathers ;)
23 and ye on the sabbath-day circumsise a man. If a man
on the sabbath-day receive circumcision, that the law
of Moses should not be broken, are ye angry at me, because
I have made a man every whit whole on the sabbath-day ?
24 Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous
25 judgment. Then said some of them of Jerusalem ;
26 Is not this he whom they seek to kill ? but lo, he speaketh
boldly, and they say nothing unto him ; do the rulers know

27 indeed that this is the Christ? Howbeit, we know this man,
whence he is; but when Christ cometh, no man knoweth
28 whence he is. Then cried Jesus in the temple, as
he taught, saying; Ye both know me, and ye know whence
I am; and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is
29 true, whom ye know not. I know him, for I am from him,
30 and he hath sent me. Then they sought to take him; but
no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet
31 come. And many of the people believed on him, and said;
When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these
32 which this *man* hath done? The Pharisees heard that the
people murmured such things concerning him; and the
Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to take
33 him. Then said Jesus; Yet a little while I am with
34 you, and *then* I go unto him that sent me. Ye shall seek
me, and shall not find *me*; and where I am, *thither* ye can-
35 not come. Then said the Jews among themselves;
Whither will he go, that we shall not find him? will he go
unto the dispersed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gen-
36 tiles? What *manner of* saying is this that he said; Ye shall
seek me, and shall not find *me*; and where I am, *thither* ye
cannot come?

37 In the last day, that great *day* of the feast, Jesus stood
and cried, saying; If any man thirst, let him come unto me,
38 and drink. He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath
39 said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. But
this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him
should receive; for the Holy Ghost was not yet *given*, be-
40 cause that Jesus was not yet glorified. Many of the
people therefore, when they heard this saying, said; Of a
41 truth this is the Prophet. Others said; This is the Christ.
42 But some said; Shall Christ come out of Galilee? Hath
not the scripture said, that Christ cometh of the seed of Da-
vid, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?
43 So there was a division among the people because of
44 him. And some of them would have taken him;
45 but no man laid hands on him. Then came the officers to
the chief priests and Pharisees. And they said unto them;
46 Why have ye not brought him? The officers answered;
47 Never man spake like this man. Then answered them the
48 Pharisees; Are ye also deceived? have any of the rulers,
49 or of the Pharisees believed on him? but this people, who
50 knoweth not the law, *believeth*; they are cursed. Nicode-

mus saith unto them, he that came to Jesus by night, being
51 one of them ; Doth our law judge *any* man before it hear
52 him, and know what he doeth ? They answered and said
unto him ; Art thou also of Galilee ? search and look, for
out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.

53 VIII. And every man went unto his own house. Jesus went
2 unto the mount of Olives ; and early in the morning he came
again into the temple, and all the people came unto him ;
3 and he sat down and taught them. And the scribes and
Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery, and
4 when they had set her in the midst, they say unto him ;
Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.
5 Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be
6 stoned ; but what sayest thou ? This they said, tempting
him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stoop-
ed down, and with *his* finger wrote on the ground, *as though*
7 *he heard them not*. So when they continued asking him, he
lifted up himself, and said unto them ; He that is without sin
8 among you, let him first cast a stone at her. And again he
9 stooped down, and wrote on the ground. And they which
heard it, being convicted by *their own* conscience, went out
one by one, beginning at the eldest, *even* unto the last ; and
Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.
10 When Jesus had lift up himself, and saw none but the
woman, he said unto her ; Woman, where are those thing
11 accusers ? hath no man condemned thee ? She said ; No
man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her ; Neither do I con-
demn thee ; go, and ~~sin no more~~.

12 Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying ; I am the light
of the world ; he that followeth me shall not walk in dark-
13 ness, but shall have the light of life. The Pharisees there-
fore said unto him ; Thou bearest record of thyself ; thy
14 record is not true. Jesus answered and said unto them ;
Though I bear record of myself, *yet* my record is true ; for
I know whence I came, and whither I go ; but ye cannot tell
15 whence I come, or whither I go. Ye judge after the flesh,
16 I judge no man. And yet if I judge, my judgment is true ;
17 for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me. It is
also written in your law ; "The testimony of two men
18 is true." I am one that bear witness of myself, and the
19 Father that sent me beareth witness of me. Then said they
unto him ; Where is thy Father ? Jesus answered ; Ye nei-
ther know me, nor my Father. If ye had known me, ye

20 should have known my Father also. These words spake he in the treasury, as he taught in the temple ; and no man laid hands on him, for his hour was not yet come.

21 Then said Jesus again unto them ; I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins ; whither I go, ye cannot come. Then said the Jews ; Will he kill himself, 22 because he saith ; Whither I go, ye cannot come ? And he said unto them ; Ye are from beneath, I am from above ; ye 23 are of this world, I am not of this world. I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins ; for if ye believe not 24 that I am *he*, ye shall die in your sins. Then said they unto him ; Who art thou ? And Jesus saith unto them ; Even 25 *the same* that I said unto you from the beginning. I have many things to say, and to judge of you ; but he that sent me, is true ; and I speak to the world those things which I 26 have heard of him. They understood not, that he spake to them of the Father. Then said Jesus unto them ; When ye 27 have lift up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am *he* ; and I do nothing of myself, but as my Father hath taught me, I speak ~~these things~~ ; and he that sent me is with 28 me ; the Father hath not ~~left me alone~~, for I do always those things that please him.

30 As he spake these words, many believed on him. 31 Then said Jesus to those Jews which belicved on him ; If ye 32 continue in my word, *then* are ye my disciples indeed, and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. 33 They answered him ; We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man ; how sayest thou ; Ye shall 34 be made free ? Jesus answered them ; Verily, verily, I say unto you, whosoever committeth sin, is the servant of sin. 35 And the servant abideth not in the house for ever ; *but* the 36 Son abideth ever. If the Son therefore shall make you free, 37 ye shall be free indeed. I know that ye are Abraham's seed ; but ye seek to kill me, because my word hath no 38 place in you. I speak that which I have seen with my Father ; and ye do that which ye have seen with your father. 39 They answered and said unto him ; Abraham is our father. Jesus saith unto them ; If ye were Abraham's children, ye 40 would do the works of Abraham. But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I have heard 41 of God ; this did not Abraham. Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him ; We be not born of fornication ; we have one Father, *even* God. Jesus said unto 42

them ; If God were your Father, ye would love me ; for I proceeded forth and came from God ; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not understand my speech ? *Even* because ye cannot hear my word. Ye are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth ; because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own ; for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell *you* the truth, ye believe me not. Which of you convinceth me of sin ? if I say the truth, why do ye not believe me ? He that is of God, heareth God's words ; ye therefore hear *them* not, because ye are not of God. The Jews answered, and said unto him ; Say we not well, that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a devil ? Jesus answered ; I have not a devil, but I honour my Father, and ye do dishonour me. And I seek not mine own glory ; there is one that seeketh and judgeth. Verily, verily, I say unto you, if a man keep my saying, he shall never see death. Then said the Jews unto him ; Now we know that thou hast a devil ; Abraham is dead, and the prophets, and thou sayest ; If a man keep my saying, he shall never taste of death. Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead ? and the prophets are dead ; whom makest thou thyself ? Jesus answered ; If I honour myself, my honour is nothing. It is my Father that honoureth me, of whom ye say, that he is your God, yet ye have not known him ; but I know him. And if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you. But I know him, and keep his saying. Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day ; and he saw it, and was glad. Then said the Jews unto him ; Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham ? Jesus said unto them ; Verily, verily, I say unto you, before Abraham was, I am. Then took they up stones to cast at him ; but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple.

IX. And as *Jesus* passed by, he saw a man which was blind from *his* birth. And his disciples asked him, saying ; Master, who did sin ? this man, or his parents, that he was born blind ? Jesus answered ; Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents ; but that the works of God should be made manifest in him. I must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day ; the night cometh, when no man can work. As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the

6 world. When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground,
and made clay of the spittle, and he anointed the eyes of the
7 blind man with the clay, and said unto him ; Go, wash in the
pool of Siloam ; (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He
went his way therefore, and washed, and came see-
8 ing. The neighbours therefore, and they which be-
fore had seen him that he was a beggar, said ; Is not this he
9 that sat and begged ? Some said ; This is he. Others
10 said ; He is like him. But he said ; I am *he*. Therefore
11 said they unto him ; How were thine eyes opened ? He
answered and said ; A man that is called Jesus, made clay,
and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me ; Go to Siloam,
and wash. And I went and washed, and I received sight.
12 Then said they unto him ; Where is he ? He said ; I know
not.
13 They brought to the Pharisees him that aforetime was
14 blind. And it was the sabbath-day when Jesus made the
15 clay, and opened his eyes. Then again the Pharisees also
asked him, how he had received his sight. He said unto
them ; He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and do
16 see. Therefore said some of the Pharisees ; This man is
not of God, because he keepeth not the sabbath-day.
Others said ; How can a man that is a sinner do such mira-
17 cles ? And there was a division among them. They say unto
the blind man again ; What sayest thou of him, that he hath
18 opened thine eyes ? He said ; He is a prophet. But the
Jews did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind,
and received his sight, until they called the parents of him
19 that had received his sight. And they asked them, saying ;
Is this your son, who ye say was born blind ? how then doth
20 he now see ? His parents answered them and said ; We
21 know that this is our son, and that he was born blind ; but
by what means he now seeth, we know not ; or who hath
opened his eyes, we know not ; he is of age, ask him ; he
22 shall speak for himself. These words spake his parents, be-
cause they feared the Jews. For the Jews had agreed al-
ready, that if any man did confess that he was Christ, he
23 should be put out of the synagogue. Therefore said his
24 parents ; He is of age, ask him. Then again called
they the man that was blind, and said unto him ; Give God
25 the praise ; we know that this man is a sinner. He an-
swered and said ; Whether he be a sinner or no, I know
not ; one thing I know, that, whereas I was blind, now I see.

26 Then said they to him again; What did he to thee? how
 27 opened he thine eyes? He answered them; I have told
 28 you already, and ye did not hear; wherefore would ye
 29 hear it again? will ye also be his disciples? They reviled
 29 him, and said; Thou art his disciple; but we are Moses'
 30 disciples. We know that God spake unto Moses; *as for*
 30 *this fellow*, we know not from whence he is. The man an-
 31 swered and said unto them; Why, herein is a marvellous
 31 thing, that ye know not from whence he is, and yet he hath
 32 opened mine eyes. Now we know that God heareth not
 32 sinners; but if any man be a worshipper of God, and doeth
 33 his will, him he heareth. Since the world began was it not
 33 heard, that any man opened the eyes of one that was born
 34 blind; if this man were not of God, he could do nothing.
 34 They answered and said unto him; Thou wast altogether
 born in sins; and dost thou teach us? And they cast him
 out.

35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and when he
 had found him, he said unto him; Dost thou believe on the
 36 Son of God? He answered and said; Who is he, Lord,
 37 that I might believe on him? And Jesus said unto him;
 Thou hast both seen him, and it is he that talketh with thee.
 38 And he said; Lord, I believe; and he worshipped him.
 39 And Jesus said; For judgment I am come into this world,
 that they which see not might see, and that they which see,
 40 might be made blind.

And some of the Pharisees
 which were with him heard these words, and said unto him;
 41 Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them; If ye were
 blind, ye should have no sin; but now ye say; We see;
 X. therefore your sin remaineth. Verily, verily, I say unto you,
 he that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold, but
 climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a rob-
 2 ber; but he that entereth in by the door, is the shepherd of
 3 the sheep. To him the porter openeth; and the sheep
 hear his voice; and he calleth his own sheep by name, and
 4 leadeth them out. And when he putteth forth his own sheep,
 he goeth before them; and the sheep follow him, for they
 5 know his voice. And a stranger will they not follow, but
 will flee from him; for they know not the voice of stran-
 6 gers. This parable spake Jesus unto them; but
 they understood not what things they were which he spake
 7 unto them. Then said Jesus unto them again; Verily, veri-
 8 ly, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. All that

ever came before me are thieves and robbers ; but the sheep
9 did not hear them. I am the door ; by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find
10 pasture. The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy ; I am come that they might have life, and
11 that they might have it more abundantly. I am the good shepherd ; the good shepherd giveth his life for the sheep.
12 But he that is a hireling, and not the shepherd, whose own the sheep are not, seeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and fleeth ; and the wolf catcheth them, and scattereth
13 the sheep. The hireling fleeth, because he is a hireling, and careth not for the sheep. I am the good shepherd ; and know
14 my sheep, and am known of mine, as the Father knoweth me, and I know the Father ; and I lay down my life for the
15 sheep. And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold ; them also I must bring ; and they shall hear my voice, and
16 there shall be one fold, and one shepherd. Therefore doth my Father love me, because I lay down my life, that I might
17 take it again ; no man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself ; I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again ; this commandment have I received of my
18 Father. There was a division therefore again among
19 the Jews for these sayings. And many of them said ; He hath a devil, and is mad ; why hear ye him ? Others said ;
20 These are not the words of him that hath a devil ; can a devil open the eyes of the blind ?
21 And it was at Jerusalem the feast of the dedication, and
22 it was winter ; and Jesus walked in the temple, in Solomon's porch. Then came the Jews round about him, and said
23 unto him ; How long dost thou make us to doubt ? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly. Jesus answered them ;
24 I told you, and ye believed not. The works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me. But ye believe not ; because ye are not of my sheep. As I said unto
25 you, my sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me ; and I give unto them eternal life, and they shall
26 never perish, neither shall any pluck them out of my hand. My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all ; and
27 none is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand ; I and
28 my Father are one. Then the Jews took up stones again to stone him. Jesus answered them ; Many good
29 works have I shewed you from my Father ; for which of
30 those works do ye stone me ? The Jews answered him,

saying ; For a good work we stone thee not ; but for blasphemy, and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself
 34 God. Jesus answered them ; Is it not written in your law ;
 35 " I said, ye are gods ? " If he called them gods, unto whom
 36 the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken ;
 say ye of him whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into
 the world ; Thou blasphemest, because I said, I am the Son of
 37 God ? If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.
 38 But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works ;
 that ye may know and believe that the Father is in me, and
 39 I in him. Therefore they sought again to take him ;
 but he escaped out of their hand.
 40 And he went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where
 41 John at first baptized ; and there he abode. And many resorted
 unto him, and said ; John did no miracle ; but all things that
 42 John spake of this man were true. And many believed on
 him there.

XI. Now a certain *man* was sick, *named* Lazarus, of Bethany,
 2 the town of Mary and her sister Martha. (It was *that* Mary
 which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet
 3 with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick.) Therefore his
 sisters sent unto him, saying ; Lord, behold, he whom thou lov-
 4 est is sick. When Jesus heard *that*, he said ; This sickness is
 not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of
 5 God might be glorified thereby. Now Jesus loved Martha,
 6 and her sister, and Lazarus. When he had heard therefore
 that he was sick, he abode *two days still* in the same place
 7 where he was. Then after that saith he to his disciples ;
 8 Let us go into Judea again. His disciples say unto him ;
 Master, the Jews of late sought to stone thee, and goest thou
 9 thither again ? Jesus answered ; Are there not twelve hours
 in the day ? if any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not,
 10 because he seeth the light of this world ; but if a man walk
 in the night, he stumbleth, because there is no light in him.
 11 These things said he ; and after that he saith unto them ;
 Our friend Lazarus sleepeth ; but I go that I may awake
 12 him out of sleep. Then said his disciples ; Lord, if he
 13 sleep, he shall do well. Howbeit Jesus spake of his death ;
 but they thought that he had spoken of taking of rest in sleep.
 14 Then said Jesus unto them plainly ; Lazarus is dead ;
 15 and I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the in-
 16 tent ye may believe ; nevertheless, let us go unto him. Then
 said Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellow-dis-
 ciples ; Let us also go, that we may die with him.

17 Then when Jesus came, he found that he had *lain* in the
 18 grave four days already. Now Bethany was nigh unto Je-
 19 rusalem, about fifteen furlongs off; and many of the Jews
 came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their
 20 brother. Then Martha, as soon as she heard that Jesus was
 coming, went and met him; but Mary sat *still* in the house.
 21 Then said Martha unto Jesus; Lord, if thou hadst been here,
 22 my brother had not died; but I know that even now, what-
 23 soever thou wilt ask of God, God will give it thee. Jesus
 24 saith unto her; Thy brother shall rise again. Martha saith
 unto him; I know that he shall rise again, in the resurrec-
 25 tion at the last day. Jesus said unto her; I am the resur-
 rection, and the life; he that believeth in me, though he
 26 were dead, yet shall he live; and whosoever liveth, and be-
 lieveth in me, shall never die. Believest thou this?
 27 She saith unto him; Yea, Lord; I believe that thou
 art the Christ, the Son of God, which should come
 28 into the world. And when she had so said, she went her
 way, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying; The Mas-
 29 ter is come, and calleth for thee. As soon as she heard that,
 30 she arose quickly, and came unto him. (Now Jesus was
 not yet come into the town; but was in that place where
 31 Martha met him.) The Jews then which were with her in
 the house, and comforted her, when they saw Mary that she
 rose up hastily, and went out, followed her, saying; She
 32 goeth unto the grave to weep there. Then when Mary was
 come where Jesus was, and saw him, she fell down at his
 feet, saying unto him; Lord, if thou hadst been here, my
 33 brother had not died. When Jesus therefore saw her weep-
 ing, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he
 34 groaned in the spirit, and was troubled, and said; Where
 have ye laid him? They say unto him; Lord, come and
 35 see. Jesus wept. Then said the Jews; Behold, how he
 37 loved him! And some of them said; Could not this man,
 which opened the eyes of the blind, have caused that even
 38 this man should not have died? Jesus therefore again groan-
 ing in himself, cometh to the grave. It was a cave, and a
 39 stone lay upon it. Jesus said; Take ye away the stone.
 Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him;
 Lord, by this time he stinketh; for he hath been *dead* four
 40 days. Jesus saith unto her; Said I not unto thee, that if
 thou wouldest believe, thou shouldest see the glory of God?
 41 Then they took away the stone. And Jesus lift up his

eyes, and said; Father, I thank thee that thou hast heard
42 me. And I knew that thou hearest me always; but because
of the people which stand by, I said *it*, that they may believe
43 that thou hast sent me. And when he thus had spoken, he
44 cried with a loud voice; Lazarus, come forth. He that
was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-
clothes; and his face was bound about with a napkin. Je-
45 sus saith unto them; Loose him, and let him go. Then
many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had seen the
46 things which he did, believed on him. But some of them
went their ways to the Pharisees, and told them what things
Jesus had done.

47 Then gathered the chief priests and the Pharisees a
council, and said; What do we? for this man doeth many
48 miracles. If we let him thus alone, all *men* will believe on
him; and the Romans shall come, and take away both our
49 place and nation. And one of them, *named* Caiaphas, being
the high priest that same year, said unto them; Ye know
50 nothing at all, nor consider that it is expedient for us, that
one man should die for the people, and that the whole na-
51 tion perish not. And this spake he not of himself; but
being high priest that year, he prophesied that Jesus should
52 die for that nation; and not for that nation only, but that also
he should gather together in one the children of God that
53 were scattered abroad. Then from that day forth they took
54 counsel together for to put him to death.

Jesus therefore walked ~~no more openly~~ among the Jews, but went
thence unto a country near to the wilderness, into a city
called Ephraim; and there continued with his disciples.
55 And the Jews' passover was nigh at hand; and many went
out of the country up to Jerusalem before the passover, to
56 purify themselves. Then sought they for Jesus, and spake
among themselves, as they stood in the temple; What think
57 ye? that he will not come to the feast? Now both the chief
priests and the Pharisees had given a commandment, that, if
any man knew where he were, he should shew *it*, that they
might take him.

XII. Then Jesus, six days before the passover, came to
Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom
2 he raised from the dead. There they made him a supper,
and Martha served; but Lazarus was one of them that sat
3 at the table with him. Then took Mary a pound of ointment
of spikenard, very costly, and anointed the feet of Jesus,

and wiped his feet with her hair ; and the house was filled
4 with the odour of the ointment. Then saith one of his disciples, Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, which should betray him ;
5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence,
6 and given to the poor ? This he said, not that he cared for the poor, but because he was a thief, and had the bag, and
7 bare what was put therein. Then said Jesus ; Let her alone ; against the day of my burying hath she kept this.
8 For the poor always ye have with you, but me ye have not always.

9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there ; and they came, not for Jesus' sake only, but that they might
10 see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. But the chief priests consulted that they might put Lazarus also
11 to death ; because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

12 On the next day, much people that were come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem ;
13 took branches of palm-trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried ; Hosanna : blessed is the King of Israel, that
14 cometh in the name of the Lord. And Jesus, when he had
15 found a young ass, sat thereon, as it is written ; Fear not, daughter of Sion ; behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an
16 ass's colt." These things understood not his disciples at the first ; but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done
17 these things unto him.

The people therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of his grave, and
18 raised him from the dead, bare record. For this cause the people also met him, for that they heard that he had done
19 this miracle. The Pharisees therefore said among themselves ; Ye perceive how ye prevail nothing ; behold, the world is gone after him.

20 And there were certain Greeks among them that came up
21 to worship at the feast. The same came therefore to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and desired him,
22 saying ; Sir, we would see Jesus. Philip cometh and telleth
23 Andrew ; and again, Andrew and Philip tell Jesus. And Jesus answered them, saying ; The hour is come, that the
24 Son of man should be glorified. Verily, verily, I say unto you, except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it
abideth alone ; but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.
25 He that loveth his life shall lose it ; and he that hateth

26 his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal. If any man serve me, let him follow me ; and where I am, there shall also my servant be ; if any man serve me, him will my
27 Father honour. Now is my soul troubled ; and what shall I say ? Father, save me from this hour ? But for this
28 cause came I unto this hour. Father, glorify thy name. Then came there a voice from heaven, *saying* ; “ I have
29 both glorified *it*, and will glorify *it* again.” The people therefore that stood by, and heard *it*, said that it thundered.
30 Others said ; An angel spake to him. Jesus answered and said ; ~~This voice came not~~ because of me, but for your
31 sakes. Now is the judgment of this world ; now shall the
32 prince of this world be cast out. And I, if I be lifted up
33 from the earth, will draw all *men* unto me. This he said,
34 signifying what death he should die. The people answered him ; We have heard out of the law that Christ abideth for ever ; and how sayest thou, the Son of man must
35 be lifted up ? who is this Son of man ? Then Jesus said unto them ; Yet a little while is the light among you. Walk, while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you ; for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth.
36 While ye have light, believe in the light, that ye may be the children of light. These things spake Jesus, and departed, and did hide himself from them.
37 But though he had done so many miracles before them,
38 yet they believed not on him ; that the saying of Esaias the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake ; “ Lord, who hath believed our report ? and to whom hath the arm of the Lord
39 been revealed ? ” Therefore they could not believe ; because that Esaias said again ; “ He hath blinded their eyes, and hardened their heart ; that they should not see with *their* eyes, nor understand with *their* heart, and be converted, and
41 I should heal them.” These things said Esaias, when he
42 saw his glory, and spake of him. Nevertheless, among the chief rulers also many believed on him ; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess *him*, lest they should be put
43 out of the synagogue ; for they loved the praise of men more
44 than the praise of God. Jesus cried, and said ; He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that
45 sent me ; and he that sceth me, sceth him that sent me.
46 I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth
47 on me should not abide in darkness. And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not ; (for I came

48 not to judge the world, but to save the world;) he that rejecteth me, and receiveth not my words, hath one that judgeth him; the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge
49 him in the last day. For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what
50 I should say, and what I should speak; and I know that his commandment is life everlasting. Whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.

XIII. Now before the feast of the passover, when Jesus knew that his hour was come, that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in
2 the world, he loved them unto the end; and supper being ended, (the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him,) Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he was
3 come from God, and went to God; he riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments, and took a towel, and girded himself; after that he poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel
4 wherewith he was girded. Then cometh he to Simon Peter; and Peter saith unto him; Lord, dost thou wash my
5 feet? Jesus answered and said unto him; What I do thou knowest not now, but thou shalt know hereafter. Peter saith unto him; Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him; If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me.
6 Simon Peter saith unto him; Lord, not my feet only, but
7 also my hands and my head. Jesus saith to him; He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean
8 every whit; and ye are clean, but not all. For he knew who should betray him; therefore said he; Ye are not all
9 clean. So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto
10 them; Know ye what I have done to you? Ye call me; Master, and Lord; and ye say well; for so I am. If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet, ye also
11 ought to wash one another's feet. For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you. Verily, verily, I say unto you, the servant is not greater than his lord,
12 neither he that is sent greater than he that sent him. If ye
13 know these things, happy are ye if ye do them. I speak not of you all; I know whom I have chosen; but that the scripture may be fulfilled; "He that eateth bread with me,
14 hath lifted up his heel against me." Now I tell you before

it come, that when it is come to pass, ye may believe that I
 20 am *he*. Verily, verily, I say unto you ; He that receiveth
 whomsoever I send, receiveth me ; and he that receiveth me,
 receiveth him that sent me.

21 When Jesus had thus said, he was troubled in spirit, and
 testified, and said ; Verily, verily, I say unto you, that one
 22 of you shall betray me. Then the disciples looked one on
 23 another, doubting of whom he spake. Now there was leaning
 on Jesus' bosom, one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved.
 24 Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him, that he should ask
 25 who it should be of whom he spake. He then, lying on Je-
 26 sus' breast, saith unto him ; Lord, who is it ? Jesus an-
 swered ; He it is to whom I shall give a sop, when I have
 dipped it. And when he had dipped the sop, he gave it to
 27 Judas Iscariot *the son* of Simon. And after the sop, Satan
 entered into him. Then said Jesus unto him ; That thou
 28 doest, do quickly. Now no man at the table knew for what
 29 intent he spake this unto him. For some of *them* thought,
 because Judas had the bag, that Jesus had said unto him ;
 Buy *those things* that we have need of against the feast ; or
 30 that he should give something to the poor. He then, hav-
 ing received the sop, went immediately out ; and it was
 night.

31 When he was gone out, Jesus said ; Now is the Son of man
 32 glorified, and God is glorified in him. If God be glorified in him,
 God shall also glorify him in himself, and shall straightway glo-
 33 rify him. Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye
 shall seek me ; and, as I said unto the Jews ; Whither I go, ye
 34 cannot come ; so now I say unto you. A new commandment
 I give unto you, that ye love one another ; as I have loved
 35 you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all *men*
 know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to
 36 another. Simon Peter said unto him ; Lord, whith-
 er goest thou ? Jesus answered him ; Whither I go, thou
 canst not follow me now ; but thou shalt follow me after-
 37 ward. Peter said unto him ; Lord, why cannot I follow
 38 thee now ? I will lay down my life for thy sake. Jesus
 answered him ; Wilt thou lay down thy life for my sake ?
 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, the cock shall not crow, till
 thou hast denied me thrice.

XIV. Let not your heart be troubled ; ye believe in God,
 2 believe also in me. In my Father's house are many
 mansions ; if *it were not so*, I would have told you. I

3 go to prepare a place for you; and if I go and prepare a
place for you, I will come again and receive you unto my-
4 self; that where I am, *there* ye may be also. And whither
5 I go ye know, and the way ye know. Thomas saith
unto him; Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how
6 can we know the way? Jesus saith unto him; I am the
way, and the truth, and the life; no man cometh unto the
7 Father, but by me. If ye had known me, ye should have
known my Father also; and from henceforth ye know him,
8 and have seen him. Philip saith unto him; Lord,
9 shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. Jesus saith unto
him; Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou
not known me, Philip? He that hath seen me hath seen
the Father; and how sayest thou *then*; Shew us the Fa-
10 ther? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and
the Father in me? The words that I speak unto you, I
speak not of myself; but the Father, that dwelleth in me, he
11 doeth the works. Believe me, that I *am* in the Father, and
the Father in me; or else believe me for the very works'
12 sake. Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that believeth on
me, the works that I do ~~shall he do also~~, and greater works
13 than these shall he do; because I go unto my Father, and
whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do; that the
14 Father may be glorified in the Son. If ye shall ask any
15 thing in my name, I will do it. If ye love me, keep
16 my commandments; and I will pray the Father, and he
shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with
17 you for ever; *even* the Spirit of truth, whom the world can-
not receive, because it seeth him not, neither knoweth him;
but ye know him, for he dwelleth with you, and shall be in
18 you. I will not leave you comfortless; I will come to you.
19 Yet a little while, and the world seeth me no more; but ye
20 see me; because I live, ye shall live also. At that day ye
shall know that I *am* in my Father, and you in me, and I in
21 you. He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them,
he it is that loveth me; and he that loveth me, shall be loved
of my Father; and I will love him, and will manifest myself
22 to him. Judas saith unto him (not Iscariot); Lord,
how is it that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto
23 the world? Jesus answered and said unto him; If a man
love me, he will keep my words; and my Father will love
him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with
24 him. He that loveth me not, keepeth not my sayings; and

the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which
25 sent me. These things have I spoken unto you,
26 being yet present with you; but the Comforter, *which is* the
Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he
shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your re-
27 membrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. Peace I
leave with you, my peace I give unto you; not as the world
giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled,
28 neither let it be afraid. Ye have heard how I said unto
you; I go away, and come *again* unto you. If ye loved
me, ye would rejoice, because I go unto the Father; for my
29 Father is greater than I. And now I have told you before
it come to pass, that when it is come to pass, ye might be-
30 lieve. Hereafter I will not talk much with you. For
the prince of the world cometh, and hath nothing in me.
31 But that the world may know that I love the Father, and as
the Father gave me commandment, even so I do; arise, let
us go hence.

XV. I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.
2 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh away;
and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may
3 bring forth more fruit. Now ye are clean through the word
4 which I have spoken unto you. Abide in me, and I in you.
As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in
5 the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me. I am the
vine, ye *are* the branches. He that abideth in me, and I in
him, the same bringeth forth much fruit; for without me ye can
6 do nothing. If a man *abide* not in me, he is cast forth as a
branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast
7 *them* into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in me,
and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it
8 shall be done unto you. Herein is my Father glorified, that
9 ye bear much fruit, and be my disciples. As the
Father hath loved me, so have I loved you; continue ye
10 in my love. If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide
in my love; even as I have kept my Father's command-
11 ments, and abide in his love. These things have I
spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and *that*
12 your joy might be full. This is my commandment, that ye
13 love one another, as I have loved you. Greater love hath
no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.
14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.
15 Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth

not what his lord doeth; but I have called you friends, for all things that I have heard of my Father, I have made
16 known unto you. Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that you should go and bring forth fruit, and *that* your fruit should remain; that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.
17 These things I command you, that ye love one another.
18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me
19 before it *hated* you. If ye were of the world, the world would love his own; but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you. Remember the word that I said unto you; The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if
21 they have kept my saying, they will keep yours also. But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake,
22 because they know not him that sent me. If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin; but now they
23 have no cloak for their sin. He that hateth me, hateth my
24 Father also. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin; but now have they
25 both seen, and hated both *me* and my Father. But *this cometh to pass*, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in
26 their law; "They hated me without a cause." But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, (*even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth
27 from the Father,) he shall testify of me. And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.
XVI. These things have I spoken unto you, that ye
2 should not be offended. They shall put you out of the synagogues; yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you,
3 will think that he doeth God service. And these things will they do, because they have not known the Father, nor me.
4 But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I
5 was with you. But now I go my way to him that sent me, and none of you asketh me; Whither goest thou? But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled
7 your heart. Nevertheless, I tell you the truth; it is expedient for you that I go away. For if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will
8 send him unto you. And when he is come, he will reprove

9 the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment. Of
 10 sin, because they believe not on me ; of righteousness, be-
 11 cause I go to my Father, and ye see me no more ; of judg-
 12 ment, because the prince of this world is judged. I have
 yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them
 13 now. Howbeit, when he, the Spirit of truth is come, he
 will guide you into all truth. For he shall not speak of
 himself, but whatsoever he shall hear, *that* shall he speak,
 14 and he will shew you things to come. He shall glorify me,
 for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you.
 15 All things that the Father hath are mine. Therefore said I,
 16 that he taketh of mine, and shall shew it unto you. A little
 while, and ye shall not see me ; and again, a little while, and
 17 ye shall see me, because I go to the Father. Then
 said *some* of his disciples among themselves ; What is this
 that he saith unto us ; A little while, and ye shall not see me ;
 and again, a little while, and ye shall see me ; and ; Be-
 18 cause I go to the Father ? They said therefore ; What is
 this that he saith, a little while ? We cannot tell what he
 19 saith. Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and
 said unto them ; Do ye inquire among yourselves of that I
 said ; A little while, and ye shall not see me ; and again, a
 20 little while, and ye shall see me ? Verily, verily, I say unto
 you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall re-
 joice ; and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be
 21 turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail hath sor-
 row, because her hour is come ; ~~but as soon as she is deliv-~~
~~ered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish,~~ for
 22 joy that a man is born into the world. And ye now there-
 fore have sorrow ; but I will see you again, and your heart
 23 shall rejoice, and your joy no man taketh from you ; and in
 that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto
 you, whatsoever ye shall ask the Father in my name, he will
 24 give it you. Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name ; ask,
 25 and ye shall receive, that your joy may be full. These
 things have I spoken unto you in proverbs ; the time cometh
 when I shall no more speak unto you in proverbs, but I shall
 26 shew you plainly of the Father. At that day ye shall ask in
 my name ; and I say not unto you, that I will pray the Fa-
 27 ther for you ; for the Father himself loveth you, because ye
 have loved me, and have believed that I came out from God.
 28 I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world ;
 29 again, I leave the world, and go to the Father. His

disciples said unto him ; Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and
30 speakest no proverb. Now are we sure that thou knowest
all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee ; by
31 this we believe that thou camest forth from God. Jesus
32 answered them ; Ye do now believe ; behold, the hour com-
eth, yea is now come, that ye shall be scattered every man
to his own, and shall leave me alone ; and yet I am not
33 alone, because the Father is with me. These things I have
spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the
world ye have tribulation ; but be of good cheer, I have
overcome the world.

XVII. These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to
heaven, and said ; Father, the hour is come ; glorify thy
2 Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee ; as thou hast given
him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as
3 many as thou hast given him. And this is life eternal, that
they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ
4 whom thou hast sent. I have glorified thee on the earth ;
5 I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do ; and
now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self, with
the glory which I had with thee before the world
6 was. I have manifested thy name unto the men
which thou gavest me out of the world ; thine they were and
7 thou gavest them me ; and they have kept thy word. Now
they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given
8 me are of thee ; for I have given unto them the words which
thou gavest me ; and they have received them, and have
known surely that I came out from thee, and they have be-
9 lieved that thou didst send me. I pray for them ; I pray
not for the world, but for them which thou hast given
10 me, for they are thine ; and all mine are thine, and
11 thine are mine ; and I am glorified in them. And now
I am no more in the world, but these are in the world,
and I come to thee. Holy Father, keep them in thine
own name, which thou hast given me ; that they may be
12 one, as we are. While I was with them in the world, I kept
them in thy name ; those that thou gavest me I have kept,
and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition, that the
13 scripture might be fulfilled. And now come I to thee, and
these things I speak in the world, that they might have my
14 joy fulfilled in themselves. I have given them thy word ;
and the world hath hated them, because they are not
15 of the world, even as I am not of the world. I pray

not, that thou shouldest take them out of the world,
 16 but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. They
 17 are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sancti-
 18 tify them through thy truth; thy word is truth. As thou
 hast sent me into the world, even so have I also sent them
 19 into the world. And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that
 20 they also might be sanctified through the truth. Neither
 pray I for these alone, but for them also which *shall* be-
 21 lieve on me through their word; that they all may be one;
 as thou, Father, *art* in me, and I in thee, that they also may
 be one in us; that the world may believe that thou hast sent
 22 me. And the glory which thou gavest me, I have given
 them; that they may be one, even as we are one;
 23 (I in them, and thou in me;) that they may be made perfect
 in one, and that the world may know that thou hast sent me,
 24 and hast loved them, as thou hast loved me. Father, I will
 that they also whom thou hast given me be with me where I
 am; that they may behold my glory which thou hast given
 me; for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.
 25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee; but I
 have known thee, and these have known that thou hast sent
 26 me. And I have declared unto them thy name, and will de-
 clare it; that the love wherewith thou hast loved me, may
 be in them, and I in them.

XVIII. When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth
 with his disciples, over the brook Cedron, where was a gar-
 2 den, into the which he entered. and his disciples. And
 Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place; for Jesus
 3 oft-times resorted thither with his disciples. Judas then
 having received a band of men, and officers from the chief
 priests and Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns, and
 4 torches, and weapons. Jesus therefore knowing all
 things that should come upon him, went forth, and said unto
 5 them; Whom seek ye? They answered him; Jesus of
 Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them; I am *he*. (And Judas
 6 also, which betrayed him, stood with them.) As soon then
 as he had said unto them; I am *he*; they went backward,
 7 and fell to the ground. Then asked he them again; Whom
 8 seek ye? And they said; Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus an-
 swered; I have told you that I am *he*; if therefore ye seek
 9 me, let these go their way. That the saying might be fulfill-
 ed which he spake; "Of them which thou gavest me, have
 10 I lost none." Then Simon Peter, having a sword,

- drew it, and smote the high priest's servant, and cut off his
11 right ear. The servant's name was Malchus. Then said
Jesus unto Peter; Put up the sword into the sheath; the
cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?
12 Then the band, and the captain and officers of the Jews
13 took Jesus, and bound him, and led him away to Annas first;
for he was father-in-law to Caiaphas, which was the high
14 priest that same year. Now Caiaphas was he which gave
counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should
15 die for the people. And Simon Peter followed Je-
sus, and *so did* another disciple. That disciple was known
unto the high priest, and went in with Jesus into the palace
16 of the high priest. But Peter stood at the door without.
Then went out that other disciple which was known unto
the high priest, and spake unto her that kept the door, and
17 brought in Peter. Then saith the damsel that kept the door
unto Peter; Art not thou also *one* of this man's disciples?
18 He saith; I am not. And the servants and officers stood there,
who had made a fire of coals, ~~for it was cold~~; and they warmed
themselves; and Peter stood with them, and warmed him-
19 self. The high priest then asked Jesus of his disciples,
20 and of his doctrine. Jesus answered him; I spake openly to
the world; I ever taught in the synagogue, and in the temple,
21 whither all the Jews resort, and in secret have I said nothing;
why askest thou me? ask them which heard me, what I have
22 said unto them; behold, they know what I said. And when
he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by,
struck Jesus with the palm of his hand, saying; Answerest
23 thou the high priest so? Jesus answered him; If I have
spoken evil, bear witness of the evil; but if well, why smit-
24 est thou me? Now Annas had sent him bound unto Cai-
25 phas the high priest. And Simon Peter stood and
warmed himself. They said therefore unto him; Art not
thou also *one* of his disciples? He denied it, and said; I
26 am not. One of the servants of the high priest, being *his*
kinsman whose ear Peter cut off, saith; Did not I see thee
27 in the garden with him? Peter then denied again; and im-
mediately the cock crew.
28 Then led they Jesus from Caiaphas unto the hall of judg-
ment; and it was early. And they themselves went not into
the judgment-hall, lest they should be defiled, but that they
29 might eat the passover. Pilate then went out unto them,
30 and said; What accusation bring ye against this man? They

answered and said unto him ; If he were not a malefactor,
 31 we would not have delivered him up unto thee. Then said
 Pilate unto them ; Take ye him, and judge him according
 to your law. The Jews therefore said unto him ; It is not law-
 32 ful for us to put any man to death. That the saying of Je-
 sus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying what death
 33 he should die. Then Pilate entered into the judg-
 ment-hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto him ; Art
 34 thou the King of the Jews ? Jesus answered him ; Sayest
 thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of me ?
 35 Pilate answered ; Am I a Jew ? thine own nation and the
 chief priests, have delivered thee unto me ; what hast thou
 36 done ? Jesus answered ; My kingdom is not of this world ;
 if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants
 fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews ; but now is
 37 my kingdom not from hence. Pilate therefore said unto
 him ; Art thou a king then ? Jesus answered ; Thou sayest
truth ; for I am a king. To this end was I born, and for this
 cause came I into the world, that I should bear witness unto
 the truth. Every one that is of the truth, heareth my voice.
 38 Pilate saith unto him ; What is truth ? And when he had
 said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto
 39 them ; I find in him no fault *at all*. But ye have a custom
 that I should release unto you one at the passover ; will ye
 therefore, that I release unto you the King of the Jews ?
 40 Then cried they all again, saying ; Not this man, but Ba-
 XIX. rabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber. Then
 2 Pilate therefore took Jesus, and scourged him. And the
 soldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put it on his head,
 3 and they put on him a purple robe, and said ; Hail, King of
 4 the Jews ! and they smote him with their hands. Pilate
 went forth again, and saith unto them ; Behold, I bring him
 forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in him.
 5 (Then came Jesus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and
 the purple robe.) And Pilate saith unto them ; Behold the
 6 man ! When the chief priests therefore and officers saw
 him, they cried out, saying ; Crucify him, crucify him.
 Pilate saith unto them ; Take ye him, and crucify him ; for
 7 I find no fault in him. The Jews answered him ; We have
 a law, and by our law he ought to die, because he made him-
 8 self the Son of God. When Pilate therefore heard
 9 that saying, he was the more afraid ; and went again into
 the judgment-hall, and saith unto Jesus ; Whence art thou ?

- 10 But Jesus gave him no answer. Then saith Pilate unto him ; Speakest thou not unto me ? knowest thou not, that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to release thee ?
11 Jesus answered ; Thou couldest have no power *at all* against me, except it were given thee from above ; therefore he that
12 delivered me unto thee hath the greater sin. And from thenceforth Pilate sought to release him. But the Jews cried out, saying ; If thou let this man go, thou art not Cesar's friend ; whosoever maketh himself a king, speaketh
13 against Cesar. When Pilate therefore heard that saying, he brought Jesus forth, and sat down in the judgment-seat, in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha ; (and it was the preparation of the passover, and about the sixth hour ;) and he saith unto the Jews ; Behold your
14 King ! But they cried out ; Away with *him*, away with *him* ; crucify him. Pilate saith unto them ; Shall I crucify your King ? The chief priests answered ; We have no king but
15 Cesar. Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led *him* away.

- And he bearing his cross went forth into a place called *the*
17 *place* of a skull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha ;
18 where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either
19 side one, and Jesus in the midst. And Pilate wrote a title, and put it on the cross. And the writing was ; "JESUS OF
20 NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS" This title then read many of the Jews, for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city ; and it was written in
21 Hebrew, *and* Greek, *and* Latin. Then said the chief priests of the Jews to Pilate ; Write not ; The King of the Jews ;
22 but that he said ; I am King of the Jews. Pilate answered ;
23 What I have written, I have written. Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, (and made four parts, to every soldier a part,) and also *his* coat. Now the coat was without seam, woven from the top
24 throughout. They said therefore among themselves ; Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be. That the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith ; "They parted my raiment among them, and for my vesture they did cast
25 lots." These things therefore the soldiers did. Now there stood by the cross of Jesus, his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the *wife* of Cleophas, and Mary Magdalene.
26 When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by whom he loved, he saith unto his mother ; Woman,

27 behold thy Son ! Then saith he to the disciple ; Behold thy
mother ! And from that hour that disciple took her unto his
28 own *home*. After this, Jesus knowing that all things

were now accomplished that the scripture might be fulfilled,
29 saith ; I thirst. Now there was set a vessel full of vinegar ;
and they filled a sponge with vinegar, and put it upon hys-
30 sop, and put it to his mouth. When Jesus therefore had
received the vinegar, he said ; It is finished ; and he bowed
his head, and gave up the ghost.

31 The Jews therefore, (because it was the preparation ; that
the bodies should not remain upon the cross on the sabbath-
day ; for that sabbath-day was a high day,) besought Pilate
that their legs might be broken, and *that* they might be taken
32 away. Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the
33 first, and of the other which was crucified with him. But
when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already,
34 they brake not his legs ; but one of the soldiers with a spear
pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and wa-
35 ter. And he that saw it, bare record, and his record
is true ; and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye also
36 might believe. For these things were done, that the scrip-
ture should be fulfilled ; "A bone of him shall not be bro-
37 ken." And again another scripture saith ; "They shall
look on him whom they pierced."

38 And after this, Joseph of Arimathea (being a disciple of
Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews) besought Pilate, that
he might take away the body of Jesus ; and Pilate gave *him*
leave. He came therefore and took the body of Jesus.
39 And there came also Nicodemus, (which at the first came to
Jesus by night) and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes,
40 about a hundred pound *weight*. Then took they the body
of Jesus, and wound it in linen clothes with the spices, as
41 the manner of the Jews is to bury. Now in the place where
he was crucified, there was a garden, and in the garden a
42 new sepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid. There
laid they Jesus therefore, because of the Jews' preparation-
day, for the sepulchre was nigh at hand.

XX. The first *day* of the week cometh Mary Magdalene ear-
ly, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre ; and seeth the
2 stone taken away from the sepulchre. Then she runneth,
and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom
Jesus loved, and saith unto them ; They have taken away
the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they

3 have laid him. Peter therefore went forth, and that other
4 disciple, and came to the sepulchre. So they ran both together; and the other disciple did outrun Peter, and came
5 first to the sepulchre. And he stooping down, *and looking*
6 *in*, saw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in. Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the sepulchre, and seeth the linen clothes lie, and the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itself. Then went in also that other disciple which came first to the sepulchre, and he saw, and
9 believed. For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he
10 must rise again from the dead. Then the disciples went
11 away again unto their own home. But Mary stood without at the sepulchre weeping. And as she wept she
12 stooped down *and looked* into the sepulchre, and seeth two angels in white, sitting, the one at the head, and the other at
13 the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. And they say unto her; Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them; Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know
14 not where they have laid him. When she had thus said, she turned herself back, *and saw* Jesus standing; and knew not
15 that it was Jesus. Jesus saith unto her; Woman, why weepest thou? whom seekest thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him; Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell
16 me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. Jesus saith unto her; Mary. She turned herself, and saith unto him; Rabboni, which is to say, Master. Jesus saith unto her; Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father; but go to my brethren, and say unto them; I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and *to* my God and your God. Mary Magdalene came and told the disciples that she had seen the Lord, and *that* he had spoken these things unto her.
19 Then the same day at evening, being the first *day* of the week, when the doors were shut, where the disciples were assembled, for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the
20 midst, and saith unto them; Peace *be* unto you. And when he had so said, he shewed unto them *his* hands and his side. Then were the disciples glad when they saw the Lord. Then said Jesus to them again; Peace *be* unto you; as *my* Father hath sent me, even so send I you. And when he had said this, he breathed on *them*, and saith unto them; Receive
23 ye the Holy Ghost. Whoso soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; *and* whose soever *sins* ye retain, they are retained.

24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not
25 with them when Jesus came. The other disciples therefore
said unto him ; We have seen the Lord. But he said unto
them ; Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails,
and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my
26 hand into his side, I will not believe. And after
eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with
them. Then came Jesus, the doors being shut, and stood
27 in the midst, and said ; Peace be unto you. Then saith he
to Thomas ; Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands,
and reach hither thy hand, and thrust *it* into my side ; and
28 be not faithless, but believing. Thomas answered and said
29 unto him ; My Lord and my God. Jesus saith unto him ;
Because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed ; blessed *are*
they that have not seen, and *yet* have believed.
30 And many other signs truly did Jesus in the presence of
31 his disciples, which are not written in this book. But these
are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ,
the son of God, and that believing ye might have life through
his name.

XXI. After these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disci-
ples at the sea of Tiberias. And on this wise shewed he him-
2 self. There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas call-
ed Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the
3 sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. Simon
Peter saith unto them ; I go a fishing. They say unto him ;
We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a
4 ship immediately, and that night they caught nothing. But
when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore ;
5 but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. Then Jesus
saith unto them ; Children, have ye any meat ? They answer-
6 ed him ; No. And he said unto them ; Cast the net on the
right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast there-
fore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude
7 of fishes. Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved saith
unto Peter ; It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard
that it was the Lord, he girt his fisher's coat *unto him* ; for
8 he was naked ; and did cast himself into the sea. And the
other disciples came in a little ship, (for they were not far
from land, but as it were two hundred cubits,) dragging the
9 net with fishes. As soon then as they were come to land,
they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and
10 bread. Jesus saith unto them ; Bring of the fish which

- 11 ye have now caught. Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, a hundred and fifty and three; and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.
- 12 Jesus saith unto them; Come *and* dine. And none of the disciples durst ask him; Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord. Jesus cometh, and taketh bread, and giveth them, and fish likewise. This is now the third time that Jesus shewed himself to his disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.
- 15 So when they had dined, Jesus saith to Simon Peter; Simon *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him; Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee.
- 16 He saith unto him; Feed my lambs. He saith to him again the second time; Simon *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? He saith unto him; Yea, Lord, thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him; Feed my sheep. He saith unto him the third time; Simon *son* of Jonas, lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time; Lovest thou me? And he said unto him; Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus
- 18 saith unto him; Feed my sheep. Verily, verily, I say unto thee, when thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest; but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not. This spake he, signifying by what death he should glorify God. And when he had
- 20 spoken this, he saith unto him; Follow me. Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved, following; (which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said; Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?) Peter seeing him, saith
- 22 to Jesus; Lord, and what *shall* this man *do*? Jesus saith unto him; If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee? follow thou me. Then went this saying abroad among the brethren, that that disciple should not die. Yet Jesus said not unto him; He shall not die; but; If I will that he tarry till I come, what *is that* to thee?
- 24 This is the disciple which testifieth of these things, and wrote these things; and we know that his testimony is true.
- 25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written.

THE

ACTS OF THE APOSTLES.

- THE former treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all
 2 that Jesus began both to do and teach, until the day in which
 he was taken up, after that he had given commandments unto
 the apostles whom he had chosen through the Holy Ghost.
 3 To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion, by
 many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and
 speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God.
 4 And being assembled together with *them*, he commanded
 them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait
 for the promise of the Father, which, *saith he*, ye have heard
 5 of me; for John truly baptized with water, but ye shall
 be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days
 6 hence. When they therefore were come togeth-
 er, they asked of him, saying; Lord, wilt thou at this time
 7 restore again the kingdom to Israel? And he said unto them;
 It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the
 8 Father hath put in his own power. But ye shall receive
 power after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you; and ye
 shall be witnesses unto me, both in Jerusalem, and in all Ju-
 dea and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost parts of the
 9 earth. And when he had spoken these things,
 while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received
 10 him out of their sight. And while they looked steadfastly to-
 ward heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them
 11 in white apparel, which also said; Ye men of Galilee, why
 stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is
 taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner
 12 as ye have seen him go into heaven. Then returned
 they unto Jerusalem, from the mount called Olivet, which is
 13 from Jerusalem a sabbath-day's journey. And when they
 were come in, they went up into an upper room where abode
 both Peter and James, and John and Andrew, Philip and

Thomas, Bartholomew and Matthew, James *the son* of Alphaeus, and Simon the zealot, and Judas *the brother* of James.

14 These all continued with one accord in prayer, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with his brethren.

15 And in those days Peter stood up in the midst of the disciples, and said ; (the number of the names together were

16 about a hundred and twenty ;) Men *and* brethren, this scripture must needs have been fulfilled, which the Holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before, concerning Judas,

17 which was guide to them that took Jesus ; for he was numbered among us, and had obtained part of this ministry.

18 Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity ; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all

19 his bowels gushed out ; and it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem, insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, *Aceldama*, that is to say, the field of blood.

20 For it is written in the book of Psalms ; Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein ; and ; His

21 bishoprick let another take. Wherefore of these men which have companied with us, all the time that the Lord Jesus

22 went in and out among us, beginning from the baptism of John unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and said ; Thou, Lord, which knowest the hearts of all *men*, shew whether of these two thou hast

25 chosen, that he may take part of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might

26 go to his own place. And they gave forth their lots ; and the lot fell upon Matthias, and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.

II. And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they

2 were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty wind, and

3 it filled all the house where they were sitting ; and there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire ; and it sat

4 upon each of them, and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit

5 gave them utterance. And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven.

6 Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came to-

gether, and were confounded; because that every man
7 heard them speak in his own language. And they were all
amazed, and marvelled, saying one to another; Behold, are
8 not all these which speak, Galileans? and how hear we ev-
9 ery man in our own tongue, wherein we were born, Parthians
and Medes and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia,
10 and in Judea and Cappadocia, in Pontus and Asia, and Phry-
gia, and Pamphilia, in Egypt and in the parts of Libya about
Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and Proselytes,
11 Cretes and Arabians, how hear we them speak in our tongues
12 the wonderful works of God? And they were all amazed,
and were in doubt, saying one to another; What meaneth
13 this? Others mocking, said; These men are full of new
14 wine. But Peter, standing up with the eleven,
lift up his voice, and said unto them; Ye men of Judea,
and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you,
15 and hearken to my words. For these are not drunken, as
16 ye suppose; seeing it is *but* the third hour of the day; but
17 this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel; And it
shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out
of my Spirit upon all flesh; and your sons and your daugh-
ters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions,
18 and your old men shall dream dreams; and on my servants,
and on my hand-maidens, I will pour out in those days of my
19 Spirit, and they shall prophesy. And I will shew wonders in
heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath, blood, and fire,
20 and vapour of smoke; the sun shall be turned into darkness
and the moon into blood, before that great and notable day
21 of the Lord come. And it shall come to pass, *that* whosoever
shall call on the name of the Lord, shall be saved.
22 Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a
man approved of God among you by miracles, and wonders,
and signs, (which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye
23 yourselves also know,) him, being delivered by the determi-
nate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and
24 by wicked hands have crucified and slain. Whom God
hath raised up, having loosed the pains of death, because it
25 was not possible that he should be holden of it. For David
speaketh concerning him; I foresaw the Lord always before
my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be
26 moved. Therefore did my heart rejoice, and my tongue was
27 glad; moreover also, my flesh shall rest in hope, that
thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer

28 thy Holy One to see corruption. Thou hast made known
to me the ways of life; thou shalt make me full of joy with thy
29 countenance. Men *and* brethren, let me freely speak unto
you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried,
30 and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. Therefore being
a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to
him, that of the fruit of his loins *one* should sit on his throne;
31 he seeing this before, spake of the resurrection of Christ,
that he was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corrup-
32 tion. This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are
33 witnesses. Therefore being by the right hand of God ex-
alted, and having received of the Father the promise of the
Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye see and hear.
34 For David is not ascended into the heavens; but he saith
himself; The LORD said unto my Lord; Sit thou on my
35 ³⁶ right hand, until I make thy foes thy footstool. Therefore
let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath
made that same Jesus whom ye have crucified, both Lord
and Christ.

87 Now when they heard *this*, they were pricked in their
heart, and said unto Peter and to the rest of the apostles;
38 Men *and* brethren, what shall we do? Then Peter said
unto them; Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the
name of Jesus Christ, for the remission of sins; and ye shall
39 receive the gift of the Holy Ghost. For the promise is unto
you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, *even* as
40 many as the Lord our God shall call. And with many other
words did he testify and exhort, saying; Save yourselves
41 from this untoward generation. Then they that gladly re-
ceived his word, were baptized; and the same day there were
42 added *unto them* about three thousand souls. And
they continued steadfastly in the apostles' doctrine, and fel-
43 lowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers. And
fear came upon every soul, and many wonders and signs
44 were done by the apostles. And all that believed were to-
45 gether, and had all things common, and sold their possessions
and goods, and parted them to all *men*, as every man had
46 need. And they, continuing daily with one accord in the
temple, and breaking bread from house to house, did eat
47 their meat with gladness and singleness of heart, praising
God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord
added to the church daily such as should be saved.

III. Now Peter and John went up together into the temple, at

- 2 the hour of prayer, *being* the ninth hour. And a certain man lame from his mother's womb was carried; whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, to
3 ask alms of them that entered into the temple; who, seeing Peter and John about to go into the temple, asked an alms.
4 And Peter fastening his eyes upon him with John, said;
5 Look on us. And he gave heed unto them, expecting to
6 receive something of them. Then Peter said; Silver and gold have I none; but such as I have give I thee; In the
7 name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, rise up and walk. And he took him by the right hand, and lift *him* up; and immediately his feet and ankle-bones received strength. And
8 he, leaping up, stood, and walked; and entered with them into the temple, walking and leaping, and praising God.
9 And all the people saw him walking, and praising God;
10 and they knew that it was he which sat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple; and they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.
11 And as he held Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them in the porch that is called Solomon's, greatly wondering. And when Peter saw *it*, he answered unto the people;
12 Ye men of Israel, why marvel ye at this? or why look ye so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holiness we had made this man to walk? The God of Abraham,
13 and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jesus, whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let *him*
14 go. But ye denied the Holy One, and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you, and killed the Prince
15 of life; whom God hath raised from the dead, whereof we are witnesses. And his name, through faith in his name,
16 hath made this man strong, whom ye see and know; yea, the faith which is by him, hath given him this perfect soundness in the presence of you all. And now, brethren, I wot
17 that through ignorance ye did *it*, as *did* also your rulers.
18 But those things which God before had shewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Christ should suffer, he hath so fulfilled.
19 Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall
20 come from the presence of the Lord, and he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was appointed for you; whom
21 the heaven must receive, until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of his holy

22 prophets, since the world began. Moses truly said unto the
fathers ; A prophet shall the Lord your God raise up unto
you, of your brethren, like unto me ; him shall ye hear in
23 all things, whatsoever he shall say unto you. And it shall
come to pass, *that* every soul which will not hear that proph-
24 et, shall be destroyed from among the people. Yea, and
all the prophets from Samuel, and those that follow after, as
many as have spoken, have likewise told of these days.
25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant
which God made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham ;
And in thy seed shall all the kindreds of the earth be blessed.
26 Unto you first, God having raised up his Son, sent him to
bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniqui-
ties.

IV. And as they spake unto the people, the priests, and the
captain of the temple, and the Sadducees came upon them,
2 being grieved that they taught the people, and preached
3 through Jesus the resurrection from the dead. And they
laid hands on them, and put *them* in hold unto the next day ;
4 for it *was now even-tide*. Howbeit, many of them which
heard the word, believed ; and the number of the men was
5 about five thousand. And it came to pass on the
6 morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and scribes, and Annas
the high priest, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and
as many as were of the kindred of the high priest, were
7 gathered together at Jerusalem. And when they had set
them in the midst, they asked ; By what power, or by what
8 name have ye done this ? Then Peter, filled with
the Holy Ghost, said unto them ; Ye rulers of the people,
9 and elders of Israel, if we this day be examined of the good
deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made
10 whole ; be it known unto you all, and to all the people of
Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom
ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, *even* by him
11 doth this man stand here before you whole. This is the
stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is be-
12 come the head of the corner. Neither is there salvation in any
other ; for there is none other name under heaven given among
13 men, whereby we must be saved. Now, when they saw
the boldness of Peter and John, and perceived that they
were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled, and they
14 took knowledge of them that they had been with Jesus ; and
beholding the man which was healed standing with them,

- 15 they could say nothing against it. But when they had commanded them to go aside out of the council, they conferred
16 among themselves, saying ; What shall we do to these men ? for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them is manifest to all them that dwell in Jerusalem, and we cannot
17 deny it. But that it spread no further among the people, let us straitly threaten them, that they speak henceforth to
18 no man in this name. And they called them, and commanded them not to speak at all, nor teach in the name of Jesus.
19 But Peter and John answered and said unto them ; Whether it be right in the sight of God to hearken unto you more
20 than unto God, judge ye. For we cannot but speak the things
21 which we have seen and heard. So, when they had further threatened them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might punish them, because of the people ; for all men glorified God for that which was done. For the man was above forty years old on whom this miracle of healing was shewed.
- 23 And being let go, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chief priests and elders had said unto
24 them. And when they heard that, they lift up their voice to God with one accord, and said ; Lord, thou art God, which hast made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all that
25 in them is ; who, by the mouth of thy servant David hast said ; Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things ? The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord, and against his
27 Christ. For of a truth against thy holy child Jesus, whom thou hast anointed, both Herod and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles and the people of Israel, were gathered together in
28 this city, for to do whatsoever thy hand and thy counsel determined before to be done. And now, Lord, behold their threatenings, and grant unto thy servants, that with all boldness they may speak thy word, by stretching forth thy hand to heal, and that signs and wonders may be done by the
31 name of thy holy child Jesus. And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together ; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and they spake the word of God with boldness.
- 32 And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart, and of one soul ; neither said any of them that aught of the things which he possessed was his own, but they had
33 all things common. And with great power gave the apos-

ties witness of the resurrection of the Lord Jesus ; and great
34 grace was upon them all. Neither was there any among
them that lacked ; for as many as were possessors of lands
or houses sold them, and brought the prices of the things
35 that were sold, and laid *them* down at the apostles' feet ; and
distribution was made unto every man, according as he had
36 need. And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed
Barnabas, (which is, being interpreted, the son of consolati-
37 tion,) a Levite, *and* of the country of Cyprus, having land,
sold *it*, and brought the money, and laid *it* at the apostles'
V. feet. But a certain man named Ananias, with
2 Sapphira his wife, sold a possession ; and kept back *part*
of the price, his wife also being privy to *it* ; and brought a
3 certain part, and laid *it* at the apostles' feet. But Peter
said ; Ananias, why hath Satan filled thy heart to lie to the
Holy Ghost, and to keep back *part* of the price of the land ?
4 While it remained, was it not thine own, and after it was
sold, was it not in thine own power ? why hast thou concei-
ved this thing in thy heart ? thou hast not lied unto men,
5 but unto God. And Ananias hearing these words, fell down,
and gave up the ghost. And great fear came on all them
6 that heard these things. And the young men arose, wound
7 him up, and carried *him* out, and buried *him*. And
it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife,
8 not knowing what was done, came in. And Peter answered
unto her ; Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much ?
9 And she said ; Yea, for so much. Then Peter said unto
her ; How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the
Spirit of the Lord ? Behold the feet of them which have
buried thy husband *are* at the door, and shall carry thee out.
10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up
the ghost ; and the young men came in, and found her dead,
11 and carrying *her* forth, buried *her* by her husband. And
great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as
12 heard these things. And by the hands of the apos-
tles were many signs and wonders wrought among the peo-
ple ; and they were all with one accord in Solomon's porch ;
13 and of the rest durst no man join himself to them. But the
14 people magnified them ; (and believers were the more added
15 to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women ;) insomuch
that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid
them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of
16 Peter passing by might overshadow some of them. There

came also a multitude *out* of the cities round about unto Jerusalem, bringing sick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean spirits ; and they were healed every one.

- 17 Then the high priest rose up, and all they that were with him, which is the sect of the Sadducees, and were filled with
18 indignation, and laid their hands on the apostles, and put
19 them in the common prison. But the angel of the Lord by night opened the prison-doors, and brought them forth, and
20 said ; Go, stand and speak in the temple to the people all
21 the words of this life. And when they heard *that*, they entered into the temple early in the morning, and taught. But the high priest came, and they that were with him, and called the council together, and all the senate of the children of
22 Israel ; and sent to the prison to have them brought. But when the officers came, and found them not in the prison,
23 they returned, and told, saying ; The prison truly found we shut with all safety, and the keepers standing before the doors ; but when we had opened, we found no man within.
24 Now when the high priest, and the captain of the temple, and the chief priests heard these things, they doubted of
25 them whereunto this would grow. Then came one and told them ; Behold, the men whom ye put in prison are standing
26 in the temple, and teaching the people. Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them without violence ; for they feared the people, lest they should have been stoned.
27 And when they had brought them, they set *them* before the
28 council. And the high priest asked them, saying ; Did we not straitly command *you*, that *ye* should not teach in this name ? and behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this man's blood upon
29 us. Then Peter and the *other* apostles answered
30 and said ; We ought to obey God rather than men. The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hang-
31 ed on a tree ; him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel,
32 and forgiveness of sins. And we are his witnesses of these things, and *so* is also the Holy Ghost, whom God hath given
33 to them that obey him. When they heard *that*, they
34 were cut to the heart, and took counsel to slay them. Then stood there up one in the council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of the law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the apostles forth a little
35 space. And he said unto them ; Ye men of Israel, take

heed to yourselves what ye intend to do as touching these
36 men. For before these days rose up Theudas, boasting
himself to be somebody, to whom a number of men, about
four hundred, joined themselves; who was slain, and all, as
many as obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought.
37 After this man rose up Judas of Galilee, in the days of the
taxing, and drew away much people after him; he also
perished, and all, *even* as many as obeyed him, were dis-
38 persed. And now I say unto you; Refrain from these men,
and let them alone; for if this counsel or this work be of
39 men, it will come to nought; but if it be of God, ye cannot
overthrow them, lest haply ye be found even to fight against
40 God. And to him they agreed; and when they had
called the apostles, and beaten *them*, they commanded that
they should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.
41 And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoic-
ing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for *his*
42 name; and daily in the temple, and in every house, they
ceased not to teach and preach Jesus Christ.

VI. And in those days, when the number of the disciples was
multiplied, there ~~arose a murmuring~~ of the Grecians against
the Hebrews, because their widows were neglected in the
2 daily ministration. Then the twelve called the multitude of
the disciples unto them, and said; It is not reason that we
3 should leave the word of God, and serve tables. Where-
fore, brethren, look ye out among you seven men of honest
report, full of the spirit and wisdom, whom we will appoint
4 over this business; but we will give ourselves continually to
5 prayer, and to the ministry of the word. And the saying
pleased the whole multitude; and they chose Stephen, a
man full of faith and of the Holy Ghost, and Philip, and
Prochorus, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and
6 Nicolas a proselyte of Antioch; whom they set before the
apostles; and when they had prayed, they laid *their* hands
7 on them. And the word of God increased, and the
number of the disciples multiplied in Jerusalem greatly;
and a great company of the priests were obedient to the
faith.

8 And Stephen, full of grace and power, did great wonders
9 and miracles among the people. Then there arose certain
of the synagogue, which is called *the synagogue* of the Liber-
tines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cili-
10 cia and of Asia, disputing with Stephen; and they were not

- able to resist the wisdom and the spirit by which he spake.
- 11 Then they suborned men, which said ; We have heard him speak blasphemous words against Moses, and *against* God.
- 12 And they stirred up the people, and the elders, and the scribes, and came upon *him*, and caught him, and brought
- 13 *him* to the council, and set up false witnesses, which said ; This man ceaseth not to speak words against the holy
- 14 place, and the law. For we have heard him say ; This Jesus of Nazareth shall destroy this place, and shall
- 15 change the customs which Moses delivered us. And all that sat in the council, looking steadfastly on *him*, saw his
- VII. face as it had been the face of an angel. Then
- 2 said the high priest ; Are these things so ? And he said ; Men, brethren, and fathers, hearken. The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham when he was in Mesopotamia, before he dwelt in Charran ; and said unto him ; Get
- 3 thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and come
- 4 into the land which I shall shew thee. Then came he out of the land of the Chaldeans, and dwelt in Charran ; and from thence, when his father was dead, he removed him into this
- 5 land wherein ye now dwell ; and he gave him none inheritance in it, no, not *so much as* to set his foot on ; yet he promised that he would give it to him for a possession, and
- 6 to his seed after him, when *as yet* he had no child. And God spake on this wise ; That his seed should sojourn in a strange land, and that they should bring them into bondage,
- 7 and entreat *them* evil four hundred years ; and the nation to whom they shall be in bondage will I judge, said God ; and after that shall they come forth, and serve me in this
- 8 place. (And he gave him the covenant of circumcision ; and so *Abraham* begat Isaac, and circumcised him the eighth day ; and Isaac *begat* Jacob, and Jacob *begat* the
- 9 twelve patriarchs. And the patriarchs, moved with envy,
- 10 sold Joseph into Egypt ; but God was with him, and delivered him out of all his afflictions, and gave him favour and wisdom in the sight of Pharaoh king of Egypt, and he made
- 11 him governor over Egypt, and all his house. Now there came a dearth over all the land of Egypt and Chanaan, and
- 12 great affliction ; and our fathers found no sustenance. But when Jacob heard that there was corn in Egypt, he sent out
- 13 our fathers first. And at the second *time* Joseph was made known to his brethren, and Joseph's kindred was made
- 14 known unto Pharaoh. Then sent Joseph, and called his

father Jacob to him, and all *his* kindred, threescore and fifteen souls. So Jacob went down into Egypt, and died, he and our fathers. And they were carried over into Sychem, and laid in the sepulchre that Abraham bought for a sum of money of the sons of Emmor, *the father* of Sychem.) But when the time of the promise drew nigh, which God had sworn to Abraham, the people grew and multiplied in Egypt; till another king arose, which knew not Joseph. The same dealt subtilly with our kindred, and evil-entreated our fathers, so that they cast out their young children, to the end they might not live. In which time Moses was born, and was exceeding fair; who was nourished up in *his* father's house three months. And when he was cast out, Pharaoh's daughter took him up, and nourished him for her own son. And Moses was learned in all the wisdom of the Egyptians; and was mighty in his words and deeds. And when he was full forty years old, it came into his heart to visit his brethren, the children of Israel. And seeing one of *them* suffer wrong, he defended *him*, and avenged him that was oppressed, and smote the Egyptian. For he supposed his brethren would have understood how that God by his hand would deliver them; but they understood not. And the next day he shewed himself unto them as they strove, and would have set them at one again, saying; Sirs, ye are brethren; why do ye wrong one to another? But he that did his neighbour wrong, thrust him away, saying; Who made thee a ruler and a judge over us? Wilt thou kill me, as thou killedst the Egyptian yesterday? Then fled Moses at this saying, and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons. And when forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of mount Sina, an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush. When Moses saw it, he wondered at the sight; and as he drew near to behold it, the voice of the Lord came unto him, *saying*; I am the God of thy fathers, the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Then Moses trembled and durst not behold. Then said the Lord to him; Put off thy shoes from thy feet; for the place where thou standest is holy ground. I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver them; and now come, I will send thee into Egypt. This Moses, whom they refused, saying; Who made thee a ruler and a judge?

the same did God send to *be* a ruler and a deliverer by the hand of the angel which appeared to him in the bush.

36 He brought them out, after that he had shewed wonders and signs in the land of Egypt, and in the Red sea, and in the

37 wilderness forty years. This is that Moses, which said unto the children of Israel; A prophet shall the Lord God raise up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him shall ye

38 hear. This is he that was, in the church in the wilderness, with the angel which spake to him in the mount Sina, and *with* our fathers, who received the lively oracles to give unto

39 us; to whom our fathers would not obey, but thrust *him* from them, and in their hearts turned back again into Egypt,

40 saying unto Aaron; Make us gods to go before us; for *as for this Moses*, which brought us out of the land of Egypt,

41 we wot not what is become of him. And they made a calf in those days, and offered sacrifice unto the idol, and rejoiced

42 in the works of their own hands. Then God turned, and gave them up to worship the host of heaven; as it is written in the book of the prophets; O ye house of Israel, have ye offered to me slain beasts and sacrifices *by the space of* forty

43 years in the wilderness? Yea, ye took up the tabernacle of Moloch, and the star of your god Remphan, figures which ye made to worship them; and I will carry you away beyond Babylon.

44 Our fathers had the tabernacle of witness in the wilderness, as he had appointed, speaking unto Moses, that he should make it according to the fashion that he

45 had seen; which also our fathers, that came after, brought in with Jesus into the possession of the Gentiles, whom God drave out before the face of our fathers, unto the days of

46 David. Who found favour before God, and desired to find a tabernacle for the God of Jacob. But Solomon built

47 him a house. Howbeit, the most high dwelleth not in *temples* made with hands, as saith the prophet; Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool. What house will ye build

48 me? saith the Lord; or what is the place of my rest? Hath

49 not my hand made all these things? . . . Ye stiff-necked, and uncircumcised in heart and ears; ye do always resist the Holy Ghost; as your fathers *did*, so *do* ye.

50 Which of the prophets have not your fathers persecuted? and they have slain them which shewed before of the coming of the Just One, of whom ye have been now the betrayers

51 and murderers; who have received the law by the disposition of angels, and have not kept it. . .

54 When they heard these things, they were cut to the heart,
55 and they gnashed on him with *their* teeth. But he, being full
of the Holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw
the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of
56 God, and said; Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the
57 Son of man standing on the right hand of God. Then they
cried out with a loud voice, and stopped their ears, and ran
58 upon him with one accord; and cast *him* out of the city, and
stoned *him*. And the witnesses laid down their clothes at a
59 young man's feet, whose name was Saul, and they stoned Ste-
phen, calling upon God, and saying; Lord Jesus, receive my
60 spirit. And he kneeled down and cried with a loud voice;
Lord, lay not this sin to their charge. And when he had
VIII. said this, he fell asleep. And Saul was consenting unto
his death.

And at that time there was a great persecution against
the church which was at Jerusalem; and they were all scat-
tered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria,
2 except the apostles. And devout men carried Stephen to
3 his burial, and made great lamentation over him. As for
Saul, he made havoc of the church, entering into every
house, and haling men and women, committed *them* to
prison.

4 Therefore they that were scattered abroad went every
5 where, preaching the word. Then Philip went down to the
6 city of Samaria, and preached Christ unto them. And the
people with one accord gave heed unto those things which
Philip spake, hearing and seeing the miracles which he did.
7 For unclean spirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many
that were possessed *with them*; and many taken with palsies,
8 and that were lame, were healed. And there was great
9 joy in that city. But there was a certain man, called
Simon, which before time in the same city used sorcery, and
bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himself was
10 some great one; to whom they all gave heed, from the least to
the greatest, saying; This man is the power of God, which is
11 called great. And to him they had regard, because that of long
12 time he had bewitched them with sorceries. But when they
believed Philip, preaching the things concerning the kingdom
of God, and the name of Jesus Christ, they were baptized
13 both men and women. Then Simon himself believed also,
and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip; and
wondered, beholding the miracles and signs which were

- 14 done. Now when the apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God,
15 they sent unto them Peter and John; who, when they were come down, prayed for them that they might receive the
16 Holy Ghost. (For as yet he was fallen upon none of them, only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus.)
17 Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the
18 Holy Ghost. And when Simon saw that through laying on of the apostles' hands the Holy Ghost was given, he offered
19 them money, saying; Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghost. But
20 Peter said unto him; Thy money perish with thee; because thou hast thought that the gift of God may be purchased
21 with money. Thou hast neither part nor lot in this matter;
22 for thy heart is not right in the sight of God. Repent therefore of this thy wickedness, and pray God, if perhaps the
23 thought of thy heart may be forgiven thee. For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterness, and in the bond of iniquity.
24 Then answered Simon, and said; Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of these things which ye have spoken come upon me. And they, when they had testified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jerusalem, and preached the gospel in many villages of the Samaritans.
26 And the angel of the Lord spake unto Philip, saying; Arise, and go toward the south, unto the way that goeth
27 down from Jerusalem unto Gaza; which is desert. And he arose, and went; and behold, a man of Ethiopia, a eunuch, of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethiopians, who had the charge of all her treasure, and had
28 come to Jerusalem for to worship, was returning, and sitting in his chariot, read Esaias the prophet. Then the Spirit said unto Philip; Go near and join thyself to this chariot.
30 And Philip ran thither to him, and heard him read the prophet Esaias, and said; Understandest thou what thou readest? And he said; How can I, except some man should guide me? And he desired Philip that he would come up
32 and sit with him. The place of the scripture which he read was this; He was led as a sheep to the slaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his shearer, so opened he not his mouth.
33 In his humiliation his judgment was taken away; and who shall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the
34 earth. And the eunuch answered Philip, and said; I pray

thee, of whom speaketh the prophet this? of himself, or of
35 some other man? Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus.
36 And as they went on *their* way, they came unto a certain water; and the eunuch said; See, *here is* water; what
37 doth hinder me to be baptized? And he commanded the chariot to stand still; and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.
38 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip; and the eunuch saw him no
39 more; and he went on his way rejoicing. But Philip was found at Azotus; and passing through, he preached in all the cities, till he came to Cesarea.

IX. And Saul, yet breathing out threatnings and slaughter against the disciples of the Lord, went unto the high priest,
2 and desired of him letters to Damascus to the synagogues, that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or
3 women, he might bring them bound unto Jerusalem. And as he journeyed, he came near Damascus; and suddenly
4 there shined round about him a light from heaven; and he fell to the earth, and heard a voice saying unto him; Saul,
5 Saul; why persecutest thou me? And he said; Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said; I am Jesus whom thou persecutest; but arise, and go into the city, and it shall be told thee
6 what thou must do. And the men which journeyed with him stood speechless, hearing a voice, but seeing no man.
7 And Saul arose from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he saw no man; but they led him by the hand, and
8 brought *him* into Damascus. And he was three days without
9 sight; and neither did eat nor drink. And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias, and to him said the Lord in a vision; Ananias. And he said; Behold, *I am here*, Lord. And the Lord *said* unto him; Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and inquire in the house of Judas for *one* called Saul, of Tarsus;
12 for behold, he prayeth, and hath seen in a vision a man, named Ananias, coming in, and putting *his* hand on him, that he might receive his sight. Then Ananias answered; Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath
14 done to thy saints at Jerusalem. And here he hath authority from the chief priests, to bind all that call on thy name. But the Lord said unto him; Go thy way, for he is a chosen vessel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings,

- 16 and the children of Israel. For I will shew him how great
17 things he must suffer for my name's sake. And
Ananias went his way, and entered into the house ; and putting his hands on him, said ; Brother Saul, the Lord (*even* Jesus that appeared unto thee in the way as thou camest,) hath sent me, that thou mightest receive thy sight, and be
18 filled with the Holy Ghost. And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been scales ; and he received sight ; and
19 arose, and was baptized. And when he had received meat, he was strengthened. Then was he certain days with
20 the disciples which were at Damascus. And straightway he preached Jesus in the synagogues, that he is the Son of God.
21 But all that heard *him* were amazed, and said ; Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this name in Jerusalem ? and he came hither for that intent, that he might bring them
22 bound unto the chief priests. But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is very Christ. And after
23 that many days were fulfilled, the Jews took counsel to kill him ; but their laying await was known of Saul ; and they
24 watched the gates day and night to kill him. Then the disciples took him by night, and let *him* down by the wall in a
25 basket. And when he was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to join himself to the disciples ; but they were all afraid of him, and believed not that he was a disciple.
26 But Barnabas took him, and brought *him* to the apostles, and declared unto them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he ~~had~~ spoken to him, and how he had
27 preached boldly at Damascus in the name of Jesus. And
28 he was with them coming in and going out at Jerusalem, and he spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians ; but they went about to slay him. Which when the brethren knew, they brought him
29 down to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.
30 Then had the churches rest throughout all Judea, and Galilee, and Samaria, and were edified, and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the Holy Ghost, were multiplied.
31 And it came to pass, as Peter passed throughout all *quarters*, he came down also to the saints which dwelt at Lydda.
32 And there he found a certain man named Eneas, which had
33 kept his bed eight years, and was sick of the palsy. And
34 Peter said unto him ; Eneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee

whole; arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately. And all that dwelt in Lydda and Saron saw him, and turned to the Lord.

Now there was at Joppa a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas; this woman was full of good works and alms-deeds which she did. And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and died; whom when they had washed, they laid her in an upper chamber. And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there, they sent unto him two men, desiring *him* that he would not delay to come to them. Then Peter arose, and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber, and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made while she was with them. But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down, and prayed; and turning *him* to the body, said; Tabitha, arise. And she opened her eyes; and when she saw Peter, she sat up. And he gave her *his* hand, and lift her up; and when he had called the saints and widows, he presented her alive. And it was known throughout all Joppa; and many believed in the Lord. And it came to pass, that he tarried many days in Joppa with one Simon a tanner.

X. There was a certain man in Cesarea, called Cornelius, a centurion of the band called the Italian band, a devout man, and one that feared God with all his house, which gave much alms to the people, and prayed to God alway; he saw in a vision evidently, about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of God coming in to him, and saying unto him; Cornelius. And when he looked on him, he was afraid, and said; What is it, Lord? And he said unto him; Thy prayers and thine alms are come up for a memorial before God. And now send men to Joppa, and call for one Simon, whose surname is Peter; he lodgeth with one Simon a tanner, whose house is by the sea-side. And when the angel which spake unto him was departed, he called two of his household servants, and a devout soldier of them that waited on him continually, and when he had declared all *these* things unto them, he sent them to Joppa. On the morrow, as they went on their journey, and drew nigh unto the city, Peter went up upon the house-top to pray, about the sixth hour. And he became very hungry and would have eaten;

11 but while they made ready, he fell into a trance, and saw
heaven opened, and a certain vessel descending, as it had
12 had been a great sheet knit at the four corners, and let down
to the earth; wherein were all manner of four-footed beasts
of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls
13 of the air; and there came a voice to him; Rise, Peter, kill,
14 and eat. But Peter said; Not so, Lord; for I have never
15 eaten any thing that is common or unclean. And the voice
spake unto him again the second time; What God hath
16 cleansed, *that* call not thou common. This was done thrice;
17 and the vessel was received up again into heaven. Now,
while Peter doubted in himself what this vision which he had
seen should mean, behold, the men which were sent from
Cornelius had made inquiry for Simon's house, and stood be-
18 fore the gate; and called, and asked whether Simon, which
19 was surnamed Peter, were lodged there. While Peter
thought on the vision, the Spirit said unto him; Behold,
20 three men seek thee; arise therefore, and get thee down,
and go with them, doubting nothing that I have sent
21 them. Then Peter went down to the men and said;
Behold, I am he whom ye seek; what *is* the cause, where-
22 fore ye are come? And they said; Cornelius the centu-
rion, a just man, and one that feareth God, and of good re-
port among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God
by a holy angel to send for thee into his house, and to
23 hear words of thee. Then called he them in, and lodged
them. And *on the morrow* he rose up and went
away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accom-
24 panied him. And the morrow after they entered into Cesa-
rea. And Cornelius waited for them, and had called together
25 his kinsmen and near friends. And as Peter was
coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and
26 worshipped *him*. But Peter took him up, saying; Stand
27 up; I myself also am a man. And as he talked with him,
28 he went in, and found many that were come together. And
he said unto them; Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing
for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of
another nation; but God hath shewed me that I should not
29 call any man common or unclean. Therefore came I *unto*
you without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for. I ask
30 therefore for what intent ye have sent for me? And Corneli-
us said; Four days ago this hour, I was fasting, and at

the ninth hour I prayed in my house; and behold, a man
 31 stood before me in bright clothing, and said; Cornelius, thy
 prayer is heard, and thine alms are had in remembrance in
 32 the sight of God. Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither
 Simon, whose surname is Peter; he is lodged in the house
 of one Simon a tanner, by the sea-side; who, when he com-
 33 eth, shall speak unto thee. Immediately therefore I sent to
 thee; and thou hast well done that thou art come. Now
 therefore are we all here present before God, to hear all
 34 things that are commanded thee of God. Then
 Peter opened *his* mouth, and said; Of a truth I perceive
 35 that God is no respecter of persons; but in every nation, he
 that feareth him and worketh righteousness, is accepted with
 36 him. The word which *God* sent unto the children of Israel,
 37 preaching peace by Jesus Christ; (he is Lord of all;) that
 word, *I say*, ye know, which was published throughout all
 Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptism which John
 38 preached; how God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy
 Ghost and with power, who went about doing good, and
 healing all that were oppressed of the devil, for God was with
 39 him; and we ~~are witnesses of~~ all things which he did, both
 in the land of the Jews, and in Jerusalem; whom they also
 40 slew and hanged on a tree. Him God raised up the third
 41 day, and shewed him openly, not to all the people, but unto
 witnesses chosen before of God, *even* to us, who did eat and
 42 drink with him after he rose from the dead; and he com-
 manded us to preach unto the people, and to testify, that
 it is he which was ordained of God *to be* the Judge of quick
 43 and dead. To him give all the prophets witness, that through
 his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission
 44 of sins. While Peter yet spake these words, the
 45 Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the word. And
 they of the circumcision which believed, were astonished, as
 many as came with Peter, because that on the Gentiles also
 46 was poured out the gift of the Holy Ghost; for they heard
 them speak with tongues, and magnify God. Then answer-
 47 ed Peter; Can any man forbid water, that these should not be
 baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we?
 48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the
 Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

XI. And the apostles and brethren that were in Judea, heard
 2 that the Gentiles had also received the word of God. And

when Peter was come up to Jerusalem, they that were of
 3 the circumcision contended with him, saying ; Thou wentest
 4 in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them. But
 Peter rehearsed *the matter* from the beginning, and expound-
 5 ed *it* by order unto them, saying ; I was in the city of Jop-
 pa praying ; and in a trance I saw a vision, a certain vessel
 descend, as it had been a great sheet, let down from hea-
 6 ven by four corners, and it came even to me ; upon the
 which when I had fastened mine eyes, I considered, and saw
 four-footed beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping
 7 things, and fowls of the air. And I heard a voice saying un-
 8 to me ; Arise, Peter, slay and eat. But I said ; Not so,
 Lord ; for *nothing* common or unclean hath at any time en-
 9 tered into my mouth. But the voice answered me again
 from heaven ; What God hath cleansed, *that* call not thou
 10 common. And this was done three times ; and all were
 11 drawn up again into heaven. And behold, immediately
 there were three men already come unto the house where I
 12 was, sent from Cesarea unto me. And the Spirit bade me
 go with them, nothing doubting ; moreover, these six breth-
 ren accompanied me, and we entered into the man's house.
 13 And he shewed us how he had seen an angel in his house,
 which stood and said unto him ; Send to Joppa, and call for
 14 Simon, whose surname is Peter ; who shall tell thee words,
 15 whereby thou and all thy house shall be saved. And as I
 began to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, as on us at the
 16 beginning. Then remembered I the word of the Lord,
 how that he said ; John indeed baptized with water, but ye
 17 shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost. Forasmuch then as
 God gave them the like gift as *he did* unto us, who believed
 on the Lord Jesus Christ, what was I, that I could withstand
 18 God ? When they heard these things, they held
 their peace, and glorified God, saying ; Then hath God also
 to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.
 19 Now they which were scattered abroad upon the persecu-
 tion that arose about Stephen, travelled as far as Phenice,
 and Cyprus, and Antioch, preaching the word to none but
 20 unto the Jews only. And some of them were men of Cy-
 prus and Cyrene, which, when they were come to Antioch,
 21 spake unto the Greeks, preaching the Lord Jesus. And
 the hand of the Lord was with them ; and a great number
 22 believed, and turned unto the Lord. Then tidings of these

things came unto the ears of the church which was in Jerusalem; and they sent forth Barnabas, that he should go as far as Antioch. Who, when he came, and had seen the grace of God, was glad, and exhorted them all, that with purpose of heart they would cleave unto the Lord; for he was a good man, and full of the Holy Ghost, and of faith. And much people was added unto the Lord. Then departed Barnabas to Tarsus, for to seek Saul; and when he had found him, he brought him unto Antioch. And it came to pass, that a whole year they assembled themselves with the church, and taught much people, and the disciples were called Christians first in Antioch.

And in these days came prophets from Jerusalem unto Antioch. And there stood up one of them named Agabus, and signified by the Spirit, that there should be great dearth throughout all the world; which came to pass in the days of Claudius. Then the disciples, every man according to his ability, determined to send relief unto the brethren which dwelt in Judea; which also they did, and sent it to the elders by the hands of Barnabas and Saul.

XII. Now about that time, Herod the king stretched forth his hands to vex certain of the church. And he killed James, the brother of John, with the sword. And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further to take Peter also; (then were the days of unleavened bread;) and when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers to keep him, intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people. Peter therefore was kept in prison; but prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him. And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains, and the keepers before the door kept the prison. And behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison; and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying; Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands. And the angel said unto him; Gird thyself, and bind on thy sandals. And so he did. And he saith unto him; Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me. And he went out, and followed him; and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel, but thought he saw a vision. When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron

gate that leadeth unto the city, which opened to them of his own accord ; and they went out and passed on through one
11 street, and forthwith the angel departed from him. And when Peter was come to himself, he said ; Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and *from* all the expectation of
12 the people of the Jews. And when he had considered *the thing*, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was Mark, where many were gathered together, praying. And as he knocked at the door of the gate,
13 a damsel came to hearken, named Rhoda ; and when she knew Peter's voice, she opened not the gate for gladness ;
14 but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate. And they said unto her ; Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they ; It is his
15 angel. But Peter continued knocking ; and when they had
16 opened *the door*, and saw him, they were astonished. But he beckoning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said ; Go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place.
17 Now as soon as it was day, there was no small stir among the soldiers, what was become of Peter.
18 And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that *they* should be put to death ; and he went down from Judea to Cesarea, and *there* abode.
19 And *Herod* was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon ; but they came with one accord to him, and having made Blastus the king's chamberlain their friend, desired peace ; because their country was nourished by the king's
20 *country*. And upon a set day, Herod arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them.
21 And the people gave a shout, *saying* ; *It is the voice of a*
22 *god*, and not of a man. And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not glory to God ; and
23 he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost. But
24 the word of God grew and multiplied. And Barnabas and Saul returned from Jerusalem, when they had fulfilled *their* ministry, and took with them John, whose surname was Mark.
25

XIII. Now there were in the church that was at Antioch cer-

- tain prophets and teachers, as Barnabas, and Simeon that was called Niger, and Lucius of Cyrene, and Manaen, which had been brought up with Herod the tetrarch, and
- 2 Saul. As they ministered to the Lord, and fasted, the Holy Ghost said ; Separate me Barnabas and Saul, for the work
- 3 whereunto I have called them. And when they had fasted and prayed, and laid *their* hands on them, they sent *them*
- 4 away. So they being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, departed unto Seleucia, and from thence they sailed to Cyprus.
- 5 And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews ; and they had
- 6 also John to *their* minister. And when they had gone through the whole isle unto Paphos, they found a certain sorcerer, a false prophet, a Jew, whose name *was* Bar-jesus,
- 7 which was with the deputy of the country, Sergius Paulus, a prudent man. Who called for Barnabas and Saul, and desired to hear the word of God. But Elymas the sorcerer
- 8 (for so is his name by interpretation) withstood them, seeking to turn away the deputy from the faith. Then Saul, (who
- 9 also *is called* Paul,) filled with the Holy Ghost, set his eyes on him, and said ; O full of all subtilty, and all mischief,
- 10 *thou* child of the devil, *thou* enemy of all righteousness, wilt thou not cease to pervert the right ways of the Lord ? And now behold, the hand of the Lord *is* upon thee, and thou shalt be blind, not seeing the sun for a season. And immediately there fell on him a mist and a darkness ; and he went
- 12 about seeking some to lead him by the hand. Then the deputy, when he saw what was done, believed, being astonished at the doctrine of the Lord.
- 13 Now when Paul and his company loosed from Paphos, they came to Perga in Pamphylia. And John departing from them, returned to Jerusalem. But when they departed from Perga, they came to Antioch in Pisidia, and went into the synagogue on the sabbath-day, and sat down.
- 15 And after the reading of the law and the prophets, the rulers of the synagogue sent unto them, saying ; Ye men *and* brethren, if ye have any word of exhortation for the people, say
- 16 on. Then Paul stood up, and beckoning with *his* hand, said ; Men of Israel, and ye that fear God, give audience. The God of this people chose our fathers ; and exalted the people when they dwelt as strangers in the land of Egypt, and with a high arm brought he them out of it ;
- 17

18 and about the time of forty years nourished he them in
19 the wilderness; and when he had destroyed seven nations in the land of Chanaan, he divided their land to them
20 by lot. And after that, he gave *unto them* judges, about the space of four hundred and fifty years, until Samuel the
21 prophet. And afterward they desired a king, and God gave unto them Saul the son of Cis, a man of the tribe of Benjamin, by the space of forty years; and when he had removed him, he raised up unto them David to be their king, to whom also he gave testimony, and said; I have found David the
22 *son* of Jesse, a man after mine own heart, which shall fulfil
23 all my will. Of this man's seed hath God, according to
24 *his* promise, brought unto Israel a Saviour, Jesus, when John had first preached, before his coming, the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel. And as John fulfilled his course, he said; Whom think ye that I am? I am not *he*, but behold, there cometh one after me, whose shoes of *his* feet
26 I am not worthy to loose. Men *and* brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you feareth
27 God, to you is the word of this salvation sent. For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read every sabbath-day, they have fulfilled *them* in condemning
28 *him*. And though they found no cause of death *in him*, yet
29 desired they Pilate that *he* should be slain. And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they took *him* down
30 from the tree, and laid *him* in a sepulchre. But God raised him from the dead *and he was* seen many days of them which came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who
32 are his witnesses unto the people. And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the promise *which was made* unto
33 the fathers, God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that he hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the first psalm; Thou art my Son, this day have I be-
34 gotten thee. And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead, *now* no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise; I will give you the sure mercies of David.
35 Wherefore he saith also in another *psalm*; Thou shalt not
36 suffer thy Holy One to see corruption. For David, after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption;
37 but he, whom God raised again saw no corruption.

- 38 Be it known unto you therefore, men *and* brethren, that
39 through this man is preached unto you the forgiveness of
40 sins ; and by him all that believe are justified from all things,
41 from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses.
42 Beware therefore, lest that come upon you which is spoken
43 of in the prophets ; Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and
44 perish ; for I work a work in your days, a work which ye
45 shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.
46 And when they were gone out, *the people* besought
47 that these words might be preached to them the next sabbath.
48 Now, when the congregation was broken up, many of the
49 Jews and religious proselytes followed Paul and Barnabas ;
50 who speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the
51 grace of God. And the next sabbath-day came almost the
52 whole city together to hear the word of God. But
53 when the Jews saw the multitudes, they were filled with
54 envy, and spake against those things which were spoken by
55 Paul, contradicting and blaspheming. Then Paul and Barnabas
56 waxed bold, and said ; It was necessary that the word
57 of God should first have been spoken to you ; but seeing ye
58 put it from you, and judge yourselves unworthy of everlasting
59 life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles. For so hath the Lord
60 commanded us, *saying* ; I have set thee to be a light of the
61 Gentiles, that thou shouldest be for salvation unto the ends of
62 the earth. And when the Gentiles heard this, they were
63 glad, and glorified the word of the Lord ; and as many as
64 were ordained to eternal life, believed. And the word of
65 the Lord was published throughout all the region. But
66 the Jews stirred up the devout women of rank, and the
67 chief men of the city, and raised persecution against Paul
68 and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coasts. But
69 they shook off the dust of their feet against them, and came
70 unto Iconium. And the disciples were filled with joy and
71 with the Holy Ghost.
- XIV. And it came to pass in Iconium, that they went both together into the synagogue of the Jews, and so spake, that a great multitude, both of the Jews, and also of the Greeks,
2 believed. But the unbelieving Jews stirred up the Gentiles,
3 and made their minds evil-affected against the brethren.
4 Long time therefore abode they speaking boldly in the Lord,
5 which gave testimony unto the word of his grace, granting
6 signs and wonders to be done by their hands. But the mul-

titude of the city was divided ; and part held with the Jews,
5 and part with the apostles. And when there was an assault
made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Jews, with their
6 rulers, to use *them* despitefully, and to stone them, they were
ware of *it*, and fled unto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycao-
7 nia, and unto the region that lieth round about ; and there
they preached the gospel.

8 And there sat a certain man at Lystra, impotent in his feet,
9 a cripple from his mother's womb, who never had walked.
The same heard Paul speak ; who steadfastly beholding
10 him, and perceiving that he had faith to be healed, said with
a loud voice ; Stand upright on thy feet. And he leaped and
11 walked. And when the people saw what Paul
had done, they lift up their voices, saying, in the speech
of Lycaonia ; The gods are come down to us in the likeness of
12 men. And they called Barnabas, Jupiter ; and Paul, Mer-
13 curius ; because he was the chief speaker. Then the priest of
Jupiter, which was before the city, brought oxen and garlands
unto the gates, and would have done sacrifice with the peo-
14 ple. *Which* when the apostles, Barnabas and Paul, heard of,
they rent their clothes, and ran forth among the people, crying
15 out, and saying ; Sirs, why do ye these things ? we also are
men of like passions with you, and preach unto you, that ye
should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which
made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that
16 are therein ; who in times past suffered all nations to walk in
17 their own ways ; nevertheless he left not himself without wit-
ness, in that he did good, and gave you rain from heaven, and
fruitful seasons, filling your hearts with food and gladness.
18 And with these sayings scarce restrained they the people,
19 that they had not done sacrifice unto them. And
there came thither *certain* Jews from Antioch, and Iconium ;
who persuaded the people, and having stoned Paul, drew
20 *him* out of the city, supposing he had been dead. Howbeit,
as the disciples stood round about him, he rose up, and came
into the city.

And the next day he departed with Barnabas to Derbe.
21 And when they had preached the gospel to that city, and
had taught many, they returned again to Lystra, and to Ico-
22 nium, and Antioch ; confirming the souls of the disciples,
and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we
must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God.

23 And when they had ordained them elders in every church,
and had prayed with fasting, they commended them to the
24 Lord, on whom they believed. And after they had passed
25 throughout Pisidia, they came to Pamphylia; and when they
had preached the word in Perga, they went down into Attalia;
26 and thence sailed to Antioch, from whence they had
been recommended to the grace of God, for the work which
27 they fulfilled. And when they were come, and had
gathered the church together, they rehearsed all that God
had done with them, and how he had opened the door of
28 faith unto the Gentiles. And they abode long time with the
disciples.

XV. And certain men which came down from Judea, taught
the brethren, *and said*; Except ye be circumcised after the
2 manner of Moses, ye cannot be saved. When therefore
Paul and Barnabas had no small dissension and disputation
with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and
certain other of them, should go up to Jerusalem unto the
3 apostles and elders, about this question. And being brought
on their way by the church, they passed through Phenice
and Samaria, declaring the conversion of the Gentiles; and
4 they caused great joy unto all the brethren. And when
they were come to Jerusalem, they were received of the
church, and of the apostles and elders, and they declared
5 all things that God had done with them. But there rose up
certain of the sect of the Pharisees, which believed, saying;
That it was needful to circumcise them, and to command
them to keep the law of Moses.

6 And the apostles and elders came together for to consider
7 of this matter. And when there had been much disputing,
Peter rose up and said unto them; Men *and* brethren, ye
know how that a good while ago, God made choice among
us, that the Gentiles, by my mouth, should hear the word of
8 the gospel, and believe. And God, which knoweth the
hearts, bare them witness, giving them the Holy Ghost, even
9 as *he did* unto us; and put no difference between us and
10 them, purifying their hearts by faith. Now therefore why
tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the disciples,
11 which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear? But we
believe, that through the grace of the Lord Jesus, we shall
12 be saved, even as they. Then all the multitude
kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, de-

clarifying what miracles and wonders God had wrought among
13 the Gentiles by them. And after they had held
their peace, James answered, saying; Men *and* brethren,
14 hearken unto me. Simeon hath declared how God at the
first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for
15 his name. And to this agree the words of the prophets, as
16 it is written; After this I will return, and will build again the
tabernacle of David which is fallen down; and I will build
17 again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up; that the residue
of men might seek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles,
upon whom my name is called; saith the Lord, who doth
18 these things, *which were* known from the beginning of the
19 world. Wherefore my sentence is, that we trouble not them
20 which from among the Gentiles are turned to God; but that
we write unto them that they abstain from pollutions of idols,
and *from* fornication, and *from* things strangled, and *from*
21 blood. For Moses of old time hath in every city them that
preach him, being read in the synagogues every sabbath-
day.
22 Then pleased it the apostles and elders, with the whole
church, to send chosen men of their own company to Anti-
och, with Paul and Barnabas, *namely*, Judas surnamed Bar-
23 sabbas, and Silas, chief men among the brethren; and they
wrote *letters* by them after this manner; The apostles and
elders, and brethren *send* greeting unto the brethren which
24 are of the Gentiles in Antioch, and Syria, and Cilicia. For-
asmuch as we have heard, that *certain* which went out from
us, have troubled you with words, subverting your souls,
saying, *ye must* be circumcised, and keep the law, to whom
25 we gave no *such* commandment; it seemed good unto us,
being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men unto
26 you, with our beloved Barnabas and Paul, men that have
hazarded their lives for the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.
27 We have sent therefore Judas and Silas, who shall also tell
28 *you* the same things by mouth. For it seemed good to the
Holy Ghost, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden
29 than these necessary things, that ye abstain from meats
offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled,
and from fornication; from which if ye keep yourselves, ye
30 shall do well. Fare ye well. So when they were
dismissed, they came to Antioch; and when they had gath-
ered the multitude together, they delivered the epistle.

31 *Which* when they had read, they rejoiced for the consola-
32 tion. And Judas and Silas, being prophets also themselves,
exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed
33 *them*. And after they had tarried *there* a space, they were
let go in peace from the brethren unto them that sent them.
34 Notwithstanding, it pleased Silas to abide there still.
35 Paul also and Barnabas continued in Antioch, teaching and
preaching the word of the Lord, with many others also.

36 And some days after, Paul said unto Barnabas; Let us
go again and visit the brethren, in every city where we have
37 preached the word of the Lord, *and see* how they do. And
Barnabas determined to take with them also John, whose
38 surname was Mark. But Paul thought not good to take
him with them, who departed from them from Pamphylia,
39 and went not with them to the work. And the contention
was so sharp between them, that they departed asunder one
from the other, and so Barnabas took Mark, and sailed unto
Cyprus.

40 And Paul chose Silas, and departed, being recommended
41 by the brethren unto the grace of God. And he went
XVI. through Syria and Cilicia, confirming the churches. Then
came he to Derbe and Lystra; and behold, a certain disci-
ple was there, named Timotheus, the son of a woman which
was a Jewess, and believed, but his father *was* a Greek;
2 which was well reported of by the brethren that were at
3 Lystra and Iconium. Him would Paul have to go forth
with him; and took and circumcised him, because of
the Jews which were in those quarters; for they knew all
4 that his father was a Greek. And as they went through the
cities, they delivered them the decrees for to keep, that were
ordained of the apostles and elders which were at Jerusa-
5 lem. And so were the churches established in the faith,
6 and increased in number daily.

Now, when they
had gone throughout Phrygia, and the region of Galatia, and
were forbidden of the Holy Ghost to preach the word in
7 Asia, after they were come to Mysia, they assayed to go
into Bithynia; but the Spirit of Jesus suffered them not.
8 And they passing by Mysia, came down to Troas. And a
vision appeared to Paul in the night; there stood a man of
Macedonia, and prayed him, saying; Come over into Mace-
9 donia, and help us. And after he had seen the vision, im-
10 mediately we endeavoured to go into Macedonia, assuredly

gathering, that the Lord had called us for to preach the gospel unto them.

- 11 Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight
12 course to Samothracia, and the next *day* to Neapolis ; and
from thence to Philippi, which is the chief city of that part
of Macedonia, *and* a colony. And we were in that city
13 abiding certain days. And on the sabbath we went out of
the city by a river side, where prayer was wont to be made,
and we sat down, and spake unto the women which resorted
14 *thither*. And a certain woman named Lydia, a seller of
purple, of the city of Thyatira, which worshipped God,
heard *us* ; whose heart the Lord opened, that she attended
15 unto the things which were spoken of Paul. And when she
was baptized, and her household, she besought *us*, saying ;
If ye have judged me to be faithful to the Lord, come into my
16 house, and abide *there*. And she constrained us. And
it came to pass as we went to prayer, a certain damsel pos-
sessed with a spirit of divination, met us, which brought her
17 masters much gain by soothsaying. The same followed
Paul and us, and cried, saying ; These men are the servants
of the most high God, which shew unto us the way of salva-
18 tion. And this did she many days. But Paul being grieved,
turned and said to the spirit ; I command thee in the
name of Jesus Christ to come out of her. And he came out
19 the same hour. And when her masters saw that
the hope of their gains was gone, they caught Paul and Silas,
and drew *them* into the market-place unto the rulers ;
20 and brought them to the magistrates, saying ; These men,
21 being Jews, do exceedingly trouble our city ; and teach cus-
toms which are not lawful for us to receive, neither to ob-
22 serve, being Romans. And the multitude rose up together
against them, and the magistrates rent off their clothes, and
23 commanded to beat *them* ; and when they had laid many
stripes upon them, they cast *them* into prison, charging the
24 jailor to keep them safely ; who having received such a
charge, thrust them into the inner prison, and made their feet
25 fast in the stocks. And at midnight Paul and
Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God ; and the prisoners
26 heard them. And suddenly there was a great earthquake,
so that the foundations of the prison were shaken ; and imme-
diately all the doors were opened, and every one's bands were
27 loosed. And the keeper of the prison awaking out of his

sleep, and seeing the prison-doors open, he drew out his sword, and would have killed himself, supposing that the
28 prisoners had been fled. But Paul cried with a loud voice,
29 saying ; Do thyself no harm ; for we are all here. Then he called for a light, and sprang in, and came trembling, and
30 fell down before Paul and Silas. And he brought them out,
31 and said ; Sirs, what must I do to be saved ? And they said ; Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved,
32 and thy house. And they spake unto him the word of the
33 Lord, with all that were in his house. And he took them the same hour of the night, and washed *their* stripes ; and
34 was baptized, he and all his, straightway. And when he had brought them into his house, he set meat before them, and
35 rejoiced, believing in God with all his house. And when it was day, the magistrates sent the sergeants, saying ;
36 Let those men go. And the keeper of the prison told this saying to Paul ; The magistrates have sent to let you go ;
37 now therefore depart, and go in peace. But Paul said unto them ; They have beaten us openly uncondemned, being Romans, and have cast ~~us into prison~~ ; and now do they thrust us out privily ? Nay verily ; but let them come themselves
38 and fetch us out. And the sergeants told these words unto the magistrates ; and they feared when they heard that they
39 were Romans. And they came and besought them, and brought *them* out, and desired *them* to depart out of the city.
40 And they went out of the prison, and entered into *the house* of Lydia ; and when they had seen the brethren, they comforted them, and departed.

XVII. Now when they had passed through Amphipolis, and Apollonia, they came to Thessalonica, where was a synagogue of the Jews. And Paul, as his manner was, went in unto them, and three sabbath-days reasoned with them out
2 of the scriptures, opening and alleging, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead, and that
3 this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ. And some of them believed, and consorted with Paul and Silas, and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief wo-
5 men not a few. But the Jews took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uproar ; and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people ;
6 and when they found them not, they drew Jason and certain

brethren unto the rulers of the city, crying; These that have turned the world upside down, are come hither also; 7 whom Jason hath received; and these all do contrary to the decrees of Cesar, saying that there is another king, one 8 Jesus. And they troubled the people, and the rulers of 9 the city, when they heard these things. And when they had taken security of Jason and of the other, they let them 10 go. And the brethren immediately sent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea; who coming *thither* 11 went into the synagogue of the Jews. These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures 12 daily, whether those things were so. Therefore many of them believed, also of honourable women which were Greeks, 13 and of men not a few. But when the Jews of Thessalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither also, and stirred up the people. 14 And then immediately the brethren sent away Paul, to go as it were to the sea; but Silas and Timotheus abode there 15 still. And they that conducted Paul brought him unto Athens; and receiving a commandment unto Silas and Timotheus for to come to him with all speed, they departed. 16 Now, while Paul waited for them at Athens, his spirit was stirred in him, when he saw the city wholly given to idol- 17 atry. Therefore disputed he in the synagogue with the Jews, and with the devout persons, and in the market daily 18 with them that met with him. Then certain philosophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoics, encountered him; and some said; What will this babbler say? Other some; He seemeth to be a setter forth of strange gods; because he 19 preached unto them Jesus, and the resurrection. And they took him and brought him unto Arcopagus, saying; May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou speakest, is? 20 For thou bringest certain strange things to our ears. We 21 would know therefore what these things mean. For all the Athenians and strangers which were there, spent their time in nothing else, but either to tell, or to hear some new 22 thing. Then Paul stood in the midst of Mars-hill, and said; Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things 23 ye are too superstitious. For as I passed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inscription; TO THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorant-

24 ly worship, him declare I unto you. God that made the
world, and all things therein, seeing that he is Lord of heaven
and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands, nei-
25 ther is worshipped with men's hands, as though he needed
any thing, seeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all
26 things; and hath made of one blood all nations of men for
to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined
the times appointed, and the bounds of their habita-
27 tion; that they should seek God, if haply they might feel
after him, and find him, though he be not far from every
28 one of us. For in him we live, and move, and have our
being; as certain also of your own poets have said; For we
29 are also his offspring. Forasmuch then as we are the off-
spring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is
like unto gold or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's
30 device. And the times of this ignorance God winked at,
but now commandeth all men every where to repent;
31 because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge
the world in righteousness, by that man whom he hath or-
dained, ~~whereof he hath given assurance unto all men,~~ in
32 that he hath raised him from the dead. And when
they heard of the resurrection of the dead, some mocked;
and others said; We will hear thee again of this *matter*.
33 34 So Paul departed from among them. Howbeit, certain
men clave unto him, and believed; among the which *was*
Dionysius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and
others with them.

XVIII. After these things, Paul departed from Athens, and
2 came to Corinth. And he found a certain Jew named
Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife
Priscilla, (because that Claudius had commanded all Jews to
3 depart from Rome,) and came unto them; and because he
was of the same craft, he abode with them, and wrought;
4 for by their occupation they were tent-makers. And he rea-
soned in the synagogue every sabbath, and persuaded the
5 Jews and the Greeks. And when Silas and Timotheus were
come from Macedonia, Paul was earnest in the word, and tes-
6 tified to the Jews, *that Jesus was* Christ. And when they op-
posed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook *his* raiment, and
said unto them; Your blood *be* upon your own heads; I *am*
7 clean; from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles. And he
departed thence, and entered into a certain *man's* house,

- named Justus, *one* that worshipped God, whose house joined
8 hard to the synagogue. And Crispus, the chief ruler of the
synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house; and
many of the Corinthians hearing, believed, and were bapti-
9 zed. Then spake the Lord to Paul in the night by a vision;
10 Be not afraid, but speak and hold not thy peace; for I am
with thee, and no man shall set on thee, to hurt thee; for I
11 have much people in this city. And he continued *there* a year
and six months, teaching the word of God among them.
12 And when Gallio was the deputy of Achaia, the Jews
made insurrection with one accord against Paul, and brought
13 him to the judgment-seat, saying; This *fellow* persuadeth men
14 to worship God contrary to the law. And when Paul was
now about to open *his* mouth, Gallio said unto the Jews;
If it were a matter of wrong, or wicked lewdness, O *ye* Jews,
15 reason would that I should bear with you; but if it be a
question of words and names, and *of* your law, look ye *to it*;
16 for I will be no judge of such *matters*. And he drave them
17 from the judgment-seat. Then all the Greeks took Sosthenes,
the chief ruler of the synagogue, and beat *him* before the
judgment-seat; and Gallio cared for none of those things.
18 And Paul *after this* tarried *there* yet a good while, and then
took his leave of the brethren, and sailed thence into Syria,
and with him Priscilla and Aquila, having shorn *his* head in
19 Cenchrea; for he had a vow. And he came to Ephesus,
and left them there; but he himself entered into the syna-
20 gogue, and reasoned with the Jews. When they desired
him to tarry longer time with them, he consented not;
21 but bade them farewell, saying; I must by all means keep
this feast that cometh in Jerusalem; but I will return again
22 unto you, if God will. And he sailed from Ephesus; and
when he had landed at Cesarea, and gone up and saluted the
23 church, he went down to Antioch. And after he had spent
some time *there*, he departed and went over *all* the country
of Galatia and Phrygia in order, strengthening all the dis-
ciples.
24 And a certain Jew, named Apollos, born at Alexandria,
an eloquent man, and mighty in the scriptures, came to Ephe-
25 sus. This man was instructed in the way of the Lord; and
being fervent in the spirit, he spake and taught diligently the
things of the Lord, knowing only the baptism of John.
26 And he began to speak boldly in the synagogue. Whom,

when Aquila and Priscilla had heard, they took him unto *them*, and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly. And when he was disposed to pass into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the disciples to receive him; who, when he was come, helped them much which had believed through grace. For he mightily convinced the Jews, *and that* publicly, shewing by the scriptures, that Jesus was Christ.

XIX. And it came to pass, that while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts, came to Ephesus. And finding certain disciples, he said unto them; Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him; We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost. And he said unto them; Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said; Unto John's baptism. Then said Paul; John baptized with the baptism of repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on him which should come after him; that is, on Jesus. When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jesus. And when Paul had laid *his* hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them, and they spake with tongues, and prophesied. And all the men were about twelve. And he went into the synagogue, and spake boldly, for the space of three months, disputing and persuading the things concerning the kingdom of God. But when divers were hardened, and believed not, but spake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and separated the disciples, disputing daily in the school of one Tyrannus. And this continued by the space of two years, so that all they which dwelt in Asia heard the word of the Lord, both Jews and Greeks. And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul; so that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs, or aprons, and the diseases departed from them, and the evil spirits went out. Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorcists, took upon them to call over them which had evil spirits, the name of the Lord Jesus, saying; I adjure you by Jesus, whom Paul preacheth. And there were seven sons of *one* Sceva a Jew, *and* chief of the priests, which did so. And the evil spirit answered and said; Jesus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye? And the man in whom the evil spirit was, leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed against them, so that they fled

- 17 out of that house naked and wounded. And this was known
to all the Jews and Greeks also dwelling at Ephesus ; and fear
fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jesus was magni-
18 fied. And [many that believed came, and confessed, and
19 shewed their deeds. Many also of them which used curious
arts, brought their books together, and burned them before
all men ; and they counted the price of them, and found it
20 fifty thousand *pieces* of silver. So mightily grew the word
of God, and prevailed.
- 21 After these things were ended, Paul purposed in the
spirit, when he had passed through Macedonia and Achaia,
to go to Jerusalem, saying ; After I have been there I must
22 also see Rome. So he sent into Macedonia two of them
that ministered unto him, Timotheus and Erastus, *but* he
23 himself stayed in Asia for a season. And the
24 same time there arose no small stir about that way. For a
certain man named Demetrius, a silver-smith, which made
silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gain unto the crafts-
25 men. Whom he called together, with the workmen of like
occupation, and said ; Sirs, ye know that by this craft
26 we have our wealth ; moreover, ye see and hear, that not
alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul
hath persuaded and turned away much people, saying, that
27 they be no gods which are made with hands. So that not
only this our craft is in danger to be set at nought ; but also
that the temple of the great goddess Diana should be des-
pised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all
28 Asia and the world worshippeth. And when they
heard *these sayings*, they were full of wrath, and cried out,
29 saying ; Great is Diana of the Ephesians. And the whole city
was filled with the confusion ; and having caught Gaius and
Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul's companions in travel,
30 they rushed with one accord into the theatre. And when
Paul would have entered in unto the people, the disciples
31 suffered him not. And certain of the chief of Asia, which
were his friends, sent unto him, desiring *him* that he
32 would not adventure himself into the theatre. Some there-
fore cried one thing, and some another ; for the assembly was
confused, and the more part knew not wherefore they were
33 come together. And they drew Alexander out of the multi-
tude, the Jews putting him forward ; and Alexander beck-
oned with the hand, and would have made his defence unto

34 the people. But when they knew that he was a Jew, all
with one voice about the space of two hours cried out ;
35 Great is Diana of the Ephesians. And when the
town-clerk had appeased the people, he said ; Ye men of
Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the
city of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great Diana,
36 and of the *image* which fell down from Jupiter ? Seeing
then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to
37 be quiet, and to do nothing rashly. For ye have brought
hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches,
38 nor yet blasphemers of your goddess. Wherefore, if Deme-
trius, and the craftsmen which are with him, have a matter
against any man, the law is open, and there are deputies ; let
39 them implead one another. But if ye inquire any thing con-
cerning other matters, it shall be determined in a lawful as-
40 sembly. For we are in danger to be called in question for
this day's uproar, there being no cause whereby we may
give an account of this concourse. And when he had thus
spoken, he dismissed the assembly.

XX. And after the uproar was ceased, Paul called unto him
the disciples, and embraced *them*, and departed for to go into
2 Macedonia. And when he had gone over those parts, and
had given them much exhortation, he came into Greece,
3 and *there* abode three months ; and when the Jews laid wait
for him, as he was about to sail into Syria, he purposed to
4 return through Macedonia. And Sopater of Berea, son of
Pyrrhus, accompanied him into Asia. And of the Thes-
salonians, Aristarchus and Secundus, and Gaius of Derbe,
and Timotheus ; and of Asia, Tychicus, and Trophi-
5 6 mus ; these going before, tarried for us at Troas ; and we
sailed away from Philippi, after the days of unleavened
bread, and came unto them to Troas in five days, where we
7 abode seven days. And upon the first *day*
of the week, when we came together to break bread, Paul
preached unto them, ready to depart on the morrow ; and
8 continued his speech until midnight. And there were many
lights in the upper chamber, where we were gathered togeth-
9 er. And there sat in a window a certain young man named
Eutychus, being fallen into a deep sleep, and as Paul was
long preaching, he sunk down with sleep, and fell down from
10 the third loft, and was taken up dead. And Paul went
down, and fell on him, and embracing *him*, said ; Trouble

11 not yourselves ; for his life is in him. When he therefore was
12 come up again, and had broken bread and eaten, and talked a
13 long while, even till break of day, so he departed. And
14 they brought the young man alive, and were not a little com-
15 forted. And we went before to ship, and sailed
16 unto Assos, there intending to take in Paul ; for so had he
17 appointed, minding himself to go afoot. And when he met
18 with us at Assos, we took him in, and came to Mitylene ;
19 and we sailed thence, and came the next *day* over against
20 Chios. And the next *day* we arrived at Samos ; and tarried
21 at Trogyllium, and the next *day* we came to Miletus. For
22 Paul had determined to sail by Ephesus, because he would
23 not spend the time in Asia ; for he hasted, if it were
24 possible for him, to be at Jerusalem the day of Pentecost.
25 And from Miletus he sent to Ephesus, and called the
26 elders of the church. And when they were come to him,
27 he said unto them ; Ye know, from the first day that I
28 came into Asia, after what manner I have been with you at
29 all seasons, serving the Lord with all humility of mind, and
30 with tears, and temptations, which befell me by the lying in
wait of the Jews ; and how I kept back nothing that was
profitable unto you, but have shewed you, and have taught you
publicly, and from house to house ; testifying both to the
Jews, and also to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and
faith toward our Lord Jesus Christ. And now behold, I go,
bound in the Spirit, unto Jerusalem, not knowing the things
that shall befall me there, save that the Holy Ghost witnesseth
to me in every city, saying, that bonds and afflictions abide me.
But none of these things move me, neither count I my life
dear unto myself, so that I might finish my course with joy,
and the ministry which I have received of the Lord Jesus,
to testify the gospel of the grace of God. And now behold,
I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the
kingdom of God, shall see my face no more. Wherefore I
take you to record this day, that I am pure from the blood of
all men ; for I have not shunned to declare unto you all the
counsel of God. Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and
to all the flock over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you
overseers, to feed the church of the Lord, which he hath
purchased with his own blood. For I know this, that after my
departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not
sparing the flock ; also of your own selves shall men arise

speaking perverse things, to draw away disciples after them.
31 Therefore watch, and remember, that by the space of three
years I ceased not to warn every one night and day with
32 tears. And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to
the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to
give you an inheritance among all them which are sancti-
33 fied. I have coveted no man's silver, or gold, or apparel;
34 ye yourselves know, that these hands have ministered unto
35 my necessities, and to them that were with me. I have
shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to sup-
port the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Je-
sus, how he said; It is more blessed to give than to re-
36 ceive. And when he had thus spoken, he kneeled
37 down, and prayed with them all. And they all wept sore;
38 and fell on Paul's neck, and kissed him; sorrowing most
of all for the words which he spake, that they should
see his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the
ship.

XXI. And it came to pass, that after we were gotten from them,
and had launched, we came with a straight course unto Coos,
and the *day* following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto
2 Patara. And finding a ship sailing over unto Phenicia, we
3 went aboard, and set forth. Now when we had discovered
Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and sailed into Syria, and
landed at Tyre; for there the ship was to unlade her burden.
4 And finding disciples, we tarried there seven days; who said
to Paul through the Spirit, that he should not go up to Jerusa-
5 lem. And when we had accomplished those days, we departed,
and went our way, and they all brought us on our way, with
wives and children, till *we were* out of the city; and we
6 kneeled down on the shore and prayed. And when we had
taken our leave one of another, we took ship; and they re-
7 turned home again. And when we had finished *our* course,
from Tyre we came to Ptolemais; and saluted the brethren,
8 and abode with them one day. And the next *day* we de-
parted, and came unto Cesarea; and we entered into the
house of Philip the evangelist, which was *one* of the seven,
9 and abode with him. And the same man had four daugh-
10 ters, virgins, which did prophesy. And as we
tarried *there* many days, there came down from Judea a cer-
11 tain prophet, named Agabus; and when he was come unto
us, he took Paul's girdle, and bound his own hands and feet,

- and said ; Thus saith the Holy Ghost ; So shall the Jews at Jerusalem bind the man that owneth this girdle, and shall deliver *him* into the hands of the Gentiles. And when we heard these things, both we, and they of that place, besought him not to go up to Jerusalem. Then Paul answered ; What mean ye to weep, and to break my heart ? for I am ready not to be bound only, but also to die at Jerusalem for the name of the Lord Jesus. And when he would not be persuaded, we ceased, saying ; The will of the Lord be done. And after those days we took up our carriages, and went up to Jerusalem. There went with us also *certain* of the disciples of Cesarea, and brought with them one Mnason of Cyprus, an old disciple, with whom we should lodge.
- And when we were come to Jerusalem, the brethren received us gladly. And the *day* following Paul went in with us unto James ; and all the elders were present. And when he had saluted them, he declared particularly what things God had wrought among the Gentiles by his ministry. And when they heard *it*, they glorified God ; and said unto him ; Thou seest, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which believe ; and they are all zealous of the law. And they are informed of thee, that thou teachest all the Jews which are among the Gentiles to forsake Moses, saying, that they ought not to circumcise *their* children, neither to walk after the customs. What is it therefore ? the multitude must needs come ~~together~~ ; for they will hear that thou art come. ~~Do therefore~~ this that we say to thee ; We have four men which have a vow on them. Them take, and purify thyself with them, and be at charges with them, that they may shave *their* heads, and all shall know that those things whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing, but *that* thou thyself also walkest orderly, and keepest the law. As touching the Gentiles which believe, we have written *and* concluded that they observe no such thing, save only that they keep themselves from *things* offered to idols, and from blood, and from *things* strangled, and from fornication.
- Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himself with them, entered into the temple, to signify the accomplishment of the days of purification, until that an offering should be offered for every one of them.
- And when the seven days were almost ended, the Jews

which were of Asia, when they saw him in the temple, stirred up all the people, and laid hands on him, crying out; Men of Israel, help; this is the man that teacheth all men every where against the people, and the law, and this place; and further, brought Greeks also into the temple; and hath polluted this holy place. (For they had seen before with him in the city, Trophimus, an Ephesian, whom they supposed that Paul had brought into the temple.) And all the city was moved, and the people ran together; and they took Paul and drew him out of the temple; and forthwith the doors were shut. And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that all Jerusalem was in an uproar; who immediately took soldiers and centurions, and ran down unto them. And when they saw the chief captain and the soldiers, they left beating of Paul. Then the chief captain came near and took him, and commanded him to be bound with two chains; and demanded who he was, and what he had done. And some cried one thing, some another, among the multitude. And when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the castle. And when he came upon the stairs, so it was that he was borne of the soldiers, for the violence of the people; for the multitude of the people followed after, crying; Away with him. And as Paul was to be led into the castle, he said unto the chief captain; May I speak unto thee? Who said; Canst thou speak Greek? Art not thou that Egyptian, which before these days madest an uproar, and leddest out into the wilderness four thousand men that were murderers? But Paul said; I am a man *which am* a Jew of Tarsus, *a city* in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean city; and I beseech thee suffer me to speak unto the people. And when he had given him license, Paul stood on the stairs, and beckoned with the hand unto the people; and when there was made a great silence, he spake unto them in the Hebrew tongue, saying;

XXII. Men, brethren, and fathers, hear ye my defence *which* I make now unto you. And when they heard that he spake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more silence. And he saith; I am verily a man *which am* a Jew, born in Tarsus, *a city* in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city, and taught at the feet of Gamaliel according to the perfect

manner of the law of the fathers; and was zealous toward
4 God, as ye all are this day ; and I persecuted this way unto
the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and
5 women, as also the high priest doth bear me witness, and all
the estate of the elders ; from whom also I received letters
unto the brethren, and went to Damascus, to bring them
which were there, bound unto Jerusalem, for to be punished.
6 And it came to pass, that, as I made my journey, and was
come nigh unto Damascus, about noon suddenly there shone
7 from heaven a great light round about me ; and I fell unto the
ground, and heard a voice saying unto me ; Saul, Saul, why
8 persecutest thou me ? And I answered ; Who art thou, Lord ?
And he said unto me ; I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom thou
9 persecutest. And they that were with me saw indeed the
light, and were afraid ; hut they heard not the voice of him
10 that spake to me. And I said ; What shall I do, Lord ?
And the Lord said unto me ; Arise, and go into Damascus ;
and there it shall be told thee of all things which are appoint-
11 ed for thee to do. And when I could not see for the glory of
that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me,
12 I came into Damascus. And one Ananias, a devout man ac-
cording to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which
13 dwelt *there*, came unto me, and stood, and said unto me ;
Brother Saul, receive thy sight. And the same hour I look-
14 ed up upon him. And he said ; The God of our fathers
hath chosen thee, that thou shouldest know his will, and see
that Just One, and shouldest hear the voice of his mouth ;
15 for thou shalt be his witness unto all men, of what thou hast
16 seen and heard. And now why tarriest thou ? arise
and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on his
17 name. And it came to pass, that, when I was
come again to Jerusalem, even while I prayed in the temple,
18 I was in a trance, and saw him saying unto me ; Make haste,
and get thee quickly out of Jerusalem ; for they will not re-
19 ceive thy testimony concerning me. And I said ; Lord,
they know that I imprisoned, and beat in every synagogue
20 them that believed on thee ; and when the blood of thy
martyr Stephen was shed, I also was standing by, and con-
21 senting, and kept the raiment of them that slew him. And
he said unto me ; Depart ; for I will send thee far hence un-
to the Gentiles. . .

22 And they gave him audience unto this word, and *then*
 lift up their voices, and said ; Away with such a fellow
 23 from the earth ; for it is not fit that he should live. And as
 they cried out, and cast off *their* clothes, and threw dust into
 24 the air, the chief captain commanded him to be brought into
 the castle, and bade that he should be examined by scourg-
 ing ; that he might know wherefore they cried so against him.
 25 And as they bound him with thongs, Paul said unto the cen-
 turion that stood by ; Is it lawful for you to scourge a man
 26 that is a Roman, and uncondemned ? When the centurion
 heard *that*, he went and told the chief captain, saying ; What
 27 art thou about to do ? for this man is a Roman. Then the chief
 captain came, and said unto him ; Tell me, art thou a Roman ?
 28 He said ; Yea. And the chief captain answered ; With a
 great sum obtained I this freedom. And Paul said ; But I
 29 was *free-born*. Then straightway they departed from him
 which should have examined him. And the chief captain
 also was afraid, after he knew that he was a Roman, and be-
 cause he had bound him.

30 On the ~~morrow~~, ~~because he would have known the cer-~~
 tainty wherefore he was accused of the Jêws, he loosed him,
 and commanded the chief priests and all the council to
 assemble ; and brought Paul down, and set him before
 XXIII. them.

And Paul, earnestly beholding the
 council, said ; Men *and* brethren, I have lived in all good
 2 conscience before God until this day. . . And the high
 priest Ananias commanded them that stood by him, to smite
 3 him on the mouth. Then said Paul unto him ; God shall
 smite thee, *thou* whited wall ; for sittest thou to judge me
 after the law, and commandest me to be smitten contrary to
 4 the law ? And they that stood by, said ; Revilest thou God's
 5 high priest ? Then said Paul ; I wist not, brethren, that he
 was the high priest ; for it is written ; Thou shalt not
 6 speak evil of the ruler of thy people. But when

Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the
 other Pharisees, he cried out in the council ; Men *and* breth-
 ren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee ; of the hope
 7 and resurrection of the dead I am called in question. And
 when he had so said, there arose a dissension between the
 Pharisees and the Sadducees, and the multitude was divided.
 8 For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither

- 9 angel, nor spirit; but the Pharisees confess both. And there arose a great cry; and the scribes *that were* of the Pharisees' part arose, and strove, saying; We find no evil in this man; but if a spirit or an angel hath spoken to him. . .
- 10 And when there arose a great dissension, the chief captain, fearing lest Paul should have been pulled in pieces of them, commanded the soldiers to go down, and to take him by force from among them, and to bring *him* into the castle.
- 11 And the night following the Lord stood by him, and said; Be of good cheer; for as thou hast testified of me in Jerusalem, so must thou bear witness also at Rome. And when it was day, the Jews banded together, and bound themselves under a curse, saying, that they would neither eat nor
- 13 drink till they had killed Paul; and they were more than
- 14 forty which had made this conspiracy; and they came to the chief priests and elders, and said; We have bound ourselves under a great curse, that we will eat nothing until we
- 15 have slain Paul. Now therefore ye with the council signify to the chief captain, that he bring him down unto you, as though ye would inquire something more perfectly concerning him; and we, or ever he come near, are ready to kill
- 16 him. And when Paul's sister's son heard of their lying in wait, he went and entered into the castle, and told Paul.
- 17 Then Paul called one of the centurions unto him, and said; Bring this young man unto the chief captain; for he hath a
- 18 certain thing to tell him. So he took him and brought *him* to the chief captain, and said; Paul the prisoner called me unto him, and prayed me to bring this young man unto thee, who
- 19 hath something to say unto thee. Then the chief captain took him by the hand and went *with him* aside privately,
- 20 and asked *him*; What is that thou hast to tell me? And he said; The Jews have agreed to desire thee, that thou wouldst bring down Paul to-morrow into the council, as though
- 21 they would inquire somewhat of him more perfectly. But do not thou yield unto them; for there lie in wait for him of them more than forty men, which have bound themselves with an oath, that they will neither eat nor drink till they have killed him; and now are they ready, looking for a promise
- 22 from thee. So the chief captain *then* let the young man depart, and charged *him*; See thou tell no man that thou hast
- 23 shewed these things to me. And he called unto

him two centurions, saying; Make ready two hundred soldiers to go to Cesarea, and horsemen three-score and ten, and spearmen two hundred, at the third hour of the night; and provide *them* beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring *him* safe unto Felix the governor; and he wrote a letter after this manner; Claudius Lysias, unto the most excellent governor Felix, *sendeth* greeting. This man was taken of the Jews, and should have been killed of them; then came I with an army, and rescued him, having understood that he was a Roman. And when I would have known the cause wherefore they accused him, I brought him forth into their council; whom I perceived to be accused of questions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds. And when it was told me how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I sent straightway to thee, and gave commandment to his accusers also, to say before thee what *they had* against him. Farewell.

Then the soldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought *him* by night to Antipratis. On the morrow they left the horsemen to go with him, and returned to the castle. Who, when they came to Cesarea, and delivered the epistle to the governor, presented Paul also before him. And when he had read *the letter*, he asked of what province he was, and when he understood that *he was* of Cilicia; I will hear thee, said he, when thine accusers are also come. And he commanded him to be kept in Herod's judgment-hall.

XXIV. And after five days, Ananias the high priest descended with the elders, and *with* a certain orator *named* Tertullus, who informed the governor against Paul. And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuse *him*, saying; Seeing that by thee we enjoy great quietness, and that very worthy deeds are done unto this nation by thy providence, we accept *it* always, and in all places, most noble Felix, with all thankfulness. Notwithstanding, that I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee, that thou wouldest hear us of thy clemency a few words. For we have found this man a pestilent *fellow*, and a mover of sedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ring-leader of the sect of the Nazarenes, who also hath gone about to profane the temple; whom we took, and would have judged according to our

- 7 law. But the chief captain Lysias came *upon us*, and with
8 great violence took *him* away out of our hands, commanding
his accusers to come unto thee; by examining of whom,
thyself mayest take knowledge of all these things whereof we
9 accuse him. And the Jews also joined against *him*, saying,
10 that these things were so. Then Paul, after that the
governor had beckoned unto him to speak, answered; Foras-
much as I know that thou hast been of many years a judge
unto this nation, I do the more cheerfully answer for myself;
11 because that thou mayest understand, that there are yet but
12 twelve days since I went up to Jerusalem for to worship. And
they neither found me in the temple disputing with any man,
neither raising up the people, neither in the synagogues, nor in
13 the city; neither can they prove the things whereof they now
14 accuse me. But this I confess unto thee, that after the way
which they call heresy, so worship I the God of my fathers,
believing all things which are written in the law and in the
15 prophets; and have hope toward God, which they themselves
also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both
16 of the just and unjust. And herein do I exercise myself, to
have always a conscience void of offence toward God, and
17 toward men. Now, after many years, I came to bring alms
18 to my nation and offerings. Whereupon they found me pu-
rified in the temple, neither with multitude nor with tumult.
19 But *there were* certain Jews from Asia, who ought to have
been here before thee, and object, if they had aught against
20 me. Or else let these same *here* say, what evil-doing they
21 have found in me, while I stood before the council; except
it be for this one voice, that I cried, standing among them;
Touching the resurrection of the dead I am called in question
22 by you this day. And Felix, having more perfect
knowledge of *that* way, deferred them, and said; When
Lysias the chief captain shall come down, I will know the ut-
23 termost of your matter. And he commanded a centurion to
keep him, and to let *him* have liberty, and that he should
forbid none of his acquaintance to minister, or come unto
him.
- 24 And after certain days, when Felix came with *his* wife
Drusilla, which was a Jewess, he sent for Paul, and heard him
25 concerning the faith in Christ. And as he reasoned of right-
eousness, temperance, and judgment to come, Felix trembled,

and answered; Go thy way for this time; when I have a
 26 convenient season, I will call for thee. He hoped also that
 money should have been given him of Paul, that he might
 loose him; wherefore he sent for him the ostener, and com-
 27 muned with him. But after two years Porcius
 Festus came into Felix' room; and Felix willing to shew
 the Jews a pleasure, left Paul bound.

XXV. Now when Festus was come into the province, after
 2 three days he ascended from Cesarea to Jerusalem. Then
 the high priest and the chief of the Jews informed him
 3 against Paul, and besought him, and desired favour against
 him, that he would send for him to Jerusalem; laying wait
 4 in the way to kill him. But Festus answered, that Paul
 should be kept at Cesarea, and that he himself would depart
 5 shortly *thither*. Let them therefore, said he, which among
 you are able, go down with *me*, and accuse the man, if there
 6 be any wickedness in him. And when he had
 tarried among them not more than eight or ten days, he went
 down unto Cesarea, and the next day sitting on the judgment-
 7 seat, commanded Paul to be brought. And when he was
 come, the Jews which came down from Jerusalem stood round
 about, and laid many and grievous complaints against Paul,
 8 which they could not prove; while he answered for himself;
 Neither against the law of the Jews, neither against the tem-
 ple, nor yet against Cesar have I offended any thing at all.
 9 But Festus, willing to do the Jews a pleasure, answered
 Paul, and said; Wilt thou go up to Jerusalem, and there be
 10 judged of these things before me? Then said Paul; I stand
 at Cesar's judgment-seat, where I ought to be judged. To
 the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knowest.
 11 For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy
 of death, I refuse not to die; but if there be none of these
 things wherof these accuse me, no man may deliver me unto
 12 them. I appeal unto Cesar. Then Festus, when he had
 conferred with the council, answered; Thou hast appealed
 unto Cesar; unto Cesar shalt thou go.
 13 And after certain days, king Agrippa and Bernice came
 14 unto Cesarea, to salute Festus. And when they had been
 there many days, Festus declared Paul's cause unto the king,
 saying; There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix;
 15 about whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and

the elders of the Jews informed *me*, desiring *to have* judgment against him. To whom I answered ; It is not the manner of the Romans to deliver any man *to die*, before that he which is accused have the accusers face to face, and have license to answer for himself concerning the crime laid against him. Therefore, when they were come hither, without any delay on the morrow I sat on the judgment-seat, and commanded the man to be brought forth. Against whom, when the accusers stood up, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed ; but had certain questions against him of their own superstition, and of one Jesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed *to be alive*. And because I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked *him* whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matters. But when Paul had appealed to be reserved unto the hearing of Augustus, I commanded him to be kept, till I might send him to Cesar. Then Agrippa said unto Festus ; I would also hear the man myself. To-morrow, said he, thou shalt hear him.

And on the morrow, when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pomp, and was entered into the place of hearing, with the chief captains and principal men of the city, at Festus' commandment Paul was brought forth. And Festus said ; King Agrippa, and all men which are here present with us, ye see this man about whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both at Jerusalem, and *also* here, crying that he ought not to live any longer. But when I found that he had committed nothing worthy of death, and that he himself hath appealed to Augustus, I have determined to send him. Of whom I have no certain thing to write unto my lord ; wherefore I have brought him forth before you, and specially before thee, O king Agrippa, that after examination had, I might have somewhat to write. For it seemeth to me unreasonable to send a prisoner, and not withal to signify the crimes *laid* against him.

XXVI. Then Agrippa said unto Paul ; Thou art permitted to speak for thyself. Then Paul stretched forth the hand, and answered for himself ; I think myself happy, king Agrippa, because I shall answer for myself this day before thee, touching all the things whereof I am accused of the Jews ; especially, *because I know* thee to be expert in all customs

and questions which are among the Jews. Wherefore I be-
 4 secch thee to hear me patiently. My manner of
 life from my youth, which was at the first among mine own
 5 nation at Jerusalem, know all the Jews ; which knew me
 from the beginning, (if they would testify,) that after the most
 6 straitest sect of our religion, I lived a Pharisee. And now I
 stand, and am judged for the hope of the promise made of God
 7 unto the fathers ; unto which *promise* our twelve tribes, in-
 stantly serving *God* day and night, hope to come ; for which
 hope's sake, king Agrippa, I am accused of the Jews.
 8 What ? is it thought a thing incredible with you, that God
 9 should raise the dead ? I verily thought with myself,
 that I ought to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus
 10 of Nazareth. Which thing I also did in Jerusalem ; and
 many of the saints did I shut up in prison, having received
 authority from the chief priests ; and when they were put to
 11 death, I gave my voice against *them* ; and I punished them oft
 in every synagogue, and compelled *them* to blaspheme ; and
 being exceedingly mad against them, I persecuted *them* even
 12 unto strange cities. Whereupon as I went to Da-
 mascus, with authority and commission from the chief priests,
 13 at mid-day, O king, I saw in the way a light from heaven,
 above the brightness of the sun, shining round about me, and
 14 them which journeyed with me. And when we were all
 fallen to the earth, I heard a voice speaking unto me, and
 saying in the Hebrew tongue ; Saul, Saul, why persecutest
 thou me ? *it is* hard for thee to kick against the pricks.
 15 And I said ; Who art thou, Lord ? And he said ; I am Jesus
 16 whom thou persecutest. But rise, and stand upon thy feet ;
 for I have appeared unto thee for this purpose, to make thee
 a minister and a witness both of these things which thou hast
 seen, and of those things in the which I will appear unto thee ;
 17 delivering thee from the people, and *from* the Gentiles, unto
 18 whom I send thee, to open their eyes, *and* to turn *them* from
 darkness to light, and *from* the power of Satan unto
 God, that they may receive forgiveness of sins, and
 inheriance among them which are sanctified, by faith
 19 that is in me. Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was
 20 not disobedient unto the heavenly vision ; but shewed first
 unto them of Damascus, and at Jerusalem, and throughout
 all the coasts of Judea, and *then* to the Gentiles, that they
 should repent, and turn to God, and do works meet for re-

21 pentance. For these causes the Jews caught me in the tem-
22 ple, and went about to kill *me*. Having therefore obtained
help of God, I continue unto this day, witnessing both to
small and great, saying none other things than those which
23 the prophets and Moses did say should come; that Christ
should suffer, *and* that he should be the first that should rise
from the dead, and should shew light unto the people and to
24 the Gentiles. And as he thus spake for himself,
Festus said with a loud voice; Paul, thou art beside thyself;
25 much learning doth make thee mad. But he said; I am
not mad, most noble Festus, but speak forth the words of
26 truth and soberness. For the king knoweth of these things,
before whom also I speak freely; for I am persuaded that
none of these things are hidden from him; for this thing was
27 not done in a corner. King Agrippa, believest thou the
28 prophets? I know that thou believest. Then Agrippa said
unto Paul; Almost thou persuadest me to be a Christian.
29 And Paul said; I would to God, that not only thou, but also
all that hear me this day, were both almost, and altogether
such as I am, except these bonds.
30 And the king rose up, and the governor, and Bernice, and
31 they that sat with them; and when they were gone aside,
they talked between themselves, saying; This man doeth
32 nothing worthy of death, or of bonds. Then said Agrippa
unto Festus; This man might have been set at liberty, if he
had not appealed unto Cesar.

XXVII. And when it was determined, that we should sail into
Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other prisoners unto
2 *one* named Julius, a centurion of Augustus' band. And en-
tering into a ship of Adramyttium, we launched, meaning to
sail by the coasts of Asia, *one* Aristarchus, a Macedonian of
3 Thessalonica, being with us. And the next *day* we touched
at Sidon; and Julius courteously entreated Paul, and gave
4 *him* liberty to go unto his friends to refresh himself. And
when we had launched from thence, we sailed under Cyprus,
5 because the winds were contrary. And when we had sailed
over the sea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra,
6 *a city* of Lycia. And there the centurion found
a ship of Alexandria, sailing into Italy; and he put us there-
7 in. And when we had sailed slowly many days, and scarce
were come over against Cnidus, the wind not suffering us,

8 we sailed under Crete, over against Salmone ; and hardly
passing it, came unto a place which is called the Fair Ha-
9 vens, nigh whereunto was the city of Lasea. Now when
much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous,
because the fast was now already past, Paul admonished
10 *them*, and said unto them ; Sirs, I perceive that this voyage
will be with hurt and much damage, not only of the lading
11 and ship, but also of our lives. Nevertheless, the centurion
believed the master and the owner of the ship more than
12 those things which were spoken by Paul. And because the
haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part advised
to depart thence also, if by any means they might attain to
Phenice, *and there* to winter, *which is* a haven of Crete, and
13 lieth toward the south-west and north-west. And when the
south wind blew softly, supposing that they had obtained
their purpose, loosing *thence* they sailed close by Crete.
14 But not long after there arose against it a tempestuous wind,
15 called Euryclydon. And when the ship was caught, and
16 could not bear up into the wind, we let *her* drive. And run-
ning under a certain island which is called Clauda, we had
17 much work to come by the boat ; which when they had taken
up, they used helps, undergirding the ship ; and fearing lest
they should fall into the quicksands, strake sail, and so were
18 driven. And we being exceedingly tossed with a tempest,
19 the next *day* they lightened the ship ; and the third *day* they
cast out with their own hands the tackling of the ship.
20 And when neither sun nor stars in many days appeared, and
no small tempest lay on *us*, all hope that we should be saved
21 was then taken away. But after long abstinence,
Paul stood forth in the midst of them, and said ; Sirs, ye
should have hearkened unto me, and not have loosed from
22 Crete, and to have gained this harm and loss. And now I
exhort you to be of good cheer ; for there shall be no loss
23 of *any man's* life among you, but of the ship. For there
stood by me this night the angel of God, whose I am, and
24 whom I serve, saying ; Fear not, Paul ; thou must be
brought before Cesar ; and lo, God hath given thee all them
25 that sail with thee. Wherefore, sirs, be of good cheer ; for
26 I believe God, that it shall be even as it was told me. How-
27 beit, we must be cast upon a certain island. But
when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up

and down in Adria, about midnight the shipmen deemed that
28 they drew near to some country ; and sounded, and found it
twenty fathoms ; and when they had gone a little further,
29 they sounded again, and found it fifteen fathoms ; then
fearing lest we should have fallen upon rocks, they cast four
30 anchors out of the stern, and wished for the day. And as
31 the shipmen were about to flee out of the ship, when they
had let down the boat into the sea, under colour as though
they would have cast anchors out of the foreship, Paul said
to the centurion, and to the soldiers ; Except these abide in
32 the ship, ye cannot be saved. Then the soldiers cut off the
33 ropes of the boat, and let her fall off. And while the day
was coming on, Paul besought *them* all to take meat, saying ;
This day is the fourteenth day that ye have tarried, and con-
34 tinued fasting, having taken nothing. Wherefore I pray you
to take *some* meat ; for this is for your health ; for there shall
35 not a hair perish from the head of any of you. And when he
had thus spoken, he took bread, and gave thanks to God in
presence of them all, and when he had broken it, he began
36 to eat. Then were they all of good cheer, and they also
37 took *some* meat. And we were in all in the ship, two hun-
38 dred three-score and sixteen souls. And when they had
eaten enough, they lightened the ship, and cast out the wheat
39 into the sea. And when it was day, they knew not the land ;
but they discovered a certain creek with a shore, into the
which they were minded, if it were possible, to thrust in the
40 ship. And when they had taken up the anchors, they com-
mitted *themselves* unto the sea, and loosed the rudder-bands ;
and hoised up the mainsail to the wind, and made toward
41 shore. And falling into a place where two seas met, they
ran the ship aground ; and the forepart stuck fast, and re-
mained unmoveable, but the hinder part was broken with the
42 violence of the waves. And the soldiers' counsel
was to kill the prisoners, lest any of them should swim out,
43 and escape. But the centurion, willing to save Paul, kept
them from *their* purpose, and commanded that they which
could swim, should cast *themselves* first *into the sea*, and get
44 to land ; and the rest, some on boards, and some on *broken*
pieces of the ship. And so it came to pass, that they esca-
ped all safe to land.

XXVIII. And when they were escaped, then they knew that

- 2 the island was called Melita. And the barbarous people shewed us no little kindness ; for they kindled a fire, and received us every one, because of the present rain, and because
3 of the cold. And when Paul had gathered a bundle of sticks, and laid *them* on the fire, there came a viper
4 out of the heat, and fastened on his hand. And when the barbarians saw the *venomous* beast hang on his hand, they said among themselves ; No doubt this man is a murderer, whom, though he hath escaped the sea, yet Vengeance suffer-
5 eth not to live. And he shook off the beast into the fire, and
6 felt no harm ; howbeit, they looked when he should have swollen, or fallen down dead suddenly. But after they had looked a great while, and saw no harm come to him, they
7 changed their minds, and said that he was a god. In the same quarters were possessions of the chief man of the island, whose name was Publius ; who received us, and
8 lodged us three days courteously. And it came to pass, that the father of Publius lay sick of a fever, and of a bloody-flux ; to whom Paul entered in, and prayed, and laid
9 his hands on him, and healed him. So when this was done, others also which had diseases in the island, came, and were
10 healed ; who also honoured us with many honours, and when we departed, they laded us with such things as were necessary.
- 11 And after three months we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle, whose sign was Castor
12 and Pollux. And landing at Syracuse, we tarried *there*
13 three days ; and from thence we fetched a compass, and came to Rhegium ; and after one day the south wind blew,
14 and we came the next day to Putecli ; where we found brethren, and were desired to tarry with them seven days ;
15 and so we went toward Rome. And from thence, when the brethren heard of us, they came to meet us as far as Appii-forum, and the Three Taverns ; whom when Paul saw, he thanked God, and took courage.
- 16 And when we came to Rome, the centurion delivered the prisoners to the captain of the guard ; but Paul was suffered to dwell by himself, with a soldier that kept
17 him. And it came to pass, that after three days, he called the chief of the Jews together. And when they were come together, he said unto them ; Men *and* brethren,

though I have committed nothing against the people, or customs of our fathers, yet was I delivered prisoner from Jerusalem into the hands of the Romans; who when they had examined me, would have let *me* go, because there was no cause of death in me. But when the Jews spake against *it*, I was constrained to appeal unto Cesar; not that I had aught to accuse my nation of. For this cause therefore have I called for you, to see *you*, and to speak with *you*; because that for the hope of Israel I am bound with this chain. And they said unto him; We neither received letters out of Judea concerning thee, neither any of the brethren that came shewed or spake any harm of thee. But we desire to hear of thee, what thou thinkest; for as concerning this sect, we know that every where it is spoken against. And when they had appointed him a day, there came many to him into *his* lodging; to whom he expounded and testified the kingdom of God, persuading them concerning Jesus, both out of the law of Moses, and *out of* the prophets, from morning till evening. And some believed the things which were spoken, and some believed not. And when they agreed not among themselves, they departed, after that Paul had spoken one word; Well spake the Holy Ghost by Esaias the prophet unto our fathers, saying; Go unto this people, and say; Hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and not perceive. For the heart of this people is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they closed; lest they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them. Be it known therefore unto you, that the salvation of God is sent unto the Gentiles; and *that* they will hear it. And when he had said these words, the Jews departed, and had great reasoning among themselves.

And he dwelt two whole years in his own hired house; and received all that came in unto him, preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching those things which concern the Lord Jesus Christ with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

THE
EPISTLE OF PAUL
TO THE
ROMANS.

PAUL, a servant of Jesus Christ, called *to be* an apostle,
 2 separated unto the gospel of God, (which he had promised
 3 afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures,) concerning his
 Son Jesus Christ our Lord, (which was made of the seed of
 4 David according to the flesh; and declared *to be* the Son of
 God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the
 5 resurrection from the dead, by whom we have received grace
 and apostleship for obedience to the faith among all na-
 6 tions, for his name; among whom are ye also, the called of
 7 Jesus Christ;) to all that be in Rome, beloved of God, call-
 ed *to be* saints; grace to you, and peace from God our Fa-
 ther, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

8 First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all,
 that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world.
 9 For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the
 gospel of his son, that without ceasing I make mention of
 10 you, always in my prayers making request, if by any means
 now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will
 11 of God to come unto you. For I long to see you, that I may
 impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end you may be
 12 established; that is, that I may be comforted together with
 13 you by the mutual faith both of you and me. Now I would
 not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed
 to come unto you, (but was let hitherto,) that I might have
 14 some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles. I
 am debtor both to the Greeks and to the barbarians, both
 15 to the wise and to the unwise; so, as much as in me is, I
 am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also.
 16 For I am not ashamed of the gospel; for it is the power of

God unto salvation to every one that believeth, to the Jew
17 first and also to the Greek. For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith, as it is written; The just by faith shall live.

18 For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold
19 the truth in unrighteousness. Because that which may be known of God, is manifest in them; for God hath
20 shewed *it* unto them; (for the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, *even* his eternal power
21 and Godhead;) so that they are without excuse.

Because that when they knew God, they glorified *him* not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened; professing
22 themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and
24 creeping things.

Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves; who changed
25 the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever;
26 amen. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections.

For even their women did change the natural use
27 into that which is against nature; and likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another, men with ~~men~~ *working* that which is unseemly, and ~~receiving in themselves~~ that recompense of their
28 error which was meet. And even as they did not like to retain God in *their* knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate
29 mind, to do those things which are not convenient; being filled with all unrighteousness, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, backbiters, haters of God, despiteful,
30 proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, without understanding, covenant-breakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful; who, knowing the judgment of God, (that they which commit such things are worthy of death,) not only do the same, but have pleasure
31 in them that do them.
32

II. Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art, that judgest. For wherein thou judgest another,

thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest, doest the
2 same things. But we are sure, that the judgment of God is
according to truth against them which commit such things.
3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do
such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape
4 the judgment of God? or despisest thou the riches of his
goodness, and forbearance, and long-suffering, not knowing
5 that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance? But
after thy hardness and impenitent heart, treasurest up unto
thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the
6 righteous judgment of God, who will render to every man
7 according to his deeds; to them who by patient continuance
in well-doing, seek for glory, and honour, and immortality,
8 eternal life; but unto them that are contentious, and do not
obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and
9 wrath. Tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man
10 that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile; but
glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good,
11 to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile. For there is no re-
12 spect of persons with God. For as many as have sinned
without law, shall also perish without law; and as many as
13 have sinned in the law, shall be judged by the law, (for not
the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of
14 the law shall be justified. For when the Gentiles, which
have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the
law, these having not the law, are a law unto themselves;
15 which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their
conscience also bearing witness, and *their* thoughts the mean
16 while accusing, or else excusing one another.) in the day
when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ,
17 according to my gospel. But if thou art called a Jew,
18 and retest in the law, and makest thy boast of God, and
knowest *his* will, and approvest the things that are more ex-
19 cellent, being instructed out of the law; and art confident
that thou thyself art a guide of the blind, a light of them
20 which are in darkness, an instructor of the foolish, a teacher
of babes, which hast the form of knowlege, and of the truth
21 in the law; thou then which teachest another, teachest
thou not thyself? thou that preachest, a man should not
22 steal, dost thou steal? thou that sayest, a man should not
commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou that ab-
23 horrest idols, dost thou commit sacrilege? thou that makest
thy boast of the law, through breaking the law dishonourest

24 thou God ? For the name of God is blasphemed among the
 25 Gentiles, through you, as it is written. For circumcision
 verily profiteth, if thou keep the law ; but if thou be a break-
 er of the law, thy circumcision is made uncircumcision.
 26 Therefore, if the uncircumcision keep the righteousness of
 the law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for circum-
 27 cision ? and shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if
 it fulfil the law, judge thee, who by the letter and circum-
 28 cision dost transgress the law ? For he is not a Jew, which
 is one outwardly, neither is *that* circumcision, which is out-
 29 ward in the flesh ; but he is a Jew which is one inwardly,
 and circumcision is *that* of the heart, in the spirit, *and* not
 in the letter ; whose praise is not of men, but of God.

III. What advantage then hath the Jew ? or what profit is
 2 *there* of circumcision ? Much, every way. Chiefly, because
 3 that unto them were committed the oracles of God. For
 what ? if some did not believe, shall their unbelief make the
 4 faith of God without effect ? God forbid ; yea, let God be
 true, but every man a liar, as it is written ; That thou mightest
 be justified in thy sayings, and mightest overcome when thou
 5 art judged. But if our unrighteousness commend the righte-
 ousness of God, what shall we say ? is God unrighteous who
 6 taketh vengeance ? (I speak as a man.) God forbid ; for
 7 then how shall God judge the world ? For if the truth of
 God hath more abounded through my lie unto his glory, why
 8 yet am I also judged as a sinner ? And not *rather* (as we
 be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) let
 us do evil, that good may come ? whose damnation is just.
 9 What then ? are we better *than they* ? No, in no wise ; for
 we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they
 10 are all under sin ; as it is written ; There is none righteous,
 11 no, not one ; there is none that understandeth, there is none
 12 that seeketh after God ; they are all gone out of the way,
 they are together become unprofitable ; there is none that
 13 doeth good, no, not one. Their throat is an open sepul-
 chre ; with their tongues they have used deceit. The poi-
 14 son of asps is under their lips. Whose mouth is full of curs-
 15 ing and bitterness. Their feet are swift to shed blood ;
 16 17 destruction and misery are in their ways ; and the way of
 18 peace have they not known. There is no fear of God be-
 19 fore their eyes. Now we know, that what things soever the
 law saith, it saith to them who are under the law ; that every
 mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty

20 before God. Therefore by the deeds of the law, there shall no flesh be justified in his sight : for by the law is the knowledge of sin.

21 But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets ; even the righteousness of God, *which is* by faith of Jesus Christ, unto all and upon all them that believe ; for there is no difference. For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God, being justified freely, by his grace, through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus ; whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteousness, for the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God ; to declare, *I say*, at this time his righteousness, that he might be just, and the justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.

27 Where is boasting then ? it is excluded. By what law ? of works ? nay ; but by the law of faith ; for we conclude, that a man is justified by faith, without the deeds of the law. *Is he* the God of the Jews only ? *is he* not also of the Gentiles ? yes, of the Gentiles also. Seeing it is one God which shall justify the circumcision by faith, and uncircumcision through faith. Do we then make void the law through faith ? God forbid ; yea, we establish the law.

IV. What shall we say then that Abraham our father, as
2 pertaining to the flesh, hath found ? For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath *whereof* to glory, but not before
3 God. For what saith the scripture ? Abraham believed
4 God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness. Now to him that worketh, is the reward not reckoned of grace,
5 but of debt ; but to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness ; even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without
6 works, *saying* ; Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered ; blessed is the man to
7 whom the Lord will not impute sin. *Cometh* this blessedness then upon the circumcision *only*, or upon the uncircumcision also ? For we say, that faith was reckoned to Abraham for
8 righteousness. How was it then reckoned ? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision ? Not in circumcision,
9 but in uncircumcision ; and he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which *he had*
10 yet being uncircumcised ; that he might be the father of all

them that believe, though they be not circumcised, (that
12 righteousness might be imputed unto them also,) and the father
of circumcision, to them who are not of the circumcision only,
but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father
13 Abraham, which *he had* being *yet* uncircumcised. For the
promise that he should be the heir of the world *was* not to
Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the
14 righteousness of faith. For if they which are of the law *be*
heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none
15 effect; because the law worketh wrath; for where no law
16 is, *there is* no transgression. Therefore *it is* of faith, that *it*
might be by grace; to the end the promise might be sure
to all the seed, not to that only which is of the law, but to
that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father
17 of us all; (as it is written; I have made thee a father of
many nations;) before him whom he believed, *even* God,
who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be
18 not, as though they were. Who against hope believed in
hope, that he might become the father of many nations, (ac-
cording to that which was spoken; So shall thy seed be;)
19 and being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body
now dead, when he was about a hundred years old, neither
20 yet the deadness of Sara's womb; he staggered not at the
promise of God through unbelief, but was strong in faith, giv-
21 ing glory to God, and being fully persuaded, that what he
22 had promised, he was able also to perform. And therefore
23 it was imputed to him for righteousness. Now, it was
not written for his sake alone, that *it was* imputed to him;
24 but for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on
25 him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; who was
delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our jus-
tification.

V. Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with
2 God through our Lord Jesus Christ; by whom also we
have access by faith into this grace, wherein we stand; and
3 rejoice in hope of the glory of God. And not only so, but
we glory in tribulations also, knowing that tribulation work-
4 eth patience, and patience experience, and experience
5 hope, and hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of
God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which
6 is given unto us. For when we were yet without strength, yet
7 in due time Christ died for the ungodly. For scarcely for a
righteous man will one die; yet peradventure for a good

8 man some would even dare to die ; but God commendeth
his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ
9 died for us. Much more then, being now justified by his
10 blood, we shall be saved from wrath through him. For if
when we were enemies, we were reconciled to God by the
death of his son, much more being reconciled we shall be
11 saved by his life. And not only so, but we also joy in God
through our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have now re-
ceived the atonement.

12 Wherefore as by one man sin entered into the world, and
death by sin ; and so death passed upon all men, for that all
13 have sinned. For until the law sin was in the world ; but
14 sin is not imputed when there is no law. Nevertheless,
death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that
had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression ;
15 who is the figure of him that was to come. But not as
the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence
of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and
the gift by grace, *which* is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath
16 abounded unto many. And not as *it was* by one that sinned,
so is the gift. For ~~the judgment was~~ by one to condemna-
tion ; but the free gift is of many offences unto justification.
17 For if by one man's offence death reigned by one, much
more they which receive abundance of grace, and of the gift
of righteousness, shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.
18 Therefore, as by the offence of one, *judgment came* upon all
men to condemnation ; even so by the righteousness of one,
the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.
19 For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners ;
so by the obedience of one shall many be made right-
20 eous. Moreover the law entered, that the offence
might abound ; but where sin abounded, grace did much
21 more abound ; that as sin hath reigned unto death, even
so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life,
by Jesus Christ our Lord.

VI. What shall we say then ? let us continue in sin,
2 that grace may abound ? God forbid. How shall we, that
3 are dead to sin, live any longer therein ? Know ye not, that
so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ, were bap-
4 tized into his death ? Therefore we are buried with him by
baptism into death ; that like as Christ was raised up from
the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should
5 walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted to-

gether in the likeness of his death, we shall be also *in the*
6 *likeness* of *his* resurrection ; knowing this, that our old man
is crucified with *him*, that the body of sin might be destroyed,
7 that henceforth we should not serve sin ; for he that is dead
8 is freed from sin. Now, if we be dead with Christ, we be-
9 lieve that we shall also live with him, knowing that Christ,
being raised from the dead, dieth no more ; death hath no
10 more dominion over him. For in that he died, he died un-
to sin once ; but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God.
11 Likewise reckon ye also yourselves dead indeed unto sin,
12 but alive unto God, through Jesus Christ. Let not sin
therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it ;
13 neither yield ye your members *as* instruments of unright-
eousness unto sin ; but yield yourselves unto God, as those
that are alive from the dead, and your members *as* instru-
14 ments of righteousness unto God. For sin shall not have
dominion over you ; for ye are not under the law, but under
15 grace. What then ? shall we sin, because we are not
16 under the law, but under grace ? God forbid. Know ye
not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his
servants ye are to whom ye obey, whether of sin unto
17 death, or of obedience unto righteousness ? But God be
thanked, that ye were the servants of sin, but ye have
obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was de-
18 livered you. Being then made free from sin, ye became
19 the servants of righteousness. (I speak after the manner of
men, because of the infirmity of your flesh.) For as ye
have yielded your ~~members servants~~ servants to uncleanness and to
iniquity unto iniquity ; even so now yield your members ser-
20 vants to righteousness unto holiness. For when ye were
the servants of sin, ye were free from righteousness.
21 What fruit had ye then ? *fruits* whereof ye are now
22 ashamed ; for the end of those things *is* death. But now
being made free from sin, and become servants to God, ye
have your fruit unto holiness ; and the end, everlasting life.
23 For the wages of sin *is* death ; but the gift of God *is* eternal
life, through Jesus Christ our Lord.

VII. Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that
know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man,
2 as long as he liveth ? For the woman which hath a husband,
is bound by the law to *her* husband so long as he liveth ; but
if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of *her*
3 husband. So then, if while *her* husband liveth, she be mar-

ried to another man, she shall be called an adulteress ; but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law, so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man.

4 Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ, that ye should be married to another, *even* to him who is raised from the dead, that we

5 should bring forth fruit unto God. For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the law, did

6 work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death. But now, being dead, we are delivered from the law, wherein we were held ; that we should serve in newness of spirit, and not

7 in the oldness of the letter. What shall we say then ? is the law sin ? God forbid ; nay, I had not known sin, but by the law ; for I had not known lust, except the law had

8 said ; Thou shalt not covet. But sin, taking occasion, by the commandment wrought in me all manner of concupis-

9 cence ; for without the law sin *was* dead. For I was alive without the law *once* ; but when the commandment came,

10 sin revived, and I died ; and the commandment which *was* ordained to life, I found *to be* unto death. For sin, taking occasion, by the commandment deceived me, and by it slew

12 me. Wherefore the law *is* holy, and the commandment holy, and just, and good. Was then that which is good made death unto me ? God forbid ; but sin ; that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is good, that sin by the commandment might become exceeding sinful.

14 For we know that the law is spiritual ; but I am carnal, sold under sin. For that which I do, I allow not ; for what I would, that do I not ; but what I hate, that do I. If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the law that it is

17 good. Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. For I know that in me, that is, in my flesh, dwelleth no good thing ; for to will is present with me,

19 but *how* to perform that which is good, I find not. For the good that I would, I do not ; but the evil which I would not, that I do. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that

21 do it, but sin that dwelleth in me. I find then a law, that when I would do good, evil is present with me. For I

23 delight in the law of God, after the inward man ; but I see another law in my members warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which

24 is in my members. O wretched man that I am ! who shall deliver me from the body of this death ? I thank God,

25

through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then, with the mind I myself serve the law of God ; but with the flesh the law of sin.

- VIII. *There is therefore now no condemnation to them which*
2 *are in Christ Jesus. For the law of the Spirit of life in*
3 *Christ Jesus, hath made me free from the law of sin and*
4 *death. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak*
5 *through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness*
6 *of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh ; that*
7 *the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk*
8 *not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For they that are af-*
9 *ter the flesh, do mind the things of the flesh ; but they that*
10 *are after the Spirit, the things of the Spirit. For to be car-*
11 *nally minded is death ; but to be spiritually minded is life and*
12 *peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God ; for*
13 *it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be ; so*
14 *then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. But*
15 *ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the*
16 *Spirit of God dwell in you. Now, if any man have not the*
17 *Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. And if Christ be in you,*
18 *the body is dead because of sin ; but the Spirit is life be-*
19 *cause of righteousness. But if the Spirit of him that raised*
20 *up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, he that raised up Christ*
21 *from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies, by his*
22 *Spirit that dwelleth in you. Therefore, brethren, we are*
23 *debtors not to the flesh, to live after the flesh. For if ye live*
24 *after the flesh, ye shall die ; but if ye through the Spirit do*
25 *mortify the deeds of the body, ye shall live. For as*
26 *many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God.*
27 *For ye have not received the spirit of bondage again to fear ;*
28 *but ye have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we*
29 *cry ; Abba, Father. The Spirit itself beareth witness with*
30 *our spirit, that we are the children of God. And if children,*
31 *then heirs ; heirs of God, and joint-heirs with Christ ; if so*
32 *be that we suffer with him, that we may be also glorified to-*
33 *gether.*
34 *For I reckon, that the sufferings of this present time are not*
35 *worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be reveal-*
36 *ed in us. For the earnest expectation of the creature wait-*
37 *eth for the manifestation of the sons of God. For the crea-*
38 *ture was made subject to vanity, (not willingly, but by reason*
39 *of him who hath subjected the same,) in hope that the*
40 *creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of*

corruption, into the glorious liberty of the children of God.
 22 For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travail-
 23 eth in pain together until now; and not only *they*, but our-
 selves also, which have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we
 ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, *to*
 24 *wit*, the redemption of our body. For we are saved by hope.
 But hope that is seen, is not hope; for what a man seeth,
 25 why doth he yet hope for? But if we hope for that we see
 26 not, *then* do we with patience wait for it. Likewise the
 Spirit also helpeth our infirmities; for we know not what
 we should pray for as we ought, but the Spirit itself maketh
 intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.
 27 And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind
 of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints,
 28 according to *the will of God*. And we know that all
 things work together for good, to them that love God, to
 29 them who are the called according to *his purpose*. For
 whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate *to be con-*
 formed to the image of his Son, that he might be the first-
 30 born among many brethren. Moreover, whom he did pre-
 destinate, them he also called; and whom he called, them
 he also justified; and whom he justified, them he also glori-
 31 fied. What shall we then say to these things? If God *be*
 32 for us, who *can be* against us? he that spared not his own
 Son, but delivered him up for us all; how shall he not with
 33 him also freely give us all things? Who shall lay any thing
 34 to the charge of God's elect? God that justifieth? Who
 is he that condemneth? Christ that died? yea rather, that
 is risen again? who is even at the right hand of God? who
 35 also maketh intercession for us? Who shall separate us from
 the love of Christ? *Shall* tribulation? or distress? or persecu-
 36 tion? or famine? or nakedness? or peril? or sword? (as it is
 written; For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we
 37 are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.) Nay, in all these
 things we are more than conquerors, through him that loved
 38 us. For I am persuaded, that neither death nor life, nor
 angels nor principalities, nor things present nor things to
 39 come, nor powers, nor height nor depth, nor any other crea-
 ture, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which
 is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

IX. I say the truth, in Christ; I lie not, (my conscience also
 2 bearing me witness,) in the Holy Ghost; that I have great
 3 heaviness, and continual sorrow in my heart. For I could

wish that myself were accursed from Christ, for my brethren,
4 ren, my kinsmen according to the flesh; who are Israelites,
to whom *pertaineth* the adoption, and the glory, and the
covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service of God,
5 and the promises, whose *are* the fathers, and of whom, as
concerning the flesh, Christ *came*, who is over all God
blessed for ever. Amen.

6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect;
7 for they *are* not all Israel, which are of Israel. Neither, be-
cause they are the seed of Abraham, *are they* all children,
8 but; In Isaac shall thy seed be called, that is, they which
are the children of the flesh, these *are* not the children of
God; but the children of the promise are counted for the
9 seed. For this *is* the word of promise; At this time will I
10 come, and Sara shall have a son. And not only *this*; but
when Rebecca also had conceived by one, *even* by our father
11 Isaac. For *the children* being not yet born, neither having
done any good or evil, (that the purpose of God, according
to election might stand, not of works, but of him that call-
12 eth,) it was said unto her; The elder shall serve the
13 younger; as it is written; Jacob have I loved, but Esau
have I hated.

14 What shall we say then? *is there* unrighteousness with
15 God? God forbid. For he saith to Moses; I will have
mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compas-
16 sion on whom I will have compassion. So then, it is not of
him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that
17 sheweth mercy. For the scripture saith unto Pharaoh;
Even for this same purpose have I raised thee up, that I
might shew my power in thee, and that my name might be
18 declared throughout all the earth. Therefore hath he mer-
cy on whom he will *have mercy*; and whom he will he
19 hardeneth. Thou wilt say then unto me; Why
20 doth he yet find fault? for who hath resisted his will? Nay
but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall
the thing formed say to him that formed *it*; Why hast thou
21 made me thus? Hath not the potter power over the clay, of
the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another
22 unto dishonour? *What* if God, willing to shew *his* wrath,
and to make his power known, endured with much long-
23 suffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction; and that
he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels
24 of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory? even

us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of
 25 the Gentiles; as he saith also in Osee; I will call them my
 people, which were not my people; and her beloved, which
 26 was not beloved. And it shall come to pass, *that* in the
 place where it was said unto them; *Ye are not my people,*
 there shall they be called the children of the living God.
 27 Esaias also crieth concerning Israel; Though the number of
 the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant
 28 shall be saved. For he will finish the work, and cut it short
 in righteousness; because a short work will the Lord make
 29 upon the earth. And as Esaias said before; Except the
 Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as So-
 doma, and been made like unto Gomorrah.

30 What shall we say then? That the Gentiles which fol-
 lowed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness,
 31 even the righteousness which is of faith; but Israel, which
 followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to
 32 the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because *they sought it*
not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they
 33 stumbled at that stumbling-stone, as it is written; Behold, I
 lay in Sion a *stumbling-stone, and rock of offence*; and who-
 X. soever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. Bre-

thren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for them, *is, that*
 2 *they might be saved.* For I bear them record that they have
 3 a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge. For
 they, being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going
 about to establish their own, have not submitted themselves
 4 unto the righteousness of God. For Christ *is* the end of
 5 the law, for righteousness to every one that believeth. For
 Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law;
 That the man which doeth those things shall live by them.
 6 But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise;
 Say not in thy heart; Who shall ascend into heaven? that
 7 is, to bring Christ down *from above.* Or; Who shall de-
 scend into the deep? that is, to bring up Christ again from
 8 the dead. But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, *even*
 in thy mouth, and in thy heart; that is, the word of faith,
 9 which we preach; that if thou shalt confess with thy mouth
 the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath
 10 raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. (For with
 the heart, man believeth unto righteousness; and with the
 11 mouth, confession is made unto salvation.) For the scripture
 saith; Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed.

- 12 For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek ;
 for the same Lord over all, is rich unto all that call upon him.
- 13 For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be
 14 saved. How then shall they call on him, in whom they
 have not believed ? and how shall they believe in him, of
 whom they have not heard ? and how shall they hear with-
 15 out a preacher ? and how shall they preach, except they be
 sent ? as it is written ; How beautiful are the feet of them
 that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of
 16 good things ! But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For
 17 Esaias saith ; Lord, who hath believed our report ? (So then,
 saith *cometh* by hearing ; and hearing by the word of God.)
- 18 But I say ; Have they not heard ? Yes verily, their sound
 went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the
 19 world. But I say ; Did not Israel know ? First, Moses
 saith ; I will provoke you to jealousy by *them that are no*
 20 *people, and* by a foolish nation I will anger you. But Esaias
 is very bold, and saith ; I was found of them that sought me
 not, I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.
- 21 But to Israel he saith ; All day long I have stretched forth
 my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people.
- XI. I say then ; Hath God cast away his people ? God for-
 bid ; for I also am an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, *of*
 2 the tribe of Benjamin. God hath not cast away his people
 which he foreknew. Wot ye not what the scripture saith
 of Elias ? how he maketh intercession to God against Israel ;
 3 Lord, they have killed thy prophets, and digged down thine
 4 altars ; and I am left alone, and they seek my life. But
 what saith the answer of God *unto him* ? I have reserved to
 myself seven thousand men, who have not bowed the knee
 5 to *the image* of Baal. Even so then at this present time
 also there is a remnant according to the election of grace.
- 6 And if by grace, then *is it* no more of works ; otherwise
 7 *grace is no more grace*. What then ? Israel hath not obtained
 that which he seeketh for, but the election hath obtained it ;
 8 and the rest were blinded, (according as it is written ; God
 hath given them the spirit of slumber, eyes that they should
 not see, and ears that they should not hear,) unto this day.
- 9 And David saith ; Let their table be made a snare, and a
 trap, and a stumbling-block, and a recompense unto them ;
 10 let their eyes be darkened, that they may not see ; and bow
 down their back alway.
- 11 I say then ; Have they stumbled, that they should fall ? God

forbid; but *rather* through their fall salvation is *come* unto
12 the Gentiles, for to provoke them to jealousy. Now, if the
fall of them *be* the riches of the world, and the diminishing
of them the riches of the Gentiles; how much more their
13 fulness? For I speak to you Gentiles; inasmuch as I am the
14 apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine office, if by any
means I may provoke to emulation *them which are* my flesh,
15 and might save some of them. For if the casting away of
them *be* the reconciling of the world; what *shall* the receiv-
16 ing of *them be*, but life from the dead? For if the first fruit
be holy, the lump is also *holy*; and if the root *be* holy, so
17 *are* the branches. And if some of the branches *be*
broken off, and thou, being a wild olive-tree, wert grafted in
among them, and with them partakest of the root and fat-
18 ness of the olive-tree, boast not against the branches; but if
thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee.
19 Thou wilt say then; The branches were broken off, that I
20 might be grafted in. Well; because of unbelief they were
broken off, and thou standest by faith; be not high-minded,
21 but fear. For if God spared not the natural branches,
22 perhaps he will not spare thee. Behold therefore the good-
ness and severity of God; on them which fell, severity; but
toward thee, goodness, if thou continue in *his* goodness; oth-
23 erwise thou shalt also be cut off. And they also, if
they abide not still in unbelief, shall be grafted in; for God
24 is able to graff them in again. For if thou wert cut out of
the olive-tree which is wild by nature, and wert grafted con-
trary to nature into a good olive-tree, how much more shall
these, which *be* the natural *branches*, be grafted into their
25 own olive-tree? For I would not, brethren, that ye
should be ignorant of this mystery, (lest ye should be wise
in your own conceits,) that blindness in part is happened to
26 Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles *be* come in; and so
all Israel shall be saved, as it is written; There shall come
out of Sion the deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness
27 from Jacob. And this *is* my covenant unto them, when I
28 shall take away their sins. As concerning the gospel, *they*
are enemies for your sakes; but as touching the election,
29 *they are* beloved for the fathers' sakes. For the gifts and
30 calling of God *are* without repentance. For as ye in times
past have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy
31 through their unbelief; even so have these also now not be-
lieved, that through your mercy they also may obtain mercy.

32 For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might
 33 have mercy upon all. O the depth of the riches both
 of the wisdom and knowledge of God ! How unsearchable
 34 are his judgments, and his ways past finding out ! For who
 hath known the mind of the Lord ? or who hath been his
 35 counsellor ? or who hath first given to him, and it shall be
 36 recompensed unto him again ? For of him, and through him,
 and to him are all things ; to whom be glory for ever.
 Amen.

XII. I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God,
 that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, accepta-
 2 ble unto God, *which is your reasonable service* ; and be not
 conformed to this world, but be ye transformed by the re-
 newing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good,
 3 and acceptable, and perfect will of God. For I say, through
 the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you,
 not to think of *himself* more highly than he ought to think,
 but to think soberly, according as God hath dealt to every man
 4 the measure of faith. For as we have many members in
 5 one body, and all members have not the same office ; so
 we, *being many*, are one body in Christ, and every one
 6 members one of another. Having then gifts, differing ac-
 cording to the grace that is given to us ; whether prophecy,
 7 *let us prophesy* according to the proportion of faith ; or min-
 istry, *let us wait on our ministering* ; or he that teacheth, on
 8 teaching ; or he that exhorteth, on exhortation ; he that giv-
 eth, *let him do it* with simplicity ; he that ruleth, with dili-
 9 gence ; he that sheweth mercy, with cheerfulness. *Let*
 love be without dissimulation ; abhor that which is evil,
 10 cleave to that which is good ; be kindly affectioned one to ano-
 ther with brotherly love ; in honour preferring one another ;
 11 not slothful in business ; fervent in spirit ; serving the opportu-
 12 nity ; rejoicing in hope ; patient in tribulation ; continuing in-
 13 stant in prayer ; distributing to the necessity of saints ; given
 14 to hospitality. Bless them which persecute you ; bless, and
 15 curse not. Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep
 16 with them that weep. Be of the same mind one towards
 another ; mind not high things, but condescend to men of
 17 low estate. Be not wise in your own conceits. Recom-
 pense to no man evil for evil ; provide things honest in the
 18 sight of all men ; if it be possible, as much as lieth in you,
 19 live peaceably with all men ; dearly beloved, avenge not
 yourselves ; but *rather* give place unto wrath ; for it is writ-

ten; Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord.
20 Therefore, if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink. For in so doing thou shalt heap coals of
21 fire on his head. Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

XIII. Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God; those that be, are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God; and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good; and thou shalt have
4 praise of the same; for he is the minister of God, for good to thee. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain; for he is the minister of God, a revenger to execute wrath upon him that doeth evil.
5 Wherefore ye must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but
6 also for conscience' sake. For, for this cause pay ye tribute also; for they are God's ministers, attending continually
7 upon this very thing. Render therefore to all their dues; tribute, to whom tribute is due; custom, to whom custom; fear, to whom fear; honour, to whom honour.

8 Owe no man any thing, but to love one another; for he that
9 loveth another hath fulfilled the law. For this; Thou shalt not commit adultery; Thou shalt not kill; Thou shalt not steal; Thou shalt not covet; and if *there be* any other commandment, it is briefly comprehended in this saying, namely;
10 Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. Love worketh no ill to his neighbour; therefore love is the fulfilling of the
11 law. And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep; (for now is our salvation nearer
12 than when we believed; the night is far spent, the day is at hand;) let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and
13 let us put on the armour of light. Let us walk honestly, as in the day; not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering
14 and wantonness, not in strife and envying; but put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfil the lusts thereof.

XIV. Him that is weak in the faith receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations. For one believeth that he may eat
3 all things; another, who is weak, eateth herbs. Let not him that eateth, despise him that eateth not; and let not him which eateth not, judge him that eateth; for God hath

4 received him. Who art thou that judgest another man's
servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth; yea, he
5 shall be holden up; for God is able to make him stand. One
man esteemeth one day above another, another esteemeth
every day *alike*; let every man be fully persuaded in his
6 own mind. He that regardeth the day, regardeth *it* unto
the Lord; and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord
he doth not regard *it*. And he that eateth, eateth to the
Lord, for he giveth God thanks; and he that eateth not, to
7 the Lord he eateth not, and giveth God thanks. For none of
8 us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself. For whe-
ther we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die,
we die unto the Lord. Whether we live therefore, or die,
9 we are the Lord's. For to this end Christ both died, and
lived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living.
10 But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set
at naught thy brother? for we shall all stand before the
11 judgment-seat of Christ. For it is written; *As I live*, saith
the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue
12 shall confess to God. So then every one of us shall give
13 account of himself to God. Let us not therefore
judge one another any more; but judge this rather, that no
man put a stumbling-block, or an occasion to fall in *his* bro-
14 ther's way. I know, and am persuaded by the Lord Jesus,
that *there* is nothing unclean of itself, but to him that esteem-
15 eth any thing to be unclean, to him *it* is unclean; but if thy
brother be grieved with *thy* meat, now walkest thou not cha-
ritably. Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ
16 17 died. ~~Let~~ not then your good be evil spoken of. For
the kingdom of God is not meat and drink, but righteousness,
18 and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost; for he that in this
thing serveth Christ, is acceptable to God, and approved of
19 men. Let us therefore follow after the things which make
20 for peace, and things wherewith one may edify another. For
meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed *are*
21 pure; but *it* is evil for that man who eateth with offence. *It*
is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor *any thing*
whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made
22 weak. Thou hast faith; have *it* to thyself before God.
Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which
23 he alloweth. And he that doubteth is damned if he eat, be-
cause *he eateth* not of faith; for whatsoever is not of faith is
sin. (XVI. 25) Now to him that is of power

to establish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, 26 which was kept secret since the world began, but now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made 27 known to all nations for the obedience of faith; to God only wise *be* glory through Jesus Christ, for ever; amen.

XV. We then that are strong ought to bear the infirmities of 2 the weak, and not to please ourselves; let every one of us 3 please *his* neighbour for *his* good to edification. For even Christ pleased not himself, but, as it is written; The re- 4 proaches of them that reproached thee fell on me. For whatsoever things were written aforetime, were written for our learning; that we through patience and comfort of the 5 scriptures might have hope. Now the God of patience and consolation grant you to be like-minded one toward another, 6 according to Christ Jesus; that ye may with one mind *and* one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus 7 Christ.

Wherefore receive ye one another, as 8 Christ also received you to the glory of God. Now I say, that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision, for the truth of God, to confirm the promises *made* unto the fathers; 9 and that the Gentiles might glorify God for *his* mercy, as it is written; For this cause I will confess to thee among the 10 Gentiles, and sing unto thy name. And again he saith; Re- 11 joice, ye Gentiles, with his people. And again; Praise the 12 Lord, all ye Gentiles; and laud him, all ye people. And again Esaias saith; There shall be a root of Jesse, and he that shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in him shall the 13 Gentiles trust. Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost.

14 And I myself also am persuaded of you, my brethren, that ye also are full of goodness, filled with all knowledge, able 15 also to admonish one another. Nevertheless, brethren, I have written the more boldly unto you in some sort, as putting you in mind, because of the grace that is given to me of 16 God, that I should be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the gospel of God, that the offering up of the Gentiles might be acceptable, being sanctified by the 17 Holy Ghost. I have therefore whereof I may glory through 18 Jesus Christ, in those things which pertain to God; for I will not dare to speak of any of those things which Christ hath

not wrought by me, to make the Gentiles obedient, by word
19 and deed, through mighty signs and wonders, by the power
of the Holy Spirit ; so that from Jerusalem, and round about
20 unto Illyricum, I have fully preached the gospel of Christ ; yea,
so have I strived to preach the gospel, not where Christ was
named, lest I should build upon another man's foundation ;
21 but, as it is written ; To whom he was not spoken of, they
shall see ; and they that have not heard shall under-
22 stand. For which cause also I have been much
23 hindered from coming to you. But now having no more
place in these parts, and having a great desire these many
24 years to come unto you ; ~~whenever~~ I take my journey into
Spain, I trust to see you in my journey, and to be brought on
my way thitherward by you, if first I be somewhat filled
25 with your *company*. But now I go unto Jerusalem, to minis-
26 ter unto the saints. For it hath pleased them of Macedonia
and Achaia to make a certain contribution for the poor saints
27 which are at Jerusalem. It hath pleased them verily, and
their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been made
partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is also to minis-
28 ter unto them in carnal things. When therefore I have per-
formed this, and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come
29 by you into Spain. And I am sure that when I come
unto you, I shall come in the fulness of the blessing of
30 Christ. Now I beseech you, brethren, for the Lord
Jesus Christ's sake, and for the love of the spirit, that ye
31 strive together with me in *your* prayers to God for me ; that I
may be delivered from them that do not believe in Judea,
and that ~~my~~ service which *I have* for Jerusalem, may be ac-
32 cepted of the saints ; that I may come unto you with joy by
33 the will of God, and may with you be refreshed. Now the
God of peace be with you all. Amen.

XVI. I commend unto you Phebe our sister, which is a ser-
2 vant of the church which is at Cenchrea ; that ye receive
her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her
in whatsoever business she hath need of you ; for she hath
3 been a succourer of many, and of myself also. Greet
4 Prisca and Aquila, my helpers in Christ Jesus ; (who have
for my life laid down their own necks ; unto whom not only
I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles ;)
5 likewise *greet* the church that is in their house. Salute my
well-beloved Epenetus, who is the first-fruits of Asia unto
6 Christ. Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.

7 Salute Andronicus and Junia, my kinsmen, and my fellow-
prisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were
8 in Christ before me. Greet Amplias, my beloved in the
9 Lord. Salute Urbane, our helper in Christ, and Stachys
10 my beloved. Salute Apelles, approved in Christ. Salute
11 them which are of Aristobulus' *household*. Salute Herodion, my kinsman. Greet them that be of the *household* of
12 Narcissus, which are in the Lord. Salute Tryphena and
Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved
13 Persis, which laboured much in the Lord. Salute Rufus,
14 chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine. Salute
Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the
15 brethren which are with them. Salute Philologus, and
Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints
16 which are with them. Salute one another with an holy kiss.
17 All the churches of Christ salute you. Now I beseech
you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences,
contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid
18 them. For they that are such serve not our Lord Christ,
but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches
19 deceive the hearts of the simple. For your obedience is
come abroad unto all *men*. I am glad therefore on your be-
half; but yet I would have you wise unto that which is
20 good, and simple concerning evil. And the God of peace
shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly.

The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you.

21 Timotheus, my work-fellow, and Lucius and Jason, and
22 Sosipater, my kinsmen, salute you. I Tertius, who wrote
23 *this* epistle, salute you in the Lord. Gaius mine host, and
of the whole church, saluteth you. Erastus the chamber-
lain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.

24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you all.
Amen.

THE
FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL
TO THE
CORINTHIANS.

- PAUL, called *to be* an apostle of Jesus Christ, through the
 2 will of God, and Sosthenes *our* brother, unto the church of
 God which is at Corinth, to them that are sanctified in Christ
 Jesus, called *to be* saints with all that in every place call
 upon the name of Jesus Christ our Lord, both theirs and
 3 ours ; grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father,
 and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 4 I thank my God always on your behalf, for the grace of
 5 God which is given you by Jesus Christ ; that in every
 thing ye are enriched by him, in all utterance, and in all
 6 knowledge, (even as the testimony of Christ was confirmed
 7 in you ;) so that ye come behind in no gift, waiting for the
 8 coming of our Lord Jesus Christ ; who shall also confirm
 you ~~unto the end,~~ *that ye may be* blameless in the day of our
 9 Lord Jesus Christ. God *is* faithful, by whom ye were called
 to the fellowship of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord.
- 10 Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord
 Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and *that* there
 be no divisions among you, but *that* ye be perfectly joined
 together in the same mind and in the same judgment.
- 11 For it hath been declared unto me of you, my brethren, by
 them *which are of the house* of Chloe, that there are conten-
 12 tions among you. Now this I say, that every one of you
 saith ; I am of Paul ; and I, of Apollos ; and I, of Cephas ;
 13 and I, of Christ. Is Christ divided ? was Paul crucified for
 14 you ? or were ye baptized in the name of Paul ? I thank
 God that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius ;
 15 lest any should say that I had baptized in mine own name.

16 And I baptized also the household of Stephanas ; besides, I know not whether I baptized any other.

17 For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the gospel ; not with wisdom of words, lest the cross of Christ
18 should be made of none effect. For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish, foolishness, but unto us which
19 are saved, it is the power of God. For it is written ; I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the
20 understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise ? where is the scribe ? where is the disputer of this world ? Hath not
21 God made foolish the wisdom of this world ? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them
22 that believe. For the Jews require signs, and the Greeks seek after wisdom ; but we preach Christ crucified, unto
23 the Jews a stumbling-block, and unto the Gentiles foolishness ; but unto them which are called, both Jews and
24 Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men ; and the
25 weakness of God is stronger than men. For ye see

your calling, brethren ; how that not many wise men after the
27 flesh, not many mighty, not many noble *are called* ; but God hath chosen the foolish things of the world, to confound the
wise ; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world, to
28 confound the things which are mighty ; and base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen,
yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that
29 30 are ; that no flesh should glory before God. But of him are ye in Christ Jesus, who of God is made unto us wisdom,
and righteousness, and sanctification, and redemption ;
31 that, according as it is written ; He that glorieth, let him glory in the Lord.

II. And I, brethren, when I came to you, came not with excellency of speech, or of wisdom, declaring unto you the testimony of God. For I determined not to know any thing
2 among you, save Jesus Christ, and him crucified. And I was with you in weakness, and in fear, and in much trembling ; and my speech and my preaching *was* not with enticing words of wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit,
3 and of power ; that your faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the power of God.

6 Howbeit, we speak wisdom among them that are perfect ; yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the princes of this

7 world, that come to nought ; but we speak the wisdom of
God in a mystery, *even* the hidden *wisdom*, which God or-
8 dained before the world, unto our glory ; which none of the
princes of this world knew ; (for had they known *it*, they
9 would not have crucified the Lord of glory ;) but, as it is
written ; Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have en-
tered into the heart of man, the things which God hath pre-
10 pared for them that love him. But God hath revealed *them*
unto us by his Spirit ; for the Spirit searcheth all things, yea,
11 the deep things of God. For what man knoweth the things
of a man, save the spirit of man which is in him ? even so
the things of God knoweth no man, but the Spirit of God.
12 Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the
Spirit which is of God, that we might know the things that
13 are freely given to us of God ; which things also we speak,
not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which
the Spirit teacheth, comparing spiritual things with spiritual.
14 But the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of
God ; for they are foolishness unto him, neither can he know
15 *them* ; because they are spiritually discerned. But he that
is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no
16 man. For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he
may instruct him ? But we have the mind of Christ.

III. And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spirit-
2 ual, but as unto carnal, *even* as unto babes in Christ. I have
fed you with milk, not with meat ; for hitherto ye were not
3 able to *bear it*. Neither yet now are ye able ; for ye are
yet carnal. For whereas *there is* among you envying, and
strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men ?
4 For while one saith ; I am of Paul ; and another ; I am of
Apollos ; are ye not carnal ?
5 Who then is Paul, and who is Apollos ? Ministers by
whom ye believed, even as the Lord gave to every man.
6 I have planted, Apollos watered, but God gave the increase ;
7 so then, neither is he that planteth any thing, neither he that
8 watereth, but God that giveth the increase. Now he that
planteth and he that watereth are one ; and every man shall
9 receive his own reward, according to his own labour. For
we are labourers together with God ; ye are God's husband-
10 ry, *ye are* God's building. According to the grace of God
which is given unto me, as a wise master-builder, I have
laid the foundation ; and another buildeth thereon ; but let
11 every man take heed, how he buildeth thereupon. For

other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is
12 Jesus Christ. Now if any man build upon this foundation,
13 gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble ; every
man's work shall be made manifest ; for the day shall de-
clare it, because it shall be revealed by fire ; and the fire
14 shall try every man's work, of what sort it is. If any man's
work shall abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall re-
15 ceive a reward ; if any man's work shall be burned, he shall
suffer loss ; but he himself shall be saved, yet so as by fire.
16 Know ye not, that ye are the temple of God, and *that* the
17 Spirit of God dwelleth in you ? If any man defile the temple
of God, him shall God destroy ; for the temple of God is
18 holy, which *temple* ye are. Let no man deceive himself ;
if any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let
19 him become a fool, that he may be wise. For the wisdom
of this world is foolishness with God ; for it is written ; He
20 taketh the wise in their own craftiness ; and again ; The
Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.
21 Therefore let no man glory in men ; for all things are yours,
22 whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or
23 death, or things present, or things to come ; all are yours ; and
IV. *ye are Christ's ; and Christ is God's.*

Let a man
so account of us, as of the ministers of Christ, and
2 stewards of the mysteries of God. Moreover, it is re-
3 quired in stewards, that a man be found faithful. But with
me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you,
or of man's judgment ; yea, I judge not mine own self ;
4 (for I know nothing by myself, yet am I not hereby justi-
5 fied ;) but he that judgeth me is the Lord. Therefore
judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who
both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and
will make manifest the counsels of the hearts ; and then shall
every man have praise of God.

6 And these things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred
to myself, and to Apollos, for your sakes, that ye might
learn in us not to think of *men* above that which is written,
that no one of you be puffed up for one against another.
7 For who maketh thee to differ *from another* ? and what
hast thou that thou didst not receive ? now if thou didst re-
ceive *it*, why dost thou glory, as if thou hadst not received
8 *it* ? Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as
kings without us ; and I would to God ye did reign, that we
9 also might reign with you. For I think, that God hath set

forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death, for we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and
 10 to men. *We are fools for Christ's sake, but ye are wise in Christ; we are weak, but ye are strong; ye are honourable, but we are despised.* Even unto this present hour we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted,
 12 and have no certain dwelling-place, and labour, working with our own hands; being reviled, we bless; being persecuted,
 13 we suffer it; being defamed, we entreat; we are made as the filth of the world, and are the off-scouring of all things
 14 unto this day. I write not these things to shame you,
 15 but as my beloved sons I warn you. For though ye have ten thousand instructors in Christ, yet *have ye not many fathers*; for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the gospel.
 16 17 Wherefore, I beseech you, be ye followers of me. For this cause have I sent unto you Timotheus, who is my beloved son, and faithful in the Lord, who shall bring you into remembrance of my ways which be in Christ, as I teach
 18 every where in every church. Now some are puffed up,
 19 as though I would not come to you. But I will come to you shortly, if the Lord will, and will know, not the speech
 20 of them which are puffed up, but the power; for the
 21 kingdom of God is not in word, but in power. What will ye? shall I come unto you with a rod, or in love, and in the spirit of meekness?

V. It is reported commonly *that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not even among the Gentiles, that*
 2 *one should have his father's wife.* And are ye puffed up? and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this
 3 deed might be taken from among you? For I verily, as absent in body, but present in spirit, have judged already as though I were present, *concerning him that hath so done*
 4 *this deed, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, (when ye are gathered together and my spirit,) with the power of our*
 5 *Lord Jesus Christ to deliver such a one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the*
 6 *day of the Lord Jesus.* Your glorying is not good. Know ye not, that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump?
 7 Purge out the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened; for even Christ our passover is sacrificed
 8 for us. Therefore let us keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness, but with
 9 the unleavened *bread of sincerity and truth.* I wrote

- unto you in an epistle, not to company with fornicators.
- 10 Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; for then
- 11 must ye needs go out of the world. But now I have written unto you, not to keep company, if any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a railer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner; with such a one,
- 12 no, not to eat. For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? Do not ye judge them that are within?
- 13 But them that are without, God will judge. Put away from among yourselves that wicked person.
- VI. Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to
- 2 law before the unjust, and not before the saints? Do ye not know, that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the small-
- 3 est matters? Know ye not, that we shall judge angels? how
- 4 much more, things that pertain to this life? If then ye have judgments of things pertaining to this life, do ye set them to
- 5 judge who are least esteemed in the church? I speak to your shame; is it so, that there is not a wise man among
- 6 you? no, not one that shall be able to judge between his
- 7 brethren? but brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers? Now therefore it is utterly a fault
- 8 in you, that ye go to law one with another. Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather *suffer*
- 9 *yourselves* to be defrauded? Nay, you do wrong, and defraud, and that *your* brethren. Know ye not, that the un-
- 10 righteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived; neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor
- 11 thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. And such were some of you; but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the spirit of our God.
- 12 All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient; all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought
- 13 under the power of any. Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats; but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the
- 14 Lord for the body; and God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by his own power. Know ye not,
- 15 that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then

take the members of Christ, and make *them* the members of
16 a harlot? God forbid. What! know ye not, that he which
is joined to a harlot is one body? (for two, saith he, shall
17 be one flesh;) but he that is joined unto the Lord is one
18 spirit? Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth, is
without the body; but he that committeth fornication, sin-
19 neth against his own body. What! know ye not, that your
body is the temple of the Holy Ghost *which* is in you,
20 which ye have of God, and ye are not your own? For
ye are bought with a price; therefore glorify God in your
body.

VII. Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me, *it*
2 is good for a man not to touch a woman; nevertheless, *to*
avoid fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let
3 every woman have her own husband. Let the husband
render unto the wife *her* due; and likewise also the wife
4 unto the husband. The wife hath not power of her own
body, but the husband; and likewise also the husband hath
5 not power of his own body, but the wife. Defraud ye not
one the other, except *it be* with consent for a time, that ye
may give yourselves to prayer; and be together again, that
6 Satan tempt you not for your incontinency. But I speak
7 this by permission, *and* not of commandment. For I would
that all men were even as I myself; but every man hath his
proper gift of God, one after this manner, and another after
8 that. I say therefore to the unmarried and widows; *it is*
9 good for them, if they abide even as I; but if they cannot
contain, let them marry; for it is better to marry than to
10 burn. And unto the married I command, *yet* not I, but the
11 Lord, let not the wife depart from *her* husband, (but and if
she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to *her*
12 husband;) and let not the husband put away *his* wife. But
to the rest speak I, not the Lord; if any brother hath a wife
that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let
13 him not put her away; and the woman which hath a husband
that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let
14 her not leave him. For the unbelieving husband is sancti-
fied by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the
husband; else were your children unclean, but now are they
15 holy. But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart; a bro-
ther or a sister is not under bondage in such cases. But God
16 hath called us to peace. For what knowest thou, O wife,
whether thou shalt save *thy* husband? or how knowest thou,

17 O man, whether thou shalt *save thy* wife? But as the Lord
hath distributed to every man, as God hath called every one,
18 so let him walk. And so ordain I in all churches. Is any
man called being circumcised, let him not become uncircum-
cised; is any called in uncircumcision, let him not become
19 circumcised. Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is
nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God.
20 Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was
21 called. Art thou called *being* a servant, care not for it; but
22 if thou mayest be made free, use it rather. For he that is
called in the Lord, *being* a servant, is the Lord's freeman;
likewise also he that is called *being* free, is Christ's servant.
23 Ye are bought with a price; he not ye the servants of men.
24 Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide
25 with God. Now concerning virgins, I have no
commandment of the Lord; yet I give my judgment, as one
26 that hath obtained mercy of the Lord to be faithful. I sup-
pose therefore, that this is good for the present distress; *I*
27 say, that it is good for a man so to be. Art thou bound un-
to a wife, seek not to be loosed; art thou loosed from a
28 wife, seek not a wife. But and if thou marry, thou hast not
sinned; and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned; never-
theless, such shall have trouble in the flesh; but I spare you.
29 But this I say, brethren, the time henceforth is short; so that
both they that have wives, should be as though they had none;
30 and they that weep, as though they wept not; and they
that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not; and they that buy,
31 as though they possessed not; and they that use this world
as not abusing it. For the fashion of this world passeth
32 away. But I would have you without carefulness. He
that is unmarried, careth for the things that belong to the
33 Lord, how he may please the Lord; but he that is married,
careth for the things that are of the world, how he may
34 please *his* wife. There is difference *also* between a wife
and a virgin; the unmarried woman careth for the things of
the Lord, that she may be holy, both in body and in spirit;
but she that is married, careth for the things of the world,
35 how she may please *her* husband. And this I speak for
your own profit; not that I may cast a snare upon you, but
for that which is comely, and that ye may attend upon the
36 Lord without distraction. But if any man think that he be-
haveth himself uncomely toward his virgin, if she pass the
flower of *her* age, and need so require; let him do what he

37 will, he sinneth not ; let them marry. Nevertheless, he that
standeth steadfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath
power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart
38 that he will keep his virgin, doeth well. So then he that
giveth *her* in marriage doeth well ; but he that giveth *her*
39 not in marriage doeth better. The wife is bound as
long as her husband liveth ; but if her husband be dead, she
is at liberty to be married to whom she will, only in the
40 Lord. But she is happier if she so abide, after my judgment ; and I think also that I have the spirit of God.

VIII. Now, as touching things offered unto idols, we know ;
(for we all have knowledge ; knowledge puffeth up, but
2 charity edifieth ; and if any man think that he knoweth any
3 thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know ; but if
4 any man love God, the same is known of him ;) as concerning
therefore the eating of those things that are offered
in sacrifice unto idols, we know, that an idol is nothing in the
5 world, and that *there is* none other God, but one. For
though there be that are called Gods, whether in heaven or
6 in earth ; (as there be gods many, and lords many ;) but to
us *there is but* one God, the Father, of whom *are* all things,
and we in him ; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom *are*
7 all things, and we by him. Howbeit, *there is* not in every
man that knowledge ; for some with conscience of the idol
unto this hour eat *it* as a thing offered unto an idol, and their
8 conscience, being weak, is defiled. But meat commendeth
us not to God ; for neither if we eat, are we the
9 better ; neither if we eat not, are we the worse. But take
heed, lest by any means *this liberty* of yours become a
10 stumbling-block to them that are weak. For if any man
see thee, which hast knowledge, sit at meat in the idol's temple,
shall not the conscience of him which is weak be emboldened
to eat those things which are offered to idols ?
11 and through thy knowledge shall the weak brother perish,
12 for whom Christ died ? But so, when ye sin against the brethren,
and wound their weak conscience, ye sin against
13 Christ. Wherefore, if meat make my brother to offend, I
will eat no flesh while the world standeth, lest I make my
brother to offend.

IX. Am I not free ? am I not an apostle ? Have I not seen
Jesus Christ our Lord ? are not ye my work in the Lord ?
2 If I be not an apostle unto others, yet doubtless I am to you ;
3 for the seal of mine apostleship are ye in the Lord ; mine

4 answer to them that do examine me is this. Have we not
5 power to eat and to drink? have we not power to lead
about a sister, a wife, as well as other apostles, and *as* the
6 brethren of the Lord, and Cephas? Or I only and Barna-
7 bas, have not we power to forbear working? Who goeth a
warfare at any time at his own charges? who planteth a
vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feed-
8 eth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock? Say I
these things as a man? or saith not the law the same also?
9 For it is written in the law of Moses; Thou shalt not muzzle
the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth
10 God take care for oxen? or saith he it altogether for our
sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, *this* is written, that he that
plougheth should plough in hope; and that he that thresheth
11 *should thresh* in hope of partaking. If we have sown unto
you spiritual things, *is it* a great thing if we shall reap your
12 carnal things? If others be partakers of *this* power over you,
are not we rather? Nevertheless we have not used this
power; but suffer all things, lest we should hinder the gos-
13 pel of Christ. Do ye not know, that they which minister
about holy things live of *the things* of the temple? and they
14 which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar? Even
so hath the Lord ordained that they which preach the gos-
15 pel should live of the gospel. But I have used none of
these things. Neither have I written these things, that it
should be so done unto me; for *it were* better for me to die,
16 than that any man should make my glorying void. For
though I preach the gospel, I have nothing to glory of; for
necessity is laid upon me; yea, woe is unto me, if I preach
17 not the gospel. For if I do this thing willingly, I have a
reward; but if against my will, a dispensation of *the gospel*
18 is committed unto me. What is my reward then? *Verily*
that, when I preach the gospel, I may make the gospel of
Christ without charge, that I abuse not my power in the
19 gospel. For though I be free from all *men*, yet have I made
20 myself servant unto all, that I might gain the more; and un-
to the Jews I became as a Jew, that I might gain the Jews;
to them that are under the law, as under the law, (not be-
ing myself under the law,) that I might gain them that are un-
21 der the law; to them that are without law, as without law, (be-
ing not without law to God, but under the law to Christ,) that
22 I might gain them that are without law; to the weak became
I as weak, that I might gain the weak; I am made all

things to all *men*, that I might by all means save some.
 23 And this I do for the gospel's sake, that I may be partaker
 24 thereof with *you*. Know ye not, that they which
 run in a race, run all, but one receiveth the prize? So run,
 25 that ye may obtain. And every man that striveth for the
 mastery is temperate in all things; now they *do it*, to obtain
 26 a corruptible crown; but we, an incorruptible. I therefore
 so run, not as *uncertainly*; so fight I, not as one that beat-
 27 eth the air; but I keep under my body, and bring *it* into
 subjection, lest that by any means, when I have preached to
 others, I myself should be a cast-away.

X. For, brethren, I would not that ye should be igno-
 rant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all
 2 passed through the sea, and were all baptized unto Moses in
 3 the cloud and in the sea, and did all eat the same spiritual
 4 meat, and did all drink the same spiritual drink; (for they
 drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them; and that
 5 Rock was Christ;) but with many of them God was not
 well pleased; for they were overthrown in the wilder-
 6 ness. Now these things were our examples, to the
 intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted.
 7 Neither be ye idolaters, as *were* some of them; as it is
 written; The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up
 8 to play. Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them
 committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand.
 9 Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted,
 10 and were destroyed of serpents. Neither murmur ye, as
 some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the
 11 destroyer. Now all these things happened unto them for ex-
 amples; and they are written for our admonition, upon whom
 12 the ends of the world are come. Wherefore let him that
 13 thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall. There hath no
 temptation taken you but such as is common to man; but
 God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above
 that ye are able, but will with the temptation also make a way
 14 to escape, that ye may be able to bear it. Wherefore,
 15 my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry. I speak as to wise
 16 men, judge ye what I say. The cup of blessing which we
 bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ?
 the bread which we break, is it not the communion of the
 17 body of Christ? For we *being* many are one bread,
 and one body; for we are all partakers of that one bread.
 18 Behold Israel after the flesh; are not they which eat of the

19 sacrifices, partakers of the altar? What say I then? that
the idol is any thing? or that which is offered in sacrifice
20 to idols is any thing? But *I say*, that the things which the
Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God;
and I would not that ye should have fellowship with devils.
21 Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of
devils; ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of
22 the table of devils. Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy?
are we stronger than he?
23 All things are lawful, but all things are not expedient; all
24 things are lawful, but all things edify not. Let no man seek
25 his own, but another's *wealth*. Whatsoever is sold in the
shambles, *that* eat, asking no question for conscience'
26 sake; for the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof.
27 If any of them that believe not bid you *to a feast*, and ye be
disposed to go, whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no
28 question for conscience' sake. But if any man say unto
you; 'This is offered in sacrifice unto idols; eat not for his
29 sake that shewed it, and for conscience' sake. Conscience,
I say, not thine own, but of the other. For why is my liberty
30 judged of another *man's* conscience? if I by grace be a
partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give
31 thanks? Whether therefore ye eat or drink, or whatsoever
32 ye do, do all to the glory of God. Give none offence, nei-
ther to the Jews, nor the Gentiles, nor to the church of God;
33 even as I please all *men* in all *things*, not seeking mine own
XI. profit, but the *profit* of many, that they may be saved. Be
ye followers of me, even as I also *am* of Christ.

2 Now I praise you, brethren, that ye remember me in all
things, and keep the ordinances, as I delivered *them* to you.
3 But I would have you know, that the head of every man is
Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the
4 head of Christ is God. Every man praying or prophesying
5 having *his* head covered, dishonoureth his head. But every
woman that prayeth or prophesieth with *her* head uncovered
dishonoureth her head; for that is even all one as if she
6 were shaven. For if the woman be not covered, let her
also be shorn; but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn
7 or shaven, let her be covered. For a man indeed ought not
to cover *his* head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of
8 God; but the woman is the glory of the man; for the man
9 is not of the woman, but the woman of the man; neither
was the man created for the woman, but the woman for the

10 man. For this cause ought the woman to have power on
11 *her* head, because of the angels. Nevertheless, neither is
the woman without the man, neither the man without the
12 woman, in the Lord. For as the woman is of the man, even
so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God.
13 Judge in yourselves; is it comely that a woman pray unto
14 God uncovered? doth not even nature itself teach you,
15 that if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him? but
if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her? for *her* hair
16 is given her for a covering. But if any man seem to be
contentious, we have no such custom, neither the churches
of God.

17 Now in this that I declare *unto you*, I praise *you* not, that ye
18 come together not for the better, but for the worse. For
first of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that
19 there be divisions among you; and I partly believe it; for
there must be also heresies among you, that they which are
20 approved may be made manifest among you. When ye
come together therefore into one place, *this* is not to eat the
21 Lord's supper; for in eating every one taketh before *other*
his own supper, and one is hungry, and another is drunken.
22 What! have ye not houses to eat and to drink in? or de-
spise ye the church of God, and shame them that have not?
What shall I say to you? shall I praise you? In this I
23 praise *you* not. For I have received of the Lord, that

which also I delivered unto you, that the Lord Jesus, the
24 *same* night in which he was betrayed, took bread, and when
he had given thanks, he brake *it*, and said; This is my body,
which is broken for you; this do in remembrance of me.
25 After the *same* manner also *he took* the cup, when he had
supped, saying; This cup is the new testament in my blood;
this do ye, as oft as ye drink *it*, in remembrance of me.
26 For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do
27 shew the Lord's death, till he come. Wherefore, whosoever
shall eat the bread, and drink the cup of the Lord unwor-
28 thily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord. But
let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of *that* bread,
29 and drink of *that* cup; for he that eateth and drinketh un-
worthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not dis-
30 cerning the Lord's body. For this cause many *are* weak
31 and sickly among you, and many sleep. For if we would
32 judge ourselves, we should not be judged; but when we are
judged of the Lord, we are chastened, that we should not

33 be condemned with the world. Wherefore, my brethren,
34 when ye come together to eat, tarry one for another. If any man hunger, let him eat at home ; that ye come not together unto condemnation. And the rest will I set in order when I come.

XII. Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not
2 have you ignorant. Ye know, that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led ;
3 wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God, calleth Jesus accursed ; and *that* no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy
4 Ghost.

Now there are diversities of gifts, but the
5 same Spirit ; and there are differences of administrations,
6 but the same Lord ; and there are diversities of operations,
7 but the same God which worketh all in all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal ;
8 for to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom, to
9 another the word of knowledge, by the same Spirit ; to another faith, by the same Spirit ; to another the gifts of
10 healing, by the same Spirit ; to another the working of miracles, to another prophecy, to another discerning of spirits, to another *divers* kinds of tongues, to another the interpretation of tongues. But all these worketh that one and the self-same Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he
12 will.

For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many,
13 are one body ; so also is Christ. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body ; whether *we be* Jews or Gentiles, whether *we be* bond or free ; and have been all made to
14 drink into one Spirit. For the body is not one member,
15 but many. If the foot shall say ; Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body ; is it therefore not of the body ?
16 And if the ear shall say ; Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body ; is it therefore not of the body ? If the whole body *were* an eye, where *were* the hearing ? if the whole *were* hearing, where *were* the smelling ? But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body,
19 as it hath pleased him. And if they were all one member, where *were* the body ? But now *are they* many members,
21 yet but one body. The eye cannot say unto the hand ; I have no need of thee ; nor again the head to the feet ; I have
22 no need of you. Nay, much more those members of the
23 body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary ; and

those *members* of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and
 24 our uncomely *parts* have more abundant comeliness; for our comely *parts* have no need. But God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to
 25 that *part* which lacked, that there should be no schism in the body, but *that* the members should have the same care
 26 one for another. And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured, all
 27 the members rejoice with it. Now ye are the body of
 28 Christ, and members in particular. And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues. *Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles? have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret?* But covet earnestly the best gifts. And yet shew I unto you a more excellent way.

XIII. Though I speak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become *as* sounding brass, or a
 2 tinkling cymbal. And though I have *the gift of* prophecy, and understand all mysteries and all knowledge, and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have
 3 not charity, I am nothing. And though I bestow all my goods to feed *the poor*, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.
 4 Charity suffereth long, *and* is kind; charity envieth not;
 5 charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil, rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth, beareth all things, believeth all things,
 7 hopeth all things, endureth all things. Charity never faileth; but whether *there be* prophecies, they shall fail; whether *there be* tongues, they shall cease; whether *there be* knowledge, it shall vanish away. For we know in part, and we
 10 prophesy in part; but when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away. When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child; but when I became a man, I put away childish
 12 things. For now we see through a glass, darkly, but then face to face; now I know in part, but then shall I know even as also I am known. And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.

XIV. Follow after charity; and desire spiritual *gifts*, but
2 rather that ye may prophesy. For he that speaketh in an
unknown tongue, speaketh not unto men, but unto God; for
no man understandeth *him*, howbeit in the spirit he speaketh
3 mysteries; but he that prophesieth, speaketh unto men to
edification, and exhortation, and comfort. He that speak-
eth in an *unknown* tongue, edifieth himself; but he that
5 prophesieth, edifieth the church. I would that ye all spake
with tongues, but rather that ye prophesied; for greater is
he that prophesieth than he that speaketh with tongues, ex-
cept he interpret, that the church may receive edifying.
6 Now, brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues,
what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by
revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by
7 doctrine? And even things without life giving sound,
whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the
sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped?
8 for if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall pre-
9 pare himself to the battle? So likewise ye, except ye
utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall
it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the air.
10 There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the
11 world, and none of them is without signification. There-
fore, if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be unto
him that speaketh, a barbarian; and he that speaketh *shall be*
12 a barbarian unto me. Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are
zealous of spiritual *gifts*, seek that ye may excel to the edi-
13 fying of the church. Wherefore, let him that speaketh in
14 an *unknown* tongue, pray that he may interpret. For if I
pray in an *unknown* tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my un-
15 derstanding is unfruitful. What is it then? I will pray
with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also;
I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the under-
16 standing also. Else, when thou shalt bless with the spirit,
how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned say
amen at thy giving of thanks? seeing he understandeth
17 not what thou sayest. For thou verily givest thanks well;
18 but the other is not edified. I thank God, I speak with
19 tongues more than you all; yet in the church I had rather
speak five words with my understanding, that *by my voice* I
might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an *un-*
20 *known* tongue. Brethren, be not children in understanding;
howbeit, in malice be ye children, but in understanding be

21 men. In the law it is written ; With *men of* other tongues
and other lips will I speak unto this people, and yet for all
22 that will they not hear me, saith the Lord. Wherefore
tongues are for a sign, not to them that believe, but to them
that believe not ; but prophesying *serveth* not for them that
23 believe not, but for them which believe. If therefore the
whole church be come together into one place, and all speak
with tongues, and there come in *those that are* unlearned, or
24 unbelievers, will they not say that ye are mad ? But if all
prophecy, and there come in one that believeth not, or *one*
25 unlearned, he is convinced of all, he is judged of all, the se-
crets of his heart are made manifest ; and so *falling down on*
his face, he will worship God, and report that God is in you
26 of a truth. How is it then, brethren ? When ye come to-
gether, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath
a tongue, hath a revelation, hath an interpretation ; let all
27 things be done unto edifying. If any man speak in an *un-*
known tongue, *let it be* by two, or at the most, *by three*, and
28 *that* by course ; and let one interpret. But if there be no
interpreter, let him keep silence in the church ; and let him
29 speak to himself, and to God. Let the prophets speak two
30 or three, and let the other judge ; if *any thing* be revealed
31 to another that sitteth by, let the first hold his peace. For
ye may all prophecy one by one, that all may learn, and all
32 may be comforted. And the spirits of the prophets are sub-
33 ject to the prophets ; for God is not *the author* of confusion,
34 but of peace. As in all churches of the saints, let
your women keep silence in the churches ; for it is not per-
mitted unto them to speak, but *they are commanded* to be
35 under obedience, as also saith the law. And if they will
learn any thing, let them ask their husbands at home ; for it
36 is a shame for women to speak in the church. What !
came the word of God out from you ? or came it unto you
37 only ? If any man think himself to be a prophet, or
spiritual, let him acknowledge that the things that I write
38 unto you are the commandments of the Lord ; but if any
39 man be ignorant, let him be ignorant. Wherefore, brethren,
covet to prophecy, and forbid not to speak with tongues ; but
40 let all things be done decently, and in order.

XV. Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which
I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and
2 wherein ye stand, by which also ye are saved ; (if ye keep
in memory what I preached unto you ;) unless ye have be-

3 lieved in vain. For I delivered unto you first of all, that
4 which I also received ; how that Christ died for our sins, ac-
5 cording to the scriptures ; and that he was buried, and that
6 he arose again the third day, according to the scriptures ;
7 and that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve.
8 After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at
9 once, of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but
10 some are fallen asleep. After that, he was seen of James ;
11 then of all the apostles. And last of all, he was seen of me
12 also, as of one born out of due time. (For I am the least of
13 the apostles ; that am not meet to be called an apostle, be-
14 cause I persecuted the church of God. But by the grace
15 of God I am what I am ; and his grace which *was bestowed*
16 upon me, was not in vain, but I laboured more abundantly
17 than they all ; yet not I, but the grace of God which was
18 with me.) Therefore whether it *were* I or they, so we
19 preach, and so ye believed. Now if Christ be
20 preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among
21 you, that there is no resurrection of the dead ? But if there
22 be no resurrection of the dead, then is Christ not risen ;
23 and if Christ be not risen, then ~~is~~ our preaching vain, and
24 your faith is also vain. Yea, and we are found false wit-
25 nesses of God ; ~~because we have testified of God that he~~
26 raised up Christ, whom he raised not up, if so be that the
27 dead rise not. For if the dead rise not, then is not Christ
28 raised ; and if Christ be not raised, your faith is vain ; ye
29 are yet in your sins ; then they also which are fallen asleep
30 in Christ are perished. If in this life only we have hope
31 in Christ, we are of all men most miserable. But now is
32 Christ risen from the dead, the first fruits of them that slept.
33 For since by man *came* death, by man *came* also the resur-
34 rection of the dead. For as in Adam all die, even so in
35 Christ shall all be made alive. But every man in his own
36 order ; Christ the first-fruits, afterward they that are Christ's,
37 at his coming ; then *cometh* the end, when he shall have
38 delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father, when
39 he shall have put down all rule, and all authority, and power.
40 For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his
41 feet. The last enemy *that* shall be destroyed is death ;
42 for he hath put all things under his feet. But when he
43 saith, all things are put under *him*, it is manifest that he is
44 excepted which did put all things under him. And when
45 all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also

- himself be subject unto him that put all things under him,
 29 that God may be all in all. Else what shall they
 do, which are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not at
 30 all? why are they then baptized for them? And why
 31 stand we in jeopardy every hour? I protest by your re-
 joicing which I have in Christ Jesus our Lord, I die daily.
 32 If after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at
 Ephesus, what advantageth it me? if the dead rise not, let
 33 us eat and drink; for to-morrow we die. Be not deceived;
 34 evil communications corrupt good manners. Awake to
 righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowl-
 edge of God; I speak *this* to your shame.
 35 But some *man* will say; How are the dead raised up?
 36 and with what body do they come? *Thou* fool; that which
 37 thou sowest is not quickened except it die; and that which
 thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but
 bare grain, it may chance, of wheat, or of some other *grain*;
 38 but God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every
 39 seed his own body. All flesh is not the same flesh; but
there is one kind of flesh of men, another flesh of beasts,
 40 another of fishes, *and* another of birds. *There are* also
 celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial; but the glory of the
 celestial is one, and the *glory* of the terrestrial is another.
 41 *There is* one glory of the sun, and another glory of the
 moon, and another glory of the stars; for *one* star differeth
 42 from *another* star in glory. So also *is* the resurrection of the
 dead. It is sown in corruption, it is raised in incorruption;
 43 it is sown in dishonour, it is raised in glory; it is sown in
 44 weakness, it is raised in power; it is sown a natural body, it
 is raised a *spiritual* body. There is a natural body, and there
 45 is a *spiritual* body. And so it is written; The first man
 Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam *was made* a
 46 quickening spirit. Howbeit, that *was* not first which is spi-
 ritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is
 47 spiritual. The first man *is* of the earth, earthy; the second
 48 man *is* the Lord from heaven. As *is* the earthy, such *are*
 they also that are earthy; and as *is* the heavenly, such *are*
 49 they also that are heavenly; and as we have borne the im-
 age of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the hea-
 50 venly. Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood can-
 not inherit the kingdom of God, neither doth corruption
 inherit incorruption.
 51 Behold, I shew you a mystery. We shall not all sleep;

52 but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump. (For the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be
 53 changed.) For this corruptible must put on incorruption,
 54 and this mortal *must* put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, than shall be brought to pass the saying that is written; Death is swallowed up in victory.
 55 O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?
 56 The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is
 57 the law. But thanks *be* to God, which giveth us the victory,
 58 through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

XVI. Now concerning the collection for the saints, as I have
 2 given order to the churches of Galatia, even so do ye. Upon the first *day* of the week let every one of you lay by him, treasuring up as *God* hath prospered him; that there be no
 3 gatherings when I come. And when I come, whomsoever ye shall approve, them will I send with letters, to bring your
 4 liberality unto Jerusalem; and if it be meet that I go also,
 5 they shall go with me. Now I will come unto you, when I shall pass through Macedonia; (for I do pass through Macedonia;) and it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with
 6 you, that ye may bring me on my journey whithersoever I
 7 go. For I will not see you now by the way; for I trust to
 8 tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit. But I will tarry
 9 at Ephesus until Pentecost; for a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and *there are* many adversaries.
 10 Now if Timotheus come, see that he may be with you without fear; for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I also
 11 *do*; let no man therefore despise him. But conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me; for I look for
 12 him with the brethren. As touching *our* brother Apollos, I greatly desired him to come unto you with the brethren; but his will was not at all to come at this time; but he will come when he shall have convenient
 13 time. Watch ye, stand fast in the faith, quit you
 14 like men, be strong; let all your things be done with charity.
 15 I beseech you, brethren; ye know the house of Stephanas, that it is the first fruits of Achaia, and *that* they
 16 have addicted themselves to the ministry of the saints; that

- ye submit yourselves unto such, and to every one that helpeth
 17 with *us*, and laboureth. I am glad of the coming of
 Stephanas, and Fortunatus, and Achaicus, for that which
 18 was lacking on your part, they have supplied ; for they have
 refreshed my spirit and yours. Therefore acknowledge ye
 19 them that are such. The churches of Asia salute you.
 Aquila and Priscilla salute you much in the Lord, with the
 20 church that is in their house. All the brethren greet you.
 Greet ye one another with a holy kiss.
 21 The salutation of *me* Paul with mine own hand.
 22 If any man love not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be
 23 Anathema ; Maran-atha. The grace of our Lord Jesus
 24 Christ *be* with you. My love *be* with you all in Christ
 Jesus. Amen.

THE

SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL

TO THE

CORINTHIANS.

- PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and
 Timothy *our* brother, unto the church of God which is at
 2 Corinth, with all the saints which are in all Achaia ; grace
be to you and peace from God our Father, and *from* the
 Lord Jesus Christ.
 3 Blessed *be* God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus
 Christ, the Father of mercies and the God of all comfort,
 4 who comforteth us in all our tribulation, that we may be able
 to comfort them which are in any trouble, by the comfort
 5 wherewith we ourselves are comforted of God ; for as the
 sufferings of Christ abound in us, so our consolation also
 6 aboundeth by Christ. And whether we be afflicted, it is

- for your consolation and salvation ; or whether we be comforted, *it is* for your consolation, which is effectual in the enduring of the same sufferings which we also suffer ; (and our hope of you is steadfast ;) knowing, that as ye are partakers of the sufferings, so *shall ye be* also of the consolation.
- 8 For we would not, brethren, have you ignorant of our trouble which came to us in Asia, that we were pressed out of measure above strength, insomuch that we despaired even of life ; but we had the sentence of death in ourselves, that we should not trust in ourselves, but in God which raiseth the dead ; who delivered us from so great a death, and doth deliver ; in whom we trust that he will yet deliver *us*, you also helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift *bestowed* upon us by the means of many persons, thanks may be given by many on our behalf.
- 12 For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, (not with fleshly wisdom, but by the grace of God,) we have had our conversation in the world, and more abundantly to you-wards. For we write none other things unto you, than what ye read or acknowledge ; and I trust ye shall acknowledge even to the end, as also ye have acknowledged us in part ; for we are your rejoicing, even as ye also *are* ours, in the day of the Lord Jesus.
- 15 And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, that ye might have a second benefit ; and to pass by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judea. When I therefore was thus minded, did I use lightness ? or the things that I purpose, do I purpose according to the flesh, that with me there should be yea, yea, and nay, nay ? But *as* God is true, our word toward you was not yea and nay. For the Son of God, Jesus Christ, who was preached among you by us, (*even* by me, and Silvanus, and Timotheus,) was not yea and nay, but in him was yea, (for all the promises of God in him *are* yea, and in him amen,) unto the glory of God by us. Now he which stablisheth us with you in Christ, and hath anointed us, is God ; who hath also sealed us, and given the earnest of the Spirit in our hearts.
- 23 Moreover, I call God for a record upon my soul, that to spare you I came not as yet unto Corinth ; not for that we have dominion over your faith, **II.** but are helpers of your joy ; for by faith ye stand. But

I determined this with myself, that I would not come
 2 again to you in heaviness. For if I make you sorry, who
 is he then that maketh me glad, but the same which is made
 3 sorry by me ? And I wrote this same unto you, lest, when I
 came, I should have sorrow from them of whom I ought to
 rejoice ; having confidence in you all, that my joy is *the joy*
 4 of you all. For out of much affliction and anguish of heart
 I wrote unto you with many tears, not that ye should be grieved,
 but that ye might know the love, which I have more
 abundantly unto you.

5 But if any have caused grief, he hath not grieved me, but
 6 in part, that I may not overcharge, *he hath grieved* you all.
 Sufficient to such a man is this punishment, which *was inflicted*
 7 of many ; so that contrariwise, ye *ought* rather to forgive
him, and comfort *him*, lest perhaps such a one should be
 8 swallowed up with overmuch sorrow. Wherefore I beseech
 9 you that ye would confirm *your* love toward him. For to
 this end also did I write, that I might know the proof of you,
 10 whether ye be obedient in all things. To whom ye forgive
 any thing, I *forgive* also ; for if I forgave any thing, what-
 11 ever I forgave, for your sakes *forgave I it*, in the person of
 Christ ; lest Satan should get an advantage of us ; for we
 are not ignorant of his devices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to *preach* Christ's
 13 gospel, and a door was opened unto me of the Lord, I had
 no rest in my spirit, because I found not Titus my brother ;
 but taking my leave of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 Now thanks *be* unto God, which always causeth us to triumph
 in Christ, and maketh manifest the savour of his
 15 knowledge by us in every place. For we are unto God a
 sweet savour of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them
 16 that perish ; to the one *we are* the savour of death unto
 death ; and to the other the savour of life unto life. And
 17 who is sufficient for these things ? For we are not as many,
 which corrupt the word of God ; but as of sincerity, but as
 III. of God, in the sight of God, speak we in Christ.

Do we begin again to commend ourselves ? or need we, as
 some *others*, epistles of commendation to you, or *letters* of
 2 commendation from you ? Ye are our epistle, written in our
 3 hearts, known and read of all men ; *forasmuch as ye are*
 manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us,
 written not with ink, but with the spirit of the living God, not

4 in tables of stone, but in fleshly tables of the heart. And
 5 such trust have we through Christ to God-ward; not that
 we are sufficient of ourselves, to think any thing, as of our-
 6 selves, but our sufficiency is of God; who also hath made
 us able ministers of the new testament, not of the letter, but
 of the spirit; for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.
 7 But if the ministration of death in letters, engraven in
 stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not
 steadfastly behold the face of Moses, for the glory of his
 8 countenance, which *glory* was to be done away; how shall
 9 not the ministration of the Spirit be rather glorious? For if
 the ministration of condemnation *be* glory; much more doth
 10 the ministration of righteousness exceed in glory. For even
 that which was made glorious had no glory in this respect, by
 11 reason of the glory that excelleth. For if that which is
 done away *was* glorious; much more that which remaineth
 12 is glorious. Seeing then that we have such hope,
 13 we use great plainness of speech; and not as Moses, *which*
 put a vail over his face, that the children of Israel could not
 14 steadfastly look to the end of that which is abolished. (But
 their minds were blinded; for until this day remaineth the
 same vail in the reading of the old testament, it not being re-
 15 vealed that it is done away in Christ; but even unto this day,
 16 when Moses is read, the vail is upon their heart; nevertheless,
 when it shall turn to the Lord, the vail shall be taken away.
 17 Now the Lord is that Spirit; and where the spirit of the
 18 Lord is, there is liberty.) But we all, with open face be-
 holding as in a glass the glory of the Lord, are changed into
 the same image from glory to glory, *even* as by the Spirit of
 the Lord.

IV. Therefore, seeing we have this ministry, as we have re-
 2 ceived mercy, we faint not; but have renounced the hidden
 things of dishonesty, not walking in craftiness, nor handling
 the word of God deceitfully, but, by manifestation of the
 truth, commending ourselves to every man's conscience, in
 3 the sight of God. But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to
 4 them that are lost; in whom the God of this world hath
 blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light
 of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God,
 5 should shine *unto them*. For we preach not ourselves, but
 Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Je-
 6 sus' sake. For God, who commanded the light to shine out
 of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to *give* the light of

the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.

7 But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the ex-
 8 cellency of the power may be of God, and not of us; *we*
 9 *are* troubled on every side, yet not distressed; *we are* per-
 10 plexed, but not in despair; persecuted, but not forsaken;
 11 cast down, but not destroyed; always bearing about in the
 12 body the dying of Jesus, that the life also of Jesus might be
 13 made manifest in our body. For we which live are alway
 14 delivered unto death for Jesus' sake, that the life also of Je-
 15 sus might be made manifest in our mortal flesh. So
 16 then death worketh in us, but life in you. We having the
 17 same spirit of faith, according as it is written; I believed,
 18 and therefore have I spoken; we also believe, and there-
 19 fore speak; knowing, that he which raised up the Lord Je-
 20 sus, shall raise up us also by Jesus, and shall present us with
 21 you. For all things *are* for your sakes, that the grace
 22 abounding in many might increase thanksgiving to the
 23 glory of God. For which cause we faint not; but

24 though our outward man perish, yet the inward *man* is re-
 25 newed day by day. For our light affliction, which is but
 26 for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding *and*
 27 eternal weight of glory; while we look not at the things
 28 which are seen, but at the things which are not seen; for the
 29 things which are seen *are* temporal; but the things which
 30 *are* not seen *are* eternal. For we know that, if our earthly
 31 house of *this* tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building
 32 of God, a house not made with hands, eternal, in the hea-
 33 vens. For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed
 34 upon with our house which is from heaven. If so be that
 35 being clothed, we shall not be found naked. For we that
 36 are in *this* tabernacle do groan, being burdened; not for that
 37 we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality
 38 might be swallowed up of life. Now, he that hath wrought
 39 us for the self-same thing is God; who also hath given unto
 40 us the earnest of the Spirit. Therefore *we are* always con-
 41 fident, knowing that, whilst we are at home in the body, we
 42 are absent from the Lord; (for we walk by faith, not by
 43 sight;) we are confident, *I say*, and willing rather to be ab-
 44 sent from the body, and to be present with the Lord; where-
 45 fore we labour, that, whether present or absent, we may be
 46 accepted of him. For we must all appear before the
 47 judgment-seat of Christ, that every one may receive the

things *done* in *his* body, according to that he hath done, whether *it be* good or bad.

- 11 Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we persuade men, but we are made manifest unto God; and I trust
12 also are made manifest in your consciences. For we commend not ourselves *again* unto you, but give you occasion to glory on our behalf; that ye may have somewhat to *answer* them which glory in appearance, and not
13 in heart. For whether we be beside ourselves, *it is* to God; or whether we be sober, *it is* for your cause. For the love of Christ constraineth us, because we thus judge,
15 that if one died for all, then were all dead; and *that* he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose
16 again. Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh; yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh,
17 yet now henceforth know we *him* no more. Therefore, if any man *be* in Christ, *he is* a new creature; old things are passed away, behold, all things are become new. And all things
18 are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us *the* ministry of reconciliation.
19 For God was in Christ, reconciling the world unto himself, not imputing their trespasses unto them, and hath
20 committed unto us the word of reconciliation. Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech *you* by us; we pray *you* in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled
21 to God. For he hath made him *to be* sin for us, who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in
VI. him. We then, *as* workers together *with him*, beseech

- 2 *you* also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain; (for he saith; I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee. Behold, now *is* the accepted time, behold, now *is* the day of salvation;)
3 giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not
4 blamed; but in all *things* approving ourselves as the ministers of God, in much patience in afflictions, in necessities, in
5 distresses, in stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours,
6 in watchings, in fastings; by pureness, by knowledge, by long-suffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned,
7 by the word of truth, by the power of God; by the armour
8 of righteousness on the right hand and on the left, by honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report; as deceivers,
9 and yet true; as unknown, and yet well known; as dying,

10 and behold, we live; as chastened, and not killed; as
 sorrowful, yet always rejoicing; as poor, yet making
 many rich; as having nothing, and yet possessing all
 11 things. O ye Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you,
 12 our heart is enlarged. Ye are not straightened in us; but ye
 13 are straightened in your own bowels. Now for a recompense
 in the same (I speak as unto *my* children,) be ye also enlarg-
 14 ed. Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbeliev-
 ers; for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteous-
 15 ness? and what communion hath light with darkness? and
 what concord hath Christ with Beliar? or what part hath he
 16 that believeth with an infidel? and what agreement hath
 the temple of God with idols? For ye are the temple of
 the living God; as God hath said; I will dwell in them, and
 walk in *them*; and I will be their God, and they shall be my
 17 people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be
 ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean *thing*;
 18 and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and
 ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

VII. Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us
 cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit,
 perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

2 Receive us; we have wronged no man, we have cor-
 3 rupted no man, we have defrauded no man. I speak not
this to condemn *you*; for I have said before, that ye are in
 4 our hearts to die and live with *you*. Great is my boldness
 of speech toward you, great is my glorying of you; I
 am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in all our trib-
 5 ulation. For, when we were come into Macedonia,
 our flesh had no rest, but we were troubled on every side;
 6 without *were* fightings, within *were* fears. Nevertheless
 God, that comforteth those that are cast down, comforted us
 7 by the coming of Titus; and not by his coming only, but by
 the consolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when
 he told us your earnest desire, your mourning, your fervent
 8 mind toward me; so that I rejoiced the more. For though
 I made you sorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did
 repent; for I perceive that the same epistle hath made you
 9 sorry, though *it were* but for a season. Now I rejoice, not
 that ye were made sorry, but that ye sorrowed to repentance;
 for ye were made sorry after a godly manner, that ye might
 10 receive damage by us in nothing. For godly sorrow work-
 eth repentance to salvation not to be repented of; but the

11 sorrow of the world worketh death. For behold, this self-same thing, that ye sorrowed after a godly sort, what carefulness it wrought in you ; yea, *what* clearing of yourselves, yea, *what* indignation, yea, *what* fear, yea, *what* vehement desire, yea, *what* zeal, yea, *what* revenge ; in all *things* ye
12 have approved yourselves to be clear in this matter. Wherefore, though I wrote unto you, *I did it* not for his cause that had done the wrong, nor for his cause that suffered wrong ; but that our care for you in the sight of God might appear
13 unto you. Therefore we were comforted in your comfort ; yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the
14 joy of Titus, because his spirit was refreshed by you all ; for if I have boasted any thing to him of you, I am not ashamed ; but as we spake all things to you in truth, even so our
15 boasting, which *I made* before Titus, is found a truth ; and his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilst he remembereth the obedience of you all, how with fear and
16 trembling ye received him. I rejoice that I have confidence in you in all *things*.

VIII. Moreover, brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of
2 God bestowed on the churches of Macedonia ; how that in a great trial of affliction, the abundance of their joy, and their deep poverty, abounded unto the riches of their liberality ;
3 for to *their* power, (I bear record,) yea, and beyond *their*
4 power, *they were* willing of themselves, praying us with much entreaty, *that we would receive* the gift, and *take upon us*
5 the fellowship of the ministering to the saints ; and *this they did*, not as we hoped, but first gave their own selves to the
6 Lord, and unto us by the will of God ; insomuch that we desired Titus, that as he had begun, so he would also finish
7 in you the same grace also. Therefore, as ye abound in every *thing*, (*in faith, and utterance, and knowledge, and in all diligence, and in your love to us,*) see that ye abound in
8 this grace also ; I speak not by commandment, but by occasion of the forwardness of others, and to prove the sincerity of your love ; (for ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich ;) and herein I give *my* advice. For this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not only to do, but also to be forward a
11 year ago ; now therefore perform the doing of *it*, that as *there was* a readiness to will, so *there may be* a performance
12 also out of that which ye have. For if there be first a wil-

ling mind, *it is* accepted according to that a man hath, *and*
 13 not according to that he hath not. For *I mean* not that
 14 other men be eased, and you burdened, but by an equality;
that now at this time your abundance *may be a supply* for
 their want, that their abundance also may be *a supply* for
 15 your want, that there may be equality; as it is written; He
 that *had gathered* much, had nothing over; and he that *had*
 16 *gathered* little, had no lack. But thanks be to God,
 which put the same earnest care into the heart of Titus for
 17 you; for indeed he accepted the exhortation; but being
 18 more forward, of his own accord he went unto you. And
 we have sent with him the brother, whose praise *is* in the
 19 gospel throughout all the churches; and not *that* only, but
 who was also chosen of the churches to travel with us with
 this grace, which is administered by us to the glory of the
 20 same Lord, and *declaration of* our ready mind; avoiding
 this, that no man should blame us in this abundance which is
 21 administered by us; for we provide for honest things, not only
 22 in the sight of the Lord, but also in the sight of men. And
 we have sent with them our brother, whom we have often-
 times proved diligent in many things, but now much more
 diligent, upon the great confidence which *I have* in you.
 23 Whether *any do inquire* of Titus, *he is* my partner and fel-
 lowhelper concerning you; or our brethren *be inquired of*,
they are the messengers of the churches, *and* the glory of
 24 Christ. Wherefore shew ye to them, before the churches,
 the proof of your love, and of our boasting on your behalf.

IX. For as touching the ministering to the saints, it is super-
 2 fluous for me to write to you. For I know the forwardness
 of your mind, for which I boast of you to them of Macedo-
 nia, that Achaia was ready a year ago; and your zeal hath
 3 provoked very many. Yet have I sent the brethren, lest
 our boasting of you should be in vain in this behalf; that, as
 4 I said, ye may be ready; lest haply if they of Macedonia
 come with me, and find you unprepared, we (that we say
 not, ye) should be ashamed in this same confidence.
 5 Therefore I thought it necessary to exhort the brethren, that
 they would go before unto you, and make up beforehand
 your bounty, whereof ye had notice before, that the same
 might be ready, as *a matter of* bounty, and not as *of* cove-
 6 tousness. But this *I say*, he which soweth sparingly, shall
 reap also sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully, shall
 7 reap also bountifully. Every man according as he purpos-

eth in his heart, *so let him give*; not grudgingly, or of necessity; for God loveth a cheerful giver. And God is able to make all grace abound toward you, that ye, always having all sufficiency in all *things*, may abound to every good work; as it is written; He hath dispersed abroad, he hath given to the poor; his righteousness remaineth for ever. Now, he that ministereth seed to the sower, and bread for food, shall minister and multiply your seed sown, and increase the fruits of your righteousness; being enriched in every thing to all bountifulness, which causeth through us thanksgiving to God; for the administration of this service not only supplieth the want of the saints, but is abundant also by many thanksgivings unto God; whiles by the experiment of this ministration they glorify God for your professed subjection unto the gospel of Christ, and for your liberal distribution unto them and unto all *men*, and by their prayer for you, which long after you, for the exceeding grace of God in you. Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift.

X. Now I Paul myself beseech you, by the meekness and gentleness of Christ, who in presence *am* base among you, but being absent *am* bold toward you; but I beseech *you*, that I may not be bold, when I am present, with that confidence, wherewith I think to be bold against some, which think of us as if we walked according to the flesh. For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh, (for the weapons of our warfare *are* not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds,) casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ, and having in a readiness to revenge all disobedience, when your obedience is fulfilled. Do ye look on things after the outward appearance? If any man trust to himself that he is Christ's, let him of himself think this again, that as he is Christ's, even so *are* we. For though I should boast somewhat more of our authority, which the Lord hath given us, for edification, and not for your destruction, I should not be ashamed. That I may not seem as if I would terrify you by letters; (for *his* letters, say they, *are* weighty and powerful; but *his* bodily presence *is* weak, and *his* speech contemptible;) let such a one think this, that such as we are in word by letters when we are absent, such *will we be* also in deed when we are present. For we dare not make ourselves of the number or

compare ourselves with some that commend themselves ;
but they, measuring themselves by themselves, and compar-
13 ing themselves amongst themselves, are not wise. But we
will not boast of things without *our* measure, but according to
the measure of the rule which God hath distributed to us, that
14 we should reach even unto you. For we stretch not our-
selves beyond *our measure*, as though we reached not unto
you ; (for we are come as far as to you also in *preaching* the
15 gospel of Christ;) not boasting of things without *our* mea-
sure, *that is* of other men's labours, but having hope, when
your faith is increased, that we shall be enlarged by you ac-
16 cording to our rule abundantly, to preach the gospel in the
regions beyond you ; *and* not to boast in another man's line
17 of things made ready to our hand. But he that glorieth, let
18 him glory in the Lord. For not he that commendeth him-
self is approved, but whom the Lord commendeth.

XI. Would to God ye could bear with me a little in *my* folly ;
2 and indeed bear with me. For I am jealous over you with
godly jealousy ; for I have espoused you to one husband,
3 that I may present *you as* a chaste virgin to Christ ; but I
fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through
his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the
4 simplicity that is in Christ. For if he that cometh preacheth
another Jesus, whom we have not preached, or *if* ye receive
another spirit, which ye have not received, or another gos-
pel, which ye have not accepted, ye might well bear with
5 *him*. For I suppose I was not a whit behind the very chief-
6 est apostles. But though *I be* rude in specch, yet not in
knowledge ; but we have been thoroughly made manifest
7 among you in all things. Have I committed an offence in
abasing myself that ye might be exalted ? because I have
8 preached to you the gospel of God freely ? I robbed other
9 churches, taking wages *of them*, to do you service ; and
when I was present with you, and wanted, I was chargeable
to no man ; (for that which was lacking to me the brethren
which came from Macedonia supplied ;) and in all *things* I
have kept myself from being burdensome unto you, and so
10 will I keep *myself*. As the truth of Christ is in me, no
man shall stop me of this boasting in the regions of
11 Achaia. Wherefore ? because I love you not ? God know-
12 eth. But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occa-
sion from them which desire occasion, that wherein they
13 glory, they may be found even as we. For such *are* false

apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the
 14 apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is
 15 transformed into an angel of light; therefore *it is* no great
 thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of
 righteousness; whose end shall be according to their
 16 works. I say again, let no man think me a fool; if
 otherwise, yet as a fool receive me, that I may boast myself
 17 a little. That which I speak, I speak *it* not after the Lord,
 but as it were foolishly, in this confidence of boasting.
 18 Seeing that many glory after the flesh, I will glory also.
 19 For ye suffer fools gladly, seeing ye *yourselves* are wise;
 20 for ye suffer, if a man bring you into bondage, if a man de-
 vour *you*, if a man take *of you*, if a man exalt himself, if a
 21 man smite you on the face. I speak as concerning re-
 proach, as though we had been weak; howbeit, whereinso-
 22 ever any is bold, (I speak foolishly,) I am bold also. Are
 they Hebrews? so *am* I; are they Israelites? so *am* I; are
 23 they the seed of Abraham? so *am* I; are they ministers of
 Christ? (I speak as a fool,) I *am* more; in labours more
 abundant, in stripes above measure, in prisons more frequent,
 24 in deaths oft; (of the Jews five times received I forty *stripes*
 25 save one, thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned,
 thrice I suffered shipwreck, a night and a day I have been
 26 in the deep;) *in* journeyings often; *in* perils of waters, *in*
 perils of robbers, *in* perils by *mine own* countrymen, *in* perils
 by the heathen, *in* perils in the city, *in* perils in the wilder-
 ness, *in* perils in the sea, *in* perils among false brethren;
 27 in weariness and painfulness, in watchings often, in hunger
 28 and thirst, in fastings often, in cold and nakedness. Besides
 those things that are without, that which cometh upon me
 29 daily, the care of all the churches. Who is weak, and I am
 30 not weak? who is offended, and I burn not? If I must
 needs glory, I will glory of the things which concern mine
 31 infirmities. The God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,
 32 which is blessed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not; in
 Damascus the governor under Aretas the king kept the city
 of the Damascenes with a garrison, desirous to apprehend
 33 me; and through a window in a basket was I let down by
 XII. the wall, and escaped his hands. It is not expe-
 2 dient for me doubtless to glory; I will come to visions and
 revelations of the Lord. I knew a man in Christ above
 fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or
 whether out of the body, I cannot tell; God knoweth;) such

3 a one caught up to the third heaven. And I knew such a
man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot
4 tell; God knoweth;) how that he was caught up into para-
dise, and heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful
5 for a man to utter. Of such a one will I glory; yet of my-
6 self I will not glory, but in mine infirmities. For though I
would desire to glory, I shall not be a fool; for I will say the
truth; but *now* I forbear, lest any man should think of me
above that which he seeth me to be, or that he heareth of
7 me. And lest I should be exalted above measure through
the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a
thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan, to buffet me, lest I
8 should be exalted above measure. For this thing I besought
9 the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me; and he said
unto me; My grace is sufficient for thee; for my strength is
made perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I
rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may
10 rest upon me. Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in
reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for
11 Christ's sake; for when I am weak, then am I strong. I
am become a fool; ye have compelled me. For I ought
to have been commended of you; for in nothing am I be-
12 hind the very chiefest apostles, though I be nothing. Truly
the signs of an apostle were wrought among you in all pa-
13 tience, in signs, and wonders, and mighty deeds. For what
is it wherein ye were inferior to other churches, except *it be*
that I myself was not burdensome to you? Forgive me this
14 wrong. Behold, this third time I am ready to come to
you, and I will not be burdensome to you; for I seek not
yours, but you. For the children ought not to lay up for the
15 parents, but the parents for the children. And I will very
gladly spend and be spent for you; though the more abund-
16 antly I love you, the less I be loved. But be it so;
I did not burden you; nevertheless, being crafty, I caught
17 you with guile. Did I make a gain of you by any of them
18 whom I sent unto you? I desired Titus, and with *him* I sent
a brother; did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in
the same spirit? *walked we not in the same steps?*
19 Again, think ye that we excuse ourselves unto you? Before
God, in Christ, we speak all those things, dearly beloved, for
20 your edifying. For I fear, lest, when I come, I shall not
find you such as I would, and *that* I shall be found unto
you such as ye would not; lest *there be* debates, envyings,

wraths, strifes, backbitings, whisperings, swellings, tumults ;
 21 *and* lest, when I come again, my God will humble me
 among you, and *that* I shall bewail many which have sinned
 alrcady, and have not repented of the uncleanness, and
 fornication, and lasciviousness, which they have commit-

XIII. ted. This is the third *time* I am coming to you ;
 in the mouth of two or three witnesses shall every word be
 2 established. I told before, and foretell (as if I were pre-
 sent,) the second time, (being absent now,) to them which
 heretofore have sinned, and to all other, that, if I come again,
 3 I will not spare. Since ye seek a proof of Christ speaking
 in me, (which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in
 4 you ; for though he was crucified through weakness, yet he
 liveth by the power of God ; for we also are weak in him,
 but wo shall live with him by the power of God toward you ;)
 5 examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith ; prove your
 own selves. Know ye not your own selves, *how* that Jesus
 6 Christ is in you ? except ye be reprobates. But I trust
 7 that ye shall know, that we are not reprobates. Now I pray
 to God that ye do no evil ; not that we should appear ap-
 proved, but that ye should do that which is honest, though we
 8 be as reprobates. For we can do nothing against the truth,
 9 but for the truth. For we are glad, when we are weak, and
 ye are strong ; and this also we wish, *even* your perfection.
 10 Therefore I write these things being absent, lest being pre-
 sent I should use sharpness, according to the power, which
 the Lord hath given me to edification, and not to destruc-
 tion.

11 Finally, brethren, farewell, be perfect, be of good comfort,
 be of one mind, live in peace ; and the God of love and
 12 peace shall be with you. Greet one another with a holy
 13 14 kiss ; all the saints salute you. The grace of the Lord
 Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the
 Holy Ghost, be with you all.

THE
EPISTLE OF PAUL
TO THE
GALATIANS.

PAUL, an apostle, not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ, and God the Father, who raised him from the
 2 dead ; and all the brethren which are with me, unto the
 3 churches of Galatia ; grace *be* to you and peace from God
 4 the Father, and *from* our Lord Jesus Christ, who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present
 5 evil world, according to the will of God and our Father, to whom *be* glory for ever and ever ; amen.

6 I marvel, that ye are so soon removed from him that called
 7 ed you into the grace of Christ, unto another gospel ; which is not another ; but there be some that trouble you, and
 8 would pervert the gospel of Christ. But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel unto you than that which we have preached unto you, let him be accursed.

9 As we said before, so say I now again ; if any *man* preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let
 10 him be accursed. For do I now persuade men, or God ? or do I seek to please men ? for if I yet pleased men, I
 11 should not be the servant of Christ. But I certify you brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is
 12 not after man ; for I neither received neither was I taught
 13 it of man, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ. For ye have heard of my conversation in time past in the Jews' religion, *how* that beyond measure I persecuted the church of
 14 God, and wasted it ; and profited in the Jews' religion above many my equals in mine own nation, being more exceedingly-
 15 ly zealous of the traditions of my fathers. But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother's womb,

16 and called *me* by his grace, to reveal his Son in me, that I might preach him among the heathen; immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood, neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were apostles before me, but I went into 18 Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus. Then, after three years, I went up to Jerusalem to see Peter, and abode 19 with him fifteen days; but other of the apostles saw I none, 20 save James the Lord's brother. (Now, the things which I 21 write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not.) Afterwards 22 I came into the regions of Syria and Cilicia; and was unknown by face unto the churches of Judea which were 23 in Christ; but they had heard only; He which persecuted us in times past, now preacheth the faith which 24 once he destroyed; and they glorified God in me.

II. Then, fourteen years after, I went up again to Jerusalem 2 with Barnabas, and took Titus with *me* also. And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles; but privately to them which were of reputation, lest by any means I should run, 3 or had run, in vain. But neither Titus, who was with me, 4 being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised. And that because of false brethren unawares brought in; (who came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ 5 Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage;) to whom we gave place by subjection, no, not for an hour, that the truth 6 of the gospel might continue with you. But of those, who seemed to be somewhat, whatsoever they were, it maketh no matter to me; (God accepteth no man's person;) for they who seemed *to be somewhat* in conference added 7 nothing to me, but contrariwise, when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as *the* 8 *gospel* of the circumcision *was* unto Peter, (for he that wrought effectually in Peter to the apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me towards the Gentiles,) 9 and perceived the grace that was given unto me, James, and Cephas, and John, who seemed to be pillars, gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship, that we *should go* unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision; 10 only *they would* that we should remember the poor; the 11 same which I also was forward to do. But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, 12 because he was to be blamed. For before that certain came from James he did eat with the Gentiles; but when

they were come, he withdrew, and separated himself, fearing
 13 them which were of the circumcision. And the other Jews
 14 dissembled likewise with him ; insomuch that Barnabas also
 14 was carried away with their dissimulation. But when I saw
 that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the
 gospel, I said unto Peter before *them* all ; If thou, being a
 Jew, livest after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the
 Jews, how compellest thou the Gentiles to live as do the
 15 Jews ? *We are Jews* by nature, and not sinners of the Gen-
 16 tiles ; but knowing that a man is not justified by the works
 of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have
 believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the
 faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law ; for by the
 17 works of the law shall no flesh be justified. But if, while
 we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are
 found sinners, *is therefore Christ the minister of sin* ? God
 18 forbid. For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I
 19 make myself a transgressor. For I through the law am
 20 dead to the law, that I might live unto God. I am crucified
 with Christ ; nevertheless I live, yet not I, but Christ liveth
 in me ; and the life which I now live in the flesh, I live by
 the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave him-
 21 self for me. I do not frustrate the grace of God ; for if
 righteousness *come* by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

III. O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you ? before
 whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth cru-
 2 cified among you. This only would I learn of you ; receiv-
 ed ye the spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of
 3 faith ? Are ye so foolish ? having begun in the Spirit, are ye
 4 now made perfect by the flesh ? Have ye suffered so many
 5 things in vain ? if *it be* yet in vain. He therefore that
 ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among
 you, *doeth he it* by the works of the law, or by the hearing
 6 of faith ? Even as Abraham believed God, and it was ac-
 7 counted to him for righteousness. Know ye there-
 fore, that they which are of faith, the same are the children
 8 of Abraham. And the scripture, foreseeing that God would
 justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel
 unto Abraham, *saying* ; In thee shall all nations be blessed.
 9 So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful
 10 Abraham. For as many as are of the works of the
 law, are under the curse ; for it is written ; Cursed is every
 one that continueth not in all things which are written

11 in the book of the law, to do them. But that no man
 is justified by the law in the sight of God, *it is evident*; for
 12 the just by faith shall live; and the law is not of faith; but
 13 he that doeth them shall live in them. Christ hath redeemed
 us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us;
 (for it is written; Cursed *is* every one that hangeth on a
 14 tree;) that the blessing of Abraham might come on the
 Gentiles through Jesus Christ, that we might receive the
 15 promise of the Spirit through faith. Brethren, I
 speak after the manner of men; though *it be* but a man's
 covenant, yet *if it be* confirmed, no man disannulleth or addeth
 16 thereto. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises
 made. He saith not; And to seeds, as of many, but as of
 17 one; And to thy seed; which is Christ. And this I say;
that the covenant that was confirmed before of God in Christ,
 the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, can-
 not disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect;
 18 for if the inheritance *be* of the law, *it is* no more of promise;
 19 but God gave *it* to Abraham by promise. Where-
 fore then *serveth* the law? It was established because of
 transgressions, (till the seed should come, to whom the pro-
 mise was made,) *and it was* ordained by angels, in the hand
 20 of a mediator. Now, a mediator is not *a mediator* of one;
 21 but God is one. *Is* the law then against the promises of
 God? God forbid. For if there had been a law given
 which could have given life, verily righteousness should have
 22 been by the law; but the scripture hath concluded all under
 sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given
 23 to them that believe. But before faith came, we were kept
 under the law shut up unto the faith which should after-
 24 wards be revealed. Wherefore the law was our school-
 master, *to bring us* unto Christ, that we might be justified by
 25 faith; but after that faith is come, we are no longer under a
 26 school-master. For ye are all the children of God by faith
 27 in Christ Jesus; for as many of you as have been baptized
 28 into Christ, have put on Christ. There is neither Jew, nor
 Greek; there is neither bond, nor free; there is neither male
 29 nor female; for ye are all one in Christ Jesus; and if ye *be*
 Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according
 IV. to the promise. Now I say, *that* the heir, as long
 as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he
 2 be lord of all; but is under tutors and governors, until the
 3 time appointed of the father. Even so we, when we were

children, were in bondage under the elements of the world ;
4 but when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his
5 Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them
that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption
6 of sons. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the
Spirit of his Son into our hearts, crying ; Abba, Father.
7 Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son ; and if a
son, then an heir of God through Christ.
8 Howbeit then, when ye knew not God, ye did service
9 unto them which by nature are no gods ; but now, after that
ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn
ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye
10 desire again to be in bondage ? Do ye observe days ? and
11 months, and times, and years ? I am afraid of you, lest I
12 have bestowed upon you labour in vain. Brethren,
I beseech you, be as I am, for I am as ye are ; ye have
13 not injured me at all. Ye know how through infirmity of
14 the flesh I preached the gospel unto you at the first, and
my temptation which was in my flesh ye despised not, nor
rejected ; but received me as an angel of God, even as
15 Christ Jesus. Where is then the blessedness ye spake of ?
for I bear you record, that if *it had been* possible, ye would
have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to
16 me. Am I therefore become your enemy because I tell
17 you the truth ? They zealously affect you, *but* not
well ; yea, they would exclude you, that ye might affect
18 them. But *it is* good to be zealously affected always in a
good thing, and not only when I am present with you.
19 My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until
20 Christ be formed in you ; I desire to be present with you
now, and to change my voice ; for I stand in doubt of you.
21 Tell me, ye that desire to be under the law, do ye not
22 hear the law ? For it is written, that Abraham had two
sons ; the one by a bond-maid, the other by a free-woman.
23 But he *who was* of the bond-woman, was born after the
24 flesh ; but he of the free-woman *was* by promise. Which
things are an allegory ; for these are two covenants ; the
one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage,
25 which is Agar ; for this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and
answereth to Jerusalem which now is, for she is in bondage
26 with her children ; but Jerusalem which is above is
27 free, which is our mother. For it is written ; Rejoice,
thou barren that bearest not ; break forth and cry, thou that

travailest not ; for the desolate hath many more children
 28 than she which hath a husband. Now we, brethren, as
 29 Isaac was, are the children of promise. But as then he that
 was born after the flesh persecuted him *that was born* after
 30 the Spirit, even so it is now. Nevertheless, what saith the
 scripture ? Cast out the bond-woman and her son ; for the
 son of the bond-woman shall not be heir with the son of the
 31 free-woman. So then, brethren, we are not chil-
 V. dren of the bond-woman, but of the free. Stand fast in
 the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not
 entangled again with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised,
 3 Christ shall profit you nothing ; for I testify again to every
 man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole
 4 law. Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of
 5 you are justified by the law ; ye are fallen from grace. For
 we through the spirit wait for the hope of righteousness by
 6 faith. For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any
 thing, nor uncircumcision ; but faith which worketh by love.
 7 Ye did run well ; who did hinder you, that ye should not obey
 8 the truth ? This persuasion *cometh* not of him that calleth
 9 10 you. A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump. I have
 confidence in you through the Lord, that ye will be none
 otherwise minded ; but he that troubleth you shall bear *his*
 11 judgment, whosoever he be. And I, brethren, if I yet
 preach circumcision, why do I yet suffer persecution ? then
 12 is the offence of the cross ceased. I would they were even
 cut off which trouble you.

13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty ; only *use*
 not liberty for an occasion to the flesh, but by love serve one
 14 another. For all the law is fulfilled in one word, *even* in
 15 this ; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. But if ye
 bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not con-
 16 sumed one of another. *This* I say then ; walk in
 17 the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh. For
 the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the
 flesh ; and these are contrary the one to the other, so that
 18 ye cannot do the things that ye would. But if ye be led by
 19 the Spirit, ye are not under the law. Now the works of the
 flesh are manifest ; which are *these*, fornication, uncleanness,
 20 lasciviousness, idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emula-
 21 tions, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, envyings, murders,
 drunkenness, revellings, and such like ; of the which I tell

- you before, as I have also told *you* in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God.
- 22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering,
23 gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance; against
24 such there is no law. And they that are Christ's have crucified the flesh, with the affections and lusts; if we live in
25 the Spirit, let us also walk in the Spirit. Let us not be desirous of vain-glory, provoking one another, envying
VI. one another. Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such a one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted.
- 2 Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of
3 Christ. For if a man think himself to be something, when
4 he is nothing, he deceiveth himself; but let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoicing in himself
5 alone, and not in another; for every man shall bear his own
6 burden. Let him that is taught in the word, communicate unto him that teacheth, in all good things. Be not deceived; God is not mocked. For whatsoever a man
7 soweth, that shall he also reap; for he that soweth to his flesh, shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth
8 to the Spirit, shall of the Spirit reap life everlasting. And let us not be weary in well-doing; for in due season we shall
9 reap, if we faint not. As we have therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all *men*, especially unto them who are of the household of faith.
- 11 Ye see how large a letter I have written unto you with
12 mine own hand. As many as desire to make a fair shew in the flesh; they constrain you to be circumcised; only lest
13 they should suffer persecution for the cross of Christ. For neither they themselves who are circumcised keep the law; but desire to have you circumcised, that they may glory in
14 your flesh. But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ; by whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world. For in Christ Jesus
15 neither circumcision is any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a new creature. And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon the Israel of
16 God. From henceforth let no man trouble me; for
17 I bear in my body the marks of the Lord Jesus. Brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit.
18 Amen.

THE
EPISTLE OF PAUL
TO THE
EPHESIANS.

- PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ
- 2 Jesus ; grace *be* to you, and peace, from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.
- 3 Blessed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly
- 4 *places* in Christ ; according as he hath chosen us in him, before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and
- 5 without blame before himself ; having in love predestinated us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself,
- 6 according to the good pleasure of his will, to the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he hath made us accepted in
- 7 the beloved, in whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his
- 8 grace, wherein he hath abounded toward us, having in all
- 9 wisdom and prudence made known unto us the mystery of his will according to his good pleasure, which he hath purposed
- 10 in himself concerning the dispensation of the fulness of times, that he might gather together in one all things in Christ, which are in heaven, and which are on earth, *even* in him,
- 11 in whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who worketh all
- 12 things after the counsel of his own will, that we should be to
- 13 the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ ; in whom ye also, (after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation,) in whom ye also, after that ye believed,

14 were sealed with that Holy Spirit of promise, which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

15 Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord
16 Jesus, and love unto all the saints, cease not to give thanks
17 for you, making mention of you in my prayers; that the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge
18 of him; the eyes of your mind being enlightened, that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches
19 of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, and what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward, who believe
20 according to the working of his mighty power, which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead; and
21 set *him* at his own right hand in the heavenly *places*, far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but
22 also in that which is to come; and hath put all *things* under his feet; and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the
23 church, which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all
II. in all; and you, who were dead in trespasses and sins,

2 (wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience; among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind, and were by nature the children of
3 wrath, even as others; but God, who is rich in mercy, for his
4 great love wherewith he loved us, *hath given life,*) even us who were dead in sins, hath he quickened together with
5 Christ; (by grace ye are saved;) and hath raised *us* up together, and made *us* sit together in heavenly *places*, in Christ
6 Jesus; that in the ages to come he might shew the exceeding riches of his grace in *his* kindness toward us through Christ
7 Jesus. For by grace are ye saved, through faith; and that
8 not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, not of works; lest
9 any man should boast. For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.

11 Wherefore remember, that *ye being* in time past Gentiles in the flesh, (who are called Uncircumcision by that which is
12 called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands,) that at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the

commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God, in the world ;
13 but now, in Christ Jesus, ye, who sometime were far off, are
14 made nigh by the blood of Christ. For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle
15 wall of partition *between us, even* the enmity ; having abolished in his flesh the law of commandments *contained* in ordinances ; for to make in himself of twain one new man, so
16 making peace, and that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby.
17 And he came and preached peace to you which were afar
18 off, and to them that were nigh, for through him we both
19 have access by one Spirit unto the Father. Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but fellow-
20 citizens with the saints, and of the household of God, and are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets,
21 Jesus Christ himself being the chief corner-stone ; in whom all the building, fitly framed together, groweth unto a holy
22 temple in the Lord ; in whom ye also are builded together, for a habitation of God through the Spirit.

III. For this cause, I Paul, the prisoner of Jesus Christ for
2 you Gentiles ; if ye have heard of the dispensation of the
3 grace of God which is given me to you-ward, how that by revelation was made known unto me the mystery ; (as I
4 wrote afore in few words, wherby, when ye read, ye may
5 understand my knowledge in the mystery of Christ ;) which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as
it is now revealed unto his holy apostles and prophets by the
6 Spirit ; that the Gentiles should be fellow-heirs, and of the same body, and partakers of his promise in Christ, by the
7 gospel ; whereof I was made a minister according to the gift of the grace of God, given unto me by the effectual working
8 of his power ; unto me, who am less than the least of all saints, is this grace given, that I should preach among the
9 Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ, and to make all
men see what is the dispensation of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world hath been hid in God, who created
10 all things ; to the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in heavenly *places* might be known, by the church,
11 the manifold wisdom of God ; according to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord ; in whom
12 we have boldness and access with confidence, by the faith
13 of him. Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribula-

14 tions for you, which is your glory. For this cause I bow
 15 my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, of
 16 whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named, that
 he would grant you, according to the riches of his glory, to
 be strengthened with might by his Spirit in the inner man;
 17 that Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith, that ye, being
 18 rooted and grounded in love, may be able to comprehend
 with all saints, what is the breadth, and length, and depth,
 19 and height, and to know the love of Christ, which passeth
 knowledge; that ye might be filled with all the fulness of
 20 God. Now unto him that is able to do exceeding
 abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the
 21 power that worketh in us, unto him be glory in the church
 by Christ Jesus, throughout all ages, world without end;
 amen.

IV. I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that
 ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,
 2 with all lowliness and meekness, with long-suffering; forbear-
 3 ing one another in love, endeavouring to keep the unity of
 4 the Spirit in the bond of peace. *There is one body, and*
one Spirit, even as ye are called in one hope of your calling;
 5 6 *one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father of*
 7 *all, who is above all, and through all, and in us all.* But
 unto every one of us is given grace according to the mea-
 8 sure of the gift of Christ. (Wherefore he saith; When he
 ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts
 9 unto men. Now that he ascended, what is it, but that he
 10 also descended into the lower parts of the earth? He that
 descended is the same also that ascended up far above all
 11 heavens, that he might fill all things.) And he gave some,
 apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and
 12 some, pastors and teachers; for the perfecting of the saints
 for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of
 13 Christ; till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the
 knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, unto the
 14 measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ; that we
henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro and carried
 about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men,
 and cunning craftiness wherehy they lie in wait to deceive;
 15 but speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all
 16 things, which is the head, even Christ; from whom the
 whole body, (fitly joined together and compacted by that
 which every joint supplieth according to an effectual work-

ing,) in the measure of every part maketh increase of the body, unto the edifying of itself in love.

17 This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not, as other Gentiles walk in the vanity of their
18 mind, having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God, through the ignorance that is in them,
19 because of the blindness of their heart; who, being past feeling, have given themselves over unto lasciviousness to work
20 all uncleanness with greediness. But ye have not so learned Christ, if so be that ye have heard him, and have been
21 taught by him, as the truth is in Jesus; that ye put off, concerning the former conversation, the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts; and be renewed in the
22 spirit of your mind, and that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, speak every man truth with his neighbour; for we are members one of another. Be

ye angry, and sin not; let not the sun go down upon your
27 28 wrath; neither give place to the devil. Let him

that stole steal no more, but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to
29 give to him that needeth. Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may minister grace unto the

hearers; and grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye
30 are sealed unto the day of redemption. Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil-speaking, be
31 put away from you, with all malice; and be ye kind one to another, tender-hearted, forgiving one another, even as

V. God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you. Be ye therefore
2 followers of God, as dear children; and walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice, for a sweet-smelling savour to God.

3 But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, (as becometh saints,)
4 neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are
5 not convenient; but rather giving of thanks. For this ye well know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the
6 kingdom of Christ and of God. Let no man deceive you with vain words; for because of these things cometh the
7 wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. Be not
8 ye therefore partakers with them. For ye were sometime

darkness, but now *are ye* light in the Lord ; walk as children
 9 of light ; (for the fruit of the light *is* in all goodness, and
 10 righteousness, and truth ;) proving what is acceptable unto
 11 the Lord ; and have no fellowship with the unfruitful works
 12 of darkness, but rather reprove *them*. For it is a shame
 even to speak of those things which are done of them in se-
 13 cret. But all things, being reprov'd by the light, are
 made manifest ; for whatsoever doth make manifest is light.
 14 Wherefore, he saith ; Awake, thou that sleepest, and arise
 15 from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light. See
 then that ye walk circumspectly ; not as fools, but as wise ;
 16 17 redeeming the time, because the days are evil. Where-
 fore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the
 18 Lord *is*. And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess,
 19 but be filled with the Spirit, speaking to yourselves in psalms,
 and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing and making melody
 20 in your heart to the Lord ; giving thanks always for all
 things, unto God and the Father, in the name of our Lord
 Jesus Christ.

21 Submit yourselves one to another in the fear of Christ ;
 22 wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto
 23 the Lord ; for the husband is the head of the wife, even
 as Christ is the head of the church ; he is the Saviour
 24 of the body. Therefore as the church is subject unto
 Christ, so *let the wives be* to their own husbands in every
 25 thing. Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ
 26 also loved the church, and gave himself for it, that he might
 sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word ;
 27 that he himself might present to himself a glorious church,
 not having spot or wrinkle, or any such thing, but that it
 28 should be holy and without blemish. So ought men to love
 their wives, as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife
 29 loveth himself ; for no man ever yet hated his own flesh, but
 30 nourisheth and cherisheth it ; even as Christ the church ; for
 we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.
 31 For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and
 shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.
 32 This is a great mystery ; but I speak concerning Christ and
 33 the church. Nevertheless, let every one of you in particular
 so love his wife even as himself ; and the wife *see* that she

VI. reverence *her* husband. Children, obey your pa-

2 rents in the Lord ; for this is right. Honour thy father
 and mother ; (which is the first commandment, with promise ;)

3 that it may be well with thee, and thou mayest live long on
4 the earth.

And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath, but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.

Servants, be obedient to them that are *your* masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ; not with eye-service as men-pleasers, but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart, with good will doing service, as to the Lord, and not to men; knowing that whatsoever good thing any man doeth, the same shall he receive of the Lord, whether *he be* bond or free.

And, ye masters, do the same things unto them, forbearing threatening; knowing that your Master also is in heaven, neither is there respect of persons with him.

10 Finally, my brethren, be strong in the Lord, and in the
11 power of his might. Put on the whole armour of God, that
12 ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil; for
we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of this darkness, against spiritual wickedness, in high *places*. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all to stand.
14 Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, and
15 having on the breast-plate of righteousness, and your feet
16 shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to
17 quench all the fiery darts of the wicked; and take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the
18 word of God; praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit; and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints, and for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth,
20 boldly to make known the mystery of the gospel, for which I am an ambassador in bonds, that therein I may speak boldly, as I ought to speak.

21 But that ye also may know my affairs, *and* how I do, Tychicus, a beloved brother and faithful minister in the Lord,
22 shall make known to you all things; whom I have sent unto you for the same purpose, that ye might know our affairs, and *that* he might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace be to the brethren and love with faith from God
24 the Father and the Lord Jesus Christ. Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity.

THE
EPISTLE OF PAUL
TO
THE PHILIPPIANS.

PAUL and Timotheus, the servants of Jesus Christ, to all the saints in Christ Jesus which are at Philippi, with the
2 bishops and deacons ; grace *be* unto you, and peace, from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 I always thank my God upon every remembrance
4 of you in every prayer of mine for you all, making request
5 with joy for your fellowship in the gospel, from the first day
6 until now ; being confident of this very thing, that he which
hath begun a good work in you, will perform *it* until the day
7 of Jesus Christ ; even as it is meet for me to think this of
you all, because I have you in my heart, inasmuch as both
in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the gos-
8 pel, ye all are partakers of my grace. For God is my re-
cord, how greatly I long after you all in the bowels of Jesus
9 Christ. And this I pray, that your love may abound yet
10 more and more in knowledge and in all judgment ; that ye
may approve things that are excellent, that ye may be sin-
11 cere and without offence till the day of Christ, being filled
with the fruit of righteousness, which is by Jesus Christ, un-
to the glory and praise of God.

12 But I would ye should understand, brethren, that the
things *which happened* unto me have fallen out rather unto
13 the furtherance of the gospel ; so that my bonds in Christ
14 are manifest in all the palace, and in all other *places*, and
many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my
bonds, are much more bold to speak the word without
15 fear. Some indeed preach Christ even of envy and
17 strife, and some also of good will. They who *preach him* of

16 love, *preach* knowing that I am set for the defence of the gos-
 pel; but they who *preach* of contention, preach Christ not sin-
 18 cerely, supposing to add affliction to my bonds. What then ?
 notwithstanding, every way, whether in pretence or in truth,
 Christ is preached; and I therein do rejoice, yea, and will re-
 19 joice. For I know that this shall turn to my salvation through
 20 your prayer, and the supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ, ac-
 cording to my earnest expectation, and *my* hope, that in noth-
 ing I shall be ashamed; but *that* with all boldness, as always,
 so now also, Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether *it*
 21 *be* by life, or by death. For to me to live *is* Christ, and to
 22 die *is* gain. But if I live in the flesh, this *is* the fruit of my
 23 labour, yet what I shall choose I wot not; but I am in a
 strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with
 24 Christ; which is far better; nevertheless, to abide in the
 25 flesh *is* more needful for you. And having this confidence,
 I know that I shall abide and continue with you all for your
 26 furtherance and joy of faith; that your rejoicing may be
 more abundant in Jesus Christ for me, by my coming to you
 again.

27 Only let your conversation be as it becometh the gospel
 of Christ, that whether I come and see you, or else be ab-
 sent, I may hear of your affairs, that ye stand fast in one
 spirit, with one mind striving together for the faith of the
 28 gospel, and in nothing terrified by your adversaries; which
 is to them an evident token of perdition, but to you of sal-
 29 vation; and that of God; for unto you it is given in the be-
 half of Christ, not only to believe on him, but also to suffer
 30 for his sake; having the same conflict which ye saw in me,
 II. and now hear *to be* in me.

If *there be* therefore any
 consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellow-
 2 ship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies; fulfil ye my
 joy, that ye be like-minded, having the same love, *being* of
 3 one accord, of one mind; *let nothing be done* through strife
 or vain glory, but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other
 4 better than themselves; look not every man on his own
 5 things, but every man also on the things of others. Let this
 6 mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus, who, being
 in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with
 7 God, but made himself of no reputation, taking upon him
 the form of a servant, being made in the likeness of men,
 8 and being found in fashion as a man; he humbled himself,
 and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.

9 Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him
10 a name which is above every name ; that at the name of
Jesus every knee should bow, of *things* in heaven, and
11 *things* in earth, and *things* under the earth, and *that* every
tongue should confess that Jesus Christ *is* Lord, to the glo-
12 ry of God the Father.

Wherefore, my beloved, as
ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now
much more, in my absence, work out your own salvation
13 with fear and trembling ; for it is God which worketh in you
14 both to will and to do, of *his* good pleasure. Do all things
15 without murmurings and disputings ; that ye may be blame-
less and harmless, the sons of God without rebuke in the
midst of a crooked and perverse nation ; among whom ye
16 shine as lights in the world, holding forth the word of life ;
that I may rejoice in the day of Christ, that I have not run
in vain, neither laboured in vain.

17 Yea, and if I be offered upon the sacrifice and service of
18 your faith, I joy and rejoice with you all ; for the same cause
19 also do ye joy, and rejoice with me. But I trust in the
Lord Jesus to send Timotheus shortly unto you, that I also
20 may be of good comfort, when I know your state. For I
have no man like-minded, who will naturally care for your
21 state ; for all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus
22 Christ's. But ye know the proof of him, that, as a son with
23 the father, he hath served with me in the gospel. Him
therefore I hope to send presently, so soon as I shall see
24 how it will go with me ; but I trust in the Lord that I also
25 myself shall come shortly.

Yet I supposed it ne-
cessary to send to you Epaphroditus, my brother, and com-
panion in labour, and fellow-soldier, but your messenger, and
26 he that ministered to my wants ; for he longed after you all,
and was full of heaviness, because that ye had heard that he
27 had been sick. For indeed he was sick nigh unto death ;
but God had mercy on him ; and not on him only, but on
28 me also, lest I should have sorrow upon sorrow. I sent him
therefore the more carefully, that, when ye see him again, ye
29 may rejoice, and that I may be the less sorrowful. Receive
him therefore in the Lord with all gladness, and hold such in
30 reputation ; because for the work of Christ he was nigh un-
to death, endangering his life, to supply your lack of service
toward me.

III. Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord ; to write the
same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you
it is safe.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil-workers, beware of the
3 concision. For we are the circumcision, which worship God
in the Spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confi-
4 dence in the flesh; though I might also have confidence in
the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof
5 he might trust in the flesh, I more; circumcised the eighth
day, of the stock of Israel, *of* the tribe of Benjamin, a He-
brew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee;
6 concerning zeal, persecuting the church; touching the right-
7 eousness which is in the law, blameless. But what things
8 were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. Yea
doubtless, and I count all things *but* loss for the excellency
of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord, (for whom I
have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them *but*
9 dung, that I may win Christ, and be found in him, not having
mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which
is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of
10 God by faith;) that I may know him, and the power of his
resurrection, and the ~~fellowship~~ of his sufferings, being made
11 conformable unto his death, if by any means I might attain
12 unto the resurrection of the dead. Not as though I had
already attained, either were already perfect; but I follow
after, if that I may apprehend that for which also I am ap-
13 prehended of Christ. Brethren, I count not myself to have
apprehended; but *this* one thing *I do*, forgetting those things
which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which
14 are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high
15 calling of God in Christ Jesus. Let us, therefore, as many
as be perfect, be thus minded; and if in any thing ye be
otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you;
16 nevertheless, whereto we have already attained, let us walk
17 therein. Brethren, be followers together of me, and
mark them which walk so as ye have us for an ensam-
18 ple. For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and
now tell you even weeping, *that they are* the enemies of the
19 cross of Christ; whose end *is* destruction, whose God *is*
their belly, and *whose* glory *is* in their shame, who mind
20 earthly things. For our conversation is in heaven, from
whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ,
21 who shall change our vile body, *that it may be* like unto his
glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able
IV. even to subdue all things unto himself. Therefore,
my brethren dearly beloved and longed for, my joy and
crown, so stand fast in the Lord, *my* dearly beloved.

- 2 I beseech Euodias, and beseech Syntyche, that they be
3 of the same mind in the Lord ; yea, I entreat thee also,
true yoke-fellow, help those women which laboured with
me in the gospel, with Clement also, and *with* other
my fellow-labourers, whose names *are* in the book of
4 life. Rejoice in the Lord alway ; *and* again I say,
5 rejoice. Let your moderation be known unto all men. The
6 Lord is at hand ; be careful for nothing, but in every thing
by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your re-
7 quests be made known unto God ; and the peace of God,
which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and
8 minds through Christ Jesus. Finally, brethren,
whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things *are* honest,
whatsoever things *are* just, whatsoever things *are* pure,
whatsoever things *are* lovely, whatsoever things *are* of good
report, if *there be* any virtue, and if *there be* any praise,
9 think on these things ; those things which ye have both
learned and received, and heard and seen in me, do ; and
the God of peace shall be with you.
- 10 But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last
your care of me hath flourished again ; wherein ye were also
11 careful, but ye lacked opportunity. Not that I speak in re-
spect of want ; for I have learned, in whatsoever state I am,
12 *therewith* to be content. I know both how to be abased, and
I know how to abound ; every where and in all things I am
instructed, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound
13 and to suffer need ; I can do all things through him which
14 strengtheneth me. Notwithstanding, ye have well
15 done, that ye did communicate with my affliction. Now ye,
Philippians, know also, that in the beginning of the gospel,
when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated
16 with me as concerning giving and receiving, but ye only ; for
even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my neces-
17 sity. Not because I desire a gift, but I desire fruit that may
18 abound to your account. But I have all, and abound ; I am
full, having received of Epaphroditus the things *which were*
sent from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice accept-
19 able, well-pleasing to God. But my God shall supply all
your need according to his riches in glory, by Christ Jesus.
20 Now unto God and our Father *be* glory for ever. Amen.
- 21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren which are
22 with me greet you ; all the saints salute you, chiefly they
23 that are of Cesar's household. The grace of our
Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

THE
EPISTLE OF PAUL
TO THE
COLOSSIANS.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and
2 Timotheus *our* brother, to the saints and faithful brethren in
Christ which are at Colosse; grace *be* unto you, and peace,
from God our Father.

3 We always give thanks to God, and the Father of our
4 Lord Jesus Christ, praying for you, since we heard of your
faith in Christ Jesus, and of the love *which ye have* to all the
5 saints, for the hope which is laid up for you in heaven,
whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the
6 gospel, which is come unto you, as *it is* in all the world, and
bringeth forth fruit and increaseth, as *it doth* also in you,
since the day ye heard of *it*, and knew the grace of God in
7 truth; as ye also learned of Epaphras our dear fellow-ser-
8 vant, who is for you a faithful minister of Christ; who also de-
9 clared unto us your love in the Spirit. For this cause we
also, since the day we heard *it*, do not cease to pray for you,
and to desire, that ye might be filled with the knowledge of
10 his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; that *ye*
might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful
in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God;
11 strengthened with all might according to his glorious power,
12 unto all patience and long-suffering with joyfulness; giving
thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be
partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light;
13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness,
and hath translated *us* into the kingdom of his dear Son;
14 in whom we have redemption, *even* the forgiveness of
15 sins; who is the image of the invisible God, the

16 first-born of every creature; for by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether *they be* thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers; all things were created by him and for him;
17 and he is before all things, and by him all things consist;
18 and he is the head of the body, the church; who is the beginning, the first-born from the dead, that in all
19 *things* he might have the pre-eminence; for it pleased *the*
20 *Father* that in him should all fulness dwell, and, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself, by him, *I say*, whether *they be* things on
21 earth, or things in heaven. And you, that were sometime alienated, and enemies in *your* mind by wicked works, yet
22 now hath he reconciled in the body of his flesh through death, to present you holy and unblameable and unproveable in his sight; if ye continue in the faith grounded and
23 settled, and *be* not moved away from the hope of the gospel, which ye have heard, *and* which was preached to every creature which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister.
24 Now I rejoice in *my* sufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Christ in *my* flesh for his body's
25 sake, which is the church; whereof I am made a minister, according to the dispensation of God which is given to me
26 for you, to fulfill the word of God, *even* the mystery which hath been hid from ages, and from generations, but now is
27 made manifest to his saints; to whom God would make known what *is* the riches of the glory of this mystery among
28 the Gentiles, which is Christ in you, the hope of glory; whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in
29 Christ; whereunto I also labour, striving according to his working, which worketh in me mightily.

II. For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and *for* them of Laodicea, and *for* as many as have not
2 seen my face in the flesh; that their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgment of
3 the mystery of God; in whom are hid all the treasures of
4 wisdom and knowledge. And this I say, lest any man
5 should beguile you with enticing words. For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the steadfastness of your faith

6 in Christ. As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the
 7 Lord, *so* walk ye in him, rooted and built up in him, and
 stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding
 8 therein with thanksgiving. Beware lest any man
 spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tra-
 dition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not
 9 after Christ. For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the
 10 Godhead bodily, and ye are complete in him; which is the
 11 head of all principality and power; in whom also ye are
 circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in
 putting off the fleshly body, by the circumcision of Christ,
 12 having been buried with him in baptism; wherein also ye are
 risen with *him* through the faith of the operation of God, who
 13 hath raised him from the dead; and you, being dead in your
 sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened
 14 together with him, having forgiven us all trespasses; blot-
 ting out the hand-writing of ordinances that was against us,
 which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing
 15 it to his cross; *and* having spoiled principalities and powers,
 he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in
 16 it. Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in
 drink, or in respect of a holy-day, or of the new-moon, or of the
 17 sabbath-days; which are a shadow of things to come, but the
 18 body is of Christ. Let no man beguile you of your re-
 ward, in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, in-
 truding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed
 19 up by his fleshly mind, and not holding the Head, from
 which all the body, by joints and bands having nourishment
 ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of
 20 God. If ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments
 of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye sub-
 21 ject to ordinances, *such as*; Touch not, taste not, handle not?
 22 (which all are to perish with the using,) after the command-
 23 ments and doctrines of men; which things have indeed a
 shew of wisdom in will-worship and humility and neglecting
 of the body, not in any honour, to the satisfying of the
 III. flesh. If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those
 things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand
 2 of God; set your affection on things above, not on things on
 3 the earth. For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Christ
 4 in God; when Christ, *who is* our life, shall appear, then
 shall ye also appear with him in glory.
 5 Mortify therefore your members as to things upon the earth,

fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupis-
 6 cence, and covetousness, which is idolatry; for which things'
 sake the wrath of God cometh on the children of disobe-
 7 dience; in the which ye also walked sometime, when ye
 8 lived in them; but now also put ye off all these, anger,
 wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication out of your
 9 mouth; lie not one to another; seeing that ye have put off
 10 the old man with his deeds, and have put on the new man,
 which is renewed in knowledge after the image of him that
 11 created him; where there is neither Greek nor Jew; cir-
 cumcision nor uncircumcision; Barbarian, Scythian, bond
 12 nor free; but Christ is all, and in all. Put on
 therefore, as the elect of God holy and beloved, bowels of
 mercy, kindness, humbleness of mind, meekness, long-suffer-
 13 ing; (forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if
 any man have a quarrel against any; even as Christ forgave
 14 you, so also do ye;) and above all these things put on charity,
 15 which is the bond of perfectness; and let the peace of Christ
 rule in your hearts, to the which also ye are called in one
 16 body; and be ye thankful. Let the word of Christ dwell
 in you richly; teaching in all wisdom, and admonishing one
 another in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing with
 17 grace in your hearts to God; and whatsoever ye do, in
 word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving
 18 thanks to God and the Father by him.

Wives, submit yourselves unto *your* husbands, as it is fit in
 19 the Lord. Husbands, love *your* wives, and be not bitter against
 20 them. Children, obey *your* parents in all things;
 21 for this is well-pleasing in the Lord. Fathers, provoke not
 22 your children to *anger*, lest they be discouraged. Ser-
 vants, obey in all things *your* masters according to the flesh,
 not with eye-service, as men-pleasers, but in singleness of
 23 heart, fearing the Lord; and whatsoever ye do, do it hearti-
 24 ly, as to the Lord, and not unto men; knowing that of the
 Lord ye shall receive the reward of the inheritance; for
 25 ye serve the Lord Christ. But he that doeth wrong,
 shall receive for the wrong which he hath done; and there is
 IV. no respect of persons. Masters, give unto *your* servants
 that which is just and equal; knowing that ye also have a
 master in heaven.

2 Continue in prayer, and watch in the same, with thanks-
 3 giving; withal praying also for us, that God would open unto
 us a door of utterance, to speak the mystery of Christ, for

- 4 which I am also in bonds; that I may make it manifest, as
5 I ought to speak. Walk in wisdom toward them that are
6 without, redeeming the time. Let your speech *be* always
with grace, seasoned with salt, that ye may know how ye
ought to answer every man.
- 7 All my state shall Tychicus declare unto you, *who is a*
8 beloved brother and faithful minister and fellow-servant in
the Lord; whom I have sent unto you for the same pur-
pose, that he might know your estate, and comfort your
9 hearts; with Onesimus, a faithful and beloved brother, who
is *one* of you; they shall make known unto you all things
10 which *are done* here. Aristarchus, my fellow-prison-
er, saluteth you, and Marcus, sister's son to Barnabas,
touching whom ye received commandments; (if he come
11 unto you, receive him;) and Jesus, which is called Justus;
who are of the circumcision; these only *are my* fellow-
workers unto the kingdom of God, which have been a com-
12 fort unto me. Epaphras, who is *one* of you, a servant of
Christ, saluteth you, always labouring fervently for you in
prayers, that ye may stand perfect and complete in all the
13 will of God. For I bear him record, that he hath a great
concern for you, and them that are in Laodicea, and them in
14 Hierapolis. Luke, the beloved physician, and Demas,
15 greet you. Salute the brethren which are in Laodicea, and
16 Nymphas, and the church which is in his house. And when
this epistle is read among you, cause that it be read also
in the church of the Laodiceans, and that ye likewise read
17 the *epistle* from Laodicea. And say to Archippus; Take
heed to the ministry which thou hast received in the Lord,
that thou fulfill it.
- 18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my
bonds. Grace *be* with you.

THE
FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL
TO THE
THESSALONIANS.

PAUL, and Sylvanus, and Timothous, unto the church of the Thessalonians *which is* in God the Father, and *in* the Lord Jesus Christ; grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

- 2 We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention
3 of you in our prayers, remembering without ceasing your work of faith, and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father;
4 5 knowing, brethren beloved of God, your election; for our gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance; as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.
6 And ye became followers of us and of the Lord, having received the word in much affliction with joy of the Holy
7 Ghost; so that ye were ensamples to all that believe in
8 Macedonia and Achaia. For from you sounded out the word of the Lord not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad;
9 so that we need not to speak any thing. For they themselves shew of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols, to serve the living
10 and true God, and to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, *even* Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come.

- II. For yourselves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you,
2 that it was not in vain; but after that we had suffered before and were shamefully entreated, as ye know, at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God

3 with much contention. For our exhortation *was* not of de-
4 ceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile; but as we were allow-
ed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we
speak, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.
5 For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye
6 know; nor a cloak of covetousness, God is witness; nor of
men sought we glory, neither of you, nor yet of others;
(when we might have been burdensome, as the apostles of
7 Christ;) but we were gentle among you. Even as a nurse
8 cherisheth her children, so being affectionately desirous of
you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gos-
pel of God only, but also our own souls, because ye were
9 dear unto us. For ye remember, brethren, our labour and
travail; labouring night and day, because we would not be
chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gos-
10 pel of God. Ye *are* witnesses, and God *also*, how holily,
and justly, and unblameably we behaved ourselves among
11 you that believe; as ye know how we exhorted, and com-
forted, and charged every one of you, as a father *doth* his
12 children, that ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called
13 you unto his kingdom and glory. For this cause also thank
we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the
word of God which ye heard of us, ye received it not *as* the
word of men, but, as it is in truth, the word of God, which
14 effectually worketh also in you that believe. For ye, bre-
thren, became followers of the churches of God which in
Judea are in Christ Jesus, for ye also have suffered like
things of your own countrymen, even as they *have* of the
15 Jews; who both killed the Lord Jesus, and the prophets, and
have persecuted us, and they please not God, and are con-
16 trary to all men; forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that
they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway. For the
wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.
17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time
in presence, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly
18 to see your face with great desire. Wherefore we would
have come unto you, (even I Paul,) once and again; but
19 Satan hindered us. For what is our hope, or joy, or crown
of rejoicing, *are* not even ye, in the presence of our Lord
20 Jesus Christ at his coming? for ye are our glory and
III. joy. Wherefore, when we could no longer forbear,
2 we thought it good to be left at Athens alone, and sent Timo-
theus, our brother, and a fellow-labourer with God in the gos-

- pel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning
 3 your faith, that no man should be moved by these afflictions ;
 4 (for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto ; for
 verily, when we were with you, we told you before that we
 should suffer tribulation, even as it came to pass, and ye
 5 know ;) for this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent
 to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have
 6 tempted you, and our labour be in vain. But now,
 when Timotheus came from you unto us, and brought us
 good tidings of your faith and charity, and that ye have good
 remembrance of us always, desiring greatly to see us, as we
 7 also *to see* you ; therefore, brethren, we were comforted
 8 over you in all our affliction and distress, by your faith ; for
 9 now we live, if ye stand fast in the Lord. For what thanks
 can we render to God again for you, for all the joy where-
 10 with we joy for your sakes before our God ? night and day
 praying exceedingly that we might see your face, and might
 11 perfect that which is lacking in your faith. Now
 God himself and our Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, di-
 12 rect our way unto you ; and the Lord make you to increase
 and abound in love one toward another and toward all *men*,
 13 even as we *do* toward you ; to the end he may establish your
 hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father,
 at the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ with all his saints.
- IV. Furthermore then we beseech you, brethren, and exhort
you by the Lord Jesus, that as ye have received of us how
 ye ought to walk and to please God, ~~so~~ ye would abound
 2 more and more ; for ye know what commandments we gave
 3 you by the Lord Jesus. For this is the will of God, *even*
 your sanctification ; that ye should abstain from fornication ;
 4 that every one of you should know how to possess his vessel
 5 in sanctification and honour, not in the lust of concupiscence,
 6 even as the Gentiles which know not God ; that no *man* go
 beyond and defraud his brother in *any* matter ; because
 that the Lord is the avenger of all such, as we also have
 7 forewarned you and testified. For God hath not called us
 8 unto uncleanness, but unto holiness. He therefore that de-
 spiseth, despiseth not man, but God, who hath also given un-
 to us his Holy Spirit.
- 9 But as touching brotherly love, ye need not that I write
 unto you ; for ye yourselves are taught of God to love one
 10 another ; and indeed ye do it toward all the brethren which
 are in all Macedonia. But we beseech you, brethren, that

11 ye increase more and more ; and that ye study to be quiet,
and to do your own business, and to work with your own
12 hands, as we commanded you ; that ye may walk honestly
toward them that are without, and *that* ye may have lack of
nothing.

13 But we would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, con-
cerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as
14 others which have no hope. For if we believe that Jesus
died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus
15 will God bring with him. For this we say unto you by the
word of the Lord, that we which are alive, *and* remain unto
the coming of the Lord, shall not prevent them which are
16 asleep. For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven
with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the
17 trump of God, and the dead in Christ shall rise first ; then
we which are alive *and* remain shall be caught up together
with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air ; and so
18 shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore, comfort one
another with these words.

V. But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no
2 need that I write unto you ; for yourselves know perfectly,
that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night.
3 When they shall say ; Peace and safety ; then sudden de-
struction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with
4 child ; and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren,
are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a
5 thief ; for ye are all the children of light, and the children of
6 the day ; we are not of the night, nor of darkness. There-
fore let us not sleep, as *do* others, but let us watch and be
7 sober. For they that sleep, sleep in the night ; and they
8 that be drunken, are drunken in the night ; but let us, who
are of the day, be sober, putting on the breast-plate of faith
9 and love, and for a helmet, the hope of salvation ; for God
hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our
10 Lord Jesus Christ, who died for us ; that, whether we wako
11 or sleep, we should live together with him. Wherefore,
comfort yourselves together, and edify one another, even as
also ye do.

12 And we beseech you, brethren, to know them which la-
bour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and ad-
13 monish you, and to esteem them very highly in love for their
work's sake ; *and* be at peace among yourselves. Now
14 we exhort you, brethren, warn them that are unruly, com-

fort the feeble-minded, support the weak, be patient toward
 15 all *men*. See that none render evil for evil unto any
man; but ever follow that which is good, both among your-
 16 17 selves, and to all *men*. Rejoice evermore. Pray
 18 without ceasing; in every thing give thanks; for this is the
 19 will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you. Quench
 20 21 not the Spirit; despise not prophesyings; but prove all
 22 things; hold fast that which is good; abstain from all ap-
 23 pearance of evil. And the very God of peace sancti-
 fify you wholly; and *I pray God* your whole spirit, and
 soul, and body, be preserved blameless unto the coming of
 24 our Lord Jesus Christ. Faithful is he that calleth you, who
 also will do *it*.
 25 26 Brethren, pray for us. Greet all the brethren with a
 27 holy kiss. I charge you by the Lord, that this epistle be
 28 read unto all the holy brethren. The grace of our Lord
 Jesus Christ be with you.

 THE

SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL

TO THE

THESSALONIANS.

PAUL, and Sylvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of
 the Thessalonians in God our Father and the Lord Jesus
 2 Christ; grace unto you, and peace, from God our Father
 and the Lord Jesus Christ.
 3 We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it
 is meet, because that your faith groweth exceedingly, and
 the charity of every one of you all toward each other
 4 aboundeth; so that we ourselves glory in you in the
 churches of God, for your patience and faith, in all your
 5 persecutions and tribulations that ye endure; *which is a*

manifest token of the righteous judgment of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God, for which
6 ye also suffer. Seeing it is a righteous thing with God to
7 recompense tribulation to them that trouble you, and to you who are troubled, rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall
8 be revealed from heaven, with his mighty angels, in flaming fire, taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that
9 obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ ; who shall be punished, with everlasting destruction, from the presence
10 of the Lord and from the glory of his power, when he shall come to be glorified in his saints, and to be admired in all them that have believed (because our testimony among you
11 was believed,) in that day. Wherefore also we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of *this* calling, and fulfill all the good pleasure of *his* goodness, and the
12 work of faith with power ; that the name of our Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

II. Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord
2 Jesus Christ, and *by* our gathering together unto him, that ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day
3 of the Lord is at hand. Let no man deceive you by any means ; for *that day shall not come*, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of
4 perdition, who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped, so that he sitteth in the
5 temple of God, shewing himself that he is God. Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you, I told you these
6 things ? And now ye know what withholdeth, that he
7 might be revealed in his time. For the mystery of iniquity doth already work, only he who now letteth *will let*, until he
8 be taken out of the way ; and then shall that Wicked be revealed ; whom the Lord Jesus shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of
9 his coming ; *even him*, whose coming is, after the working of Satan, with all power, and signs, and lying wonders,
10 and with all deceivableness of unrighteousness, in them that perish ; because they received not the love of the truth,
11 that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie ;
12 that they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

13 But we are bound to give thanks always to God for you,
brethren beloved of the Lord, because God hath from the
beginning chosen you to salvation, through sanctification of
14 the Spirit, and belief of the truth ; whereunto he called
you by our gospel, to the obtaining of the glory of our
15 Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, brethren, stand fast, and
hold the traditions, which ye have been taught, whether by
16 word, or our epistle. Now our Lord Jesus Christ himself,
and God, even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath
given us everlasting consolation and good hope through grace,
17 comfort your hearts, and establish you in every good word
and work.

III. Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the
Lord may have *free* course, and be glorified, even as *it is*
2 with you, and that we may be delivered from unreasonable
3 and wicked men ; for all *men* have not faith. But the
Lord is faithful, who shall establish you, and keep *you* from
4 evil. And we have confidence in the Lord touching you,
that ye both do and will do the things which we command
5 you. And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of
6 God, and into the patient waiting for Christ. Now
we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus
Christ, that ye withdraw yourselves from every brother that
walketh disorderly, and not after the tradition which they
7 received of us. For yourselves know how ye ought to follow
us ; for we behaved not ourselves disorderly among you,
8 neither did we eat any man's bread for nought, but wrought
with labour and travail night and day, that we might not be
9 chargeable to any of you. Not because we have not power,
but to make ourselves an ensample unto you to follow us.
10 For even when we were with you, this we commanded you,
11 that if any would not work, neither should he eat. For we
hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly,
12 working not at all, but are busybodies. Now them that are
such we command and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ,
13 that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread. But
14 ye, brethren, be not weary in well-doing. And if any man
obey not our word by this epistle, note that man ; and have no
15 company with him, that he may be ashamed ; yet count *him*
16 not as an enemy, but admonish *him* as a brother. Now
the Lord of peace himself give you peace always by all
means ; the Lord *be* with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the
18 token in every epistle ; so I write ; The grace of our Lord
Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

THE
FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL
TO
TIMOTHY.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the commandment of God, our Saviour, and Christ Jesus, *which is our hope,*
2 unto Timothy, *my own son in the faith;* grace, mercy, *and*
peace from God our Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus, when I went
into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they
4 teach no other doctrine, neither give heed to fables and endless
genealogies, which minister questions rather than the
dispensation of God which is by faith;

5 (Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a
pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeign-
6 ed; from which some having swerved, have turned aside
7 unto vain jangling, desiring to be teachers of the law, under-
standing neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.
8 But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully,
9 knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man,
but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for
sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and
10 murderers of mothers, for man-slayers, for whoremongers,
for them that defile themselves with mankind, for men-
stealers, for liars, for perjured persons, and if there be any
11 other thing that is contrary to sound doctrine, according
to the glorious gospel of the blessed God which was com-
12 mitted to my trust; and I thank Christ Jesus our Lord, who
hath enabled me, for that he counted me faithful, putting me
13 into the ministry, who was before a blasphemer, and a perse-
cutor, and injurious; but I obtained mercy, because I did it
14 ignorantly in unbelief, and the grace of our Lord was ex-

ceeding abundant with faith and love which is in Christ
15 Jesus ; this *is* a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation,
that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of
16 whom I am chief ; howbeit, for this cause I obtained mercy,
that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all long-suffer-
ing, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on
17 him to life everlasting ; now unto the King eternal, immortal,
invisible, the only God, *be* honour and glory for ever and ever ;
amen.)

18 This charge I commit unto thee, son Timothy, according
to the prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by
19 them mightest war a good warfare, holding faith and a good
conscience, which some having put away, concerning faith
20 have made shipwreck ; of whom is Hymeneus and Alexander,
whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn
not to blaspheme.

II. I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers,
2 intercessions, *and* giving of thanks be made for all men ; for
kings, and *for* all that are in authority ; that we may lead a
3 quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. For
this *is* good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour,
4 who will have all men to be saved, and to come unto the
5 knowledge of the truth. For *there is* one God, and one me-
diator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus, who gave
himself a ransom for all ; a doctrine attested in due time,
7 whereunto I am ordained a preacher and an apostle, (I speak
the truth *and* lie not,) a teacher of the Gentiles in faith and
8 verity. I will therefore that men pray every where,
9 lifting up holy hands, without wrath and doubting. In like
manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest appa-
rel, with shamefacedness and sobriety, not with broidered
10 hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array, but, (which becom-
11 eth women professing godliness,) with good works. Let the
12 woman learn in silence with all subjection. But I suffer
not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man,
13 but to be in silence. For Adam was first formed, then
14 Eve. And Adam was not deceived ; but the woman being
15 deceived was in the transgression ; notwithstanding, she shall
be saved in child-bearing, if they continue in faith, and chari-
ty, and holiness, with sobriety.

III. This *is* a true saying ; If a man desire the office of a
2 bishop, he desireth a good work. A bishop then must be
blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good

3 behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach; not given to
 wine, no striker, but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;
 4 one that ruleth well his own house, having his children in
 5 subjection with all gravity; (for if a man know not how to
 rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of
 6 God?) not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall
 7 into the condemnation of the devil; moreover, he must have
 a good report of them which are without, lest he fall into re-
 8 proach and the snare of the devil. Likewise *must*
 the deacons *be* grave, not double-tongued, not given to much
 9 wine, not greedy of filthy lucre, holding the mystery of the
 10 faith in a pure conscience. And let these also first be
 proved, then let them use the office of a deacon, being *found*
 11 blameless. Even so *must their wives be* grave, not slander-
 12 ers, sober, faithful in all things. Let the deacons be the
 husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own
 13 houses well. For they that have used the office of a deacon
 well, purchase to themselves a good degree, and great bold-
 14 ness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus. These
 things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly;
 15 but if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest
 to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church
 of the living God.

16 The pillar and ground of the truth, and without contro-
 versy great, is the mystery of godliness; He who was mani-
 fest in the flesh, was justified in the Spirit, seen of angels,
 preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, re-
 IV. ceived up into glory. Now the Spirit speaketh express-
 ly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giv-
 2 ing heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils, speaking
 lies in hypocrisy, having their conscience seared with a hot
 3 iron, forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abstain from
 meats, which God hath created to be received with thanks-
 4 giving of them which believe and know the truth. For
 every creature of God *is* good, and nothing to be refused, if
 5 it be received with thanksgiving; for it is sanctified by the
 6 word of God, and prayer. If thou put the brethren
 in remembrance of these things, thou shalt be a good minis-
 ter of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith, and of
 7 good doctrine, wherunto thou hast attained. But refuse
 profane and old wives' fables; and exercise thyself *rather*
 8 unto godliness. For bodily exercise profiteth little; but
 godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life

9 that now is, and of that which is to come. This is a faithful
10 saying, and worthy of all acceptation. For therefore we
both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust in the
living God, who is the Saviour of all men, especially of those
11 that believe. These things command and teach.
12 Let no man despise thy youth, but be thou an example of
the believers, in word, in conversation, in charity, in faith, in
13 purity. Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhorta-
14 tion, to doctrine. Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which
was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands
15 of the presbytery. Meditate upon these things, give thyself
16 wholly to them; that thy profiting may appear to all. Take
heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them;
for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself and them that
hear thee.

V. Rebuke not an elder, but entreat *him* as a father; and
2 the younger men, as brethren; the elder women, as moth-
ers; the younger, as sisters, with all purity.
3 4 Honour widows that are widows indeed. But if any
widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to shew
piety at home, and to requite their parents; for that is ac-
5 ceptable before God. Now she that is a widow indeed, and
desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications
6 and prayers night and day; but she that liveth in pleasure,
7 is dead while she liveth. And these things give in charge,
8 that they may be blameless. But if any provide not for his
own, and especially for those of his own house, he hath denied
9 the faith, and is worse than an infidel. Let not a widow
be taken into the number under threescore years old, the
10 wife of one man, well reported of for good works; if she
have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if
she have washed the saints' feet, if she have relieved the
afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work.
11 But the younger widows refuse; for when they have begun
12 to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry; having dam-
13 nation, because they have cast off their first faith; and withal
they learn to be idle, wandering about from house to house;
and not only idle, but tattlers also, and busy bodies, speaking
14 things which they ought not. I will therefore that the
younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give
15 none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully. For
16 some are already turned aside after Satan. If any man or
woman that believeth have widows, let them relieve them,

and let not the church be charged, that it may relieve them that are widows indeed.

- 17 Let the elders that rule well, be counted worthy of double honour ; especially they who labour in the word and doctrine. For the scripture saith ; Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn ; and ; The labourer is worthy of his reward. Against an elder receive not an accusation, but before two or three witnesses. Them that sin rebuke before all, that others also may fear. I charge thee before God and the Lord Jesus Christ and the elect angels, that thou observe these things without preferring one before another, doing nothing by partiality. Lay hands suddenly on no man, neither be partaker of other men's sins.
- 23 Keep thyself pure. Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake, and thine often infirmities.
- 24 Some men's sins are open beforehand, going before to judgment ; and some *men* they follow after. Likewise also the good works of *some* are manifest beforehand ; and they that are otherwise cannot be hid.

VI. Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour, that the name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed. And they that have believing masters, let them not despise *them*, because they are brethren ; but rather do *them* service, because the partakers of the benefit are faithful and beloved. These things teach and exhort.

- 3 If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, *even* the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness ; he is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envy, strife, railings, evil surmises, perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness. From such withdraw thyself. But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into *this* world ; and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment, let us be therewith content. But they that will be rich, fall into temptation, and a snare, and *into* many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil ; which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.
- 11 But thou, O man of God, flee these things ;

- and follow after righteousness, godliness, faith, love, patience,
 12 meekness ; fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal
 life, whereunto thou art called, and hast professed a good
 13 profession before many witnesses. I give thee charge in the
 sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and *before* Christ
 Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confes-
 14 sion, that thou keep *this* commandment without spot, unre-
 15 buckable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ, which
 in his times he shall shew, *who is* the blessed and only Po-
 16 tentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords, who only hath
 immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach
 unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see ; to whom *be*
 honour and power everlasting ; amen.
- 17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not
 high-minded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living
 18 God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy ; that they do
 good, that they be rich in good works, ready to distribute,
 19 willing to communicate, laying up in store for themselves
 a good foundation against the time to come, that they may
 lay hold on the true life.
- 20 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust,
 avoiding profane *and* vain babblings, and oppositions of
 21 science falsely so called ; which some professing, have erred
 concerning the faith. Grace *be* with thee.

THE

SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL

TO

TIMOTHY.

- PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, ac-
 2 cording to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus, to
 Timothy, *my* dearly beloved son ; grace, mercy, *and* peace,
 from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

- 3 I thank God, whom I serve from *my* forefathers with pure
conscience, that without ceasing I have remembrance of thee
4 in my prayers night and day, greatly desiring to see thee,
being mindful of thy tears, that I may be filled with joy ;
5 when I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in
thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy
mother Eunice ; and I am persuaded, that in thee also.
- 6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance, that thou stir up
the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my
7 hands ; for God hath not given us the spirit of fear, but of
8 power, and of love, and of a sound mind. Be not
thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord, nor
of me his prisoner ; but be thou partaker of the afflictions of
9 the gospel according to the power of God, who hath saved
us, and called *us* with a holy calling, not according to our
works, but according to his own purpose and grace which
10 was given us in Christ Jesus before the world began, but is
now made manifest by the appearing of our Saviour Jesus
Christ, who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and
11 immortality to light through the gospel, wherunto I am ap-
pointed a preacher, and an apostle, and a teacher of the
12 Gentiles ; for the which cause I also suffer these things,
nevertheless I am not ashamed ; for I know whom I have be-
lieved, and am persuaded that he is able to keep that which
13 I have committed unto him against that day. Hold
fast the form of sound words, which thou hast heard of me,
14 in faith and love which is in Christ Jesus ; that good thing
which was committed unto thee keep by the Holy Ghost
which dwelleth in us.
- 15 This thou knowest, that all they which are in Asia be
turned away from me, of whom are Phygellus and Hermo-
16 genes. The Lord give mercy unto the house of Onesipho-
rus ; for he oft refreshed me, and was not ashamed of my
17 chain, but, when he was in Rome, he sought me out very
18 diligently, and found *me* ; (the Lord grant unto him that he
may find mercy of the Lord in that day ;) and in how many
things he ministered unto me at Ephesus, thou knowest very
well.
- II. Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in
2 Christ Jesus ; and the things that thou hast heard of me
among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men,
3 who shall be able to teach others also. Thou therefore en-
4 dure hardness, as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. No

man that warreth entangleth himself with the affairs of *this* life, that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a
5 soldier. And if a man also strive for masteries, *yet* is he not
6 crowned, except he strive lawfully. The husbandman that
7 laboureth must be first partaker of the fruits. Consider
8 what I say; and the Lord give thee understanding in all
things. Remember that Jesus Christ, of the seed of
David, was raised from the dead, according to my gospel;
9 wherin I suffer trouble, as an evil doer, *even* unto bonds;
10 but the word of God is not bound. Therefore I endure all
things for the elect's sake, that they may also obtain the sal-
11 vation which is in Christ Jesus, with eternal glory. *It is a*
faithful saying; for if we be dead with *him*, we shall also live
12 with *him*; if we suffer, we shall also reign with *him*; if we
13 deny *him*, he also will deny us; if we believe not, *yet* he
14 abideth faithful; he cannot deny himself. Of these
things put *them* in remembrance, charging *them* before the
Lord that they strive not about words, to no profit, *but* to
15 the subverting of the hearers. Study to shew thyself ap-
proved unto God, a workman that needeth not be ashamed,
16 rightly dividing the word of truth. But shun profane *and*
vain babblings; for they will increase unto more ungodli-
17 ness, and their word will eat as doth a canker; of whom is
18 Hymeneus and Philetus, who concerning the truth have
erred, saying that the resurrection is past already, and over-
19 throw the faith of some. Nevertheless the founda-
tion of God standeth sure, having this seal; The Lord know-
eth them that are his; and; Let every one that nameth the
20 name of the Lord depart from iniquity. But in a great
house there are not only vessels of gold and of silver, but
also of wood and of earth; and some to honour, and some
21 to dishonour. If a man therefore purge himself from these,
he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the
22 master's use, *and* prepared unto every good work. Flee
also youthful lusts; but follow righteousness, faith, charity,
peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.
23 But foolish and unlearned questions avoid, knowing that
24 they do gender strifes; and the servant of the Lord must
not strive, but be gentle unto all *men*, apt to teach, patient,
25 in meekness instructing those that oppose themselves; if
God peradventure will give them repentance to the acknowl-
26 edging of the truth, and *that* they may recover themselves
out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him
at his will.

III. This know also, that in the last days perilous times shall
2 come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, covet-
ous, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents,
3 unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, truce-breakers,
false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are
4 good, traitors, beady, high-minded, lovers of pleasure more
5 than lovers of God ; having a form of godliness, but denying
6 the power thereof. From such turn away. For of this sort
are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly wo-
7 men laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, ever learning,
and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.
8 Now as Jannes and Jambres withstood Moses, so do these
also resist the truth, men of corrupt minds, reprobate con-
9 cerning the faith. But they shall proceed no further ; for
their folly shall be manifest unto all *men*, as theirs also
10 was. But thou hast fully known my doctrine, man-
ner of life, purpose, faith, long-suffering, charity, patience,
11 persecutions, afflictions, which came unto me at Antioch, at
Iconium, at Lystra ; what persecutions I endured, but out of
12 *them* all the Lord delivered me. Yea, and all that will live
13 godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution. But evil
men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving and
14 being deceived. But continue thou in the things which
thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of whom
15 thou hast learned *them*, and that from a child thou hast
known the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee
wise unto salvation, through faith which is in Christ Jesus.
16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profit-
able for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in
17 righteousness ; that the man of God may be perfect, tho-
IV. roughly furnished unto all good works. I charge
thee before God, and Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick
2 and the dead, and by his appearing and his kingdom ; preach
the word, be instant in season, out of season, reprove, re-
3 buke, exhort with all long-suffering and doctrine. For the
time will come, when they will not endure sound doctrine,
but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teach-
4 ers, having itching ears ; and they shall turn away *their* ears
5 from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables. But watch
thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evan-
gelist, make full proof of thy ministry.
6 For I am now ready to be offered, and the time of my
7 departure is at hand ; I have fought a good fight, I have

- 8 finished *my* course, I have kept the faith; henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that day, and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing.
- 9 10 Do thy diligence to come shortly unto me. For Demas hath forsaken me, having loved this present world, and is departed unto Thessalonica; Crescens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia; only Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee; for he is profitable to me for the ministry.
- 12 13 And Tychicus have I sent to Ephesus. The cloak that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comest, bring *with thee*, and
- 14 the books, *but* especially the parchments. Alexander the copper-smith did me much evil; the Lord reward him according to his works; of whom be thou ware also, for he hath greatly withstood our words. At my first answer no man stood with me, but all *men* forsook me; (*I*
- 17 *pray God* that it may not be laid to their charge;) notwithstanding, the Lord stood with me, and strengthened me, that by me the preaching might be fully known, and *that* all the Gentiles might hear; and I was delivered out of the mouth
- 18 of the lion; and the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work, and will preserve *me* unto his heavenly kingdom; to whom *be* glory for ever and ever; amen.
- 19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of Onesiphorus. Erastus abode at Corinth; but Trophimus have I left
- 21 at Miletum sick. Do thy diligence to come before winter. Eubulus greeteth thee, and Pudens, and Linus,
- 22 and Claudia, and all the brethren. The Lord Jesus Christ *be* with thy spirit. Grace *be* with you.

THE
EPISTLE OF PAUL
TO
TITUS.

PAUL, a servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus Christ, (according to the faith of God's elect, and the acknowledging of the truth which is after godliness, in hope of eternal life, which God, that cannot lie, promised before the world began, but hath in due times manifested his word, through preaching which is committed unto me according to the commandment of God our Saviour,) to Titus, *mine* own son after the common faith; grace, mercy, and peace, from God the Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ our Saviour.

For this cause left I thee in Crete, that thou shouldest set in order the things that are wanting, and ordain elders in every city, as I had appointed thee; if any be blameless, the husband of one wife, having faithful children, not accused of riot, or unruly. For a bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre, but a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate, holding fast the faithful word as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort, and to convince the gainsayers. For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, especially they of the circumcision, whose mouths must be stopped; who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre's sake. One of themselves, *even* a prophet of their own, said; The Cretians are always liars, evil beasts, slow bellies. This witness is true; wherefore rebuke them sharply, that they may be sound in the faith, not giving heed to Jewish fables, and commandments of men that turn from

15 the truth. Unto the pure all things are pure ; but unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure, but
 16 even their mind and conscience is defiled. They profess that they know God, but in works they deny *him*, being abominable and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.

II. But speak thou the things which become sound doctrine ;
 2 that the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith,
 3 in charity, in patience ; the aged women likewise, that *they* be in behaviour as becometh holiness, not false accusers, not
 4 given to much wine, teachers of good things, that they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands,
 5 to love their children, *to be* discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word
 6 of God be not blasphemed. Young men likewise
 7 exhort to be sober-minded ; in all things shewing thyself a pattern of good works, in doctrine *shewing* uncorruptness,
 8 gravity, sound speech that cannot be condemned ; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil
 9 thing to say of us. *Exhort* servants to be obedient unto their own masters, *and* to please *them* well in all things,
 10 not answering again, not purloining, but shewing all good fidelity ; that they may adorn the doctrine of God our Sa-
 11 viour in all things. For the grace of God that
 12 bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, teaching us, that denying ungodliness, and worldly lusts, we should live so-
 13 berly, righteously and godly, in this present world ; looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great
 14 God and our Saviour Jesus Christ ; who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works.
 15 These things speak and exhort, and rebuke with all authority ; let no man despise thee.

III. Put them in mind to be subject to principalities and powers, to obey magistrates, to be ready to every good
 2 work, to speak evil of no man, to be no brawlers, *but* gentle,
 3 shewing all meekness unto all men. For we our-
 selves also were sometimes foolish, disobedient, deceived, serving divers lusts and pleasures, living in malice and envy,
 4 hateful, *and* hating one another. But after that the kind-
 5 ness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, not by works of righteousness which we have done, but accord-
 ing to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regenera-

- 6 tion, and renewing of the Holy Ghost, which he shed on us
 7 abundantly, through Jesus Christ our Saviour, that being
 justified by his grace, we should be made heirs according to
 8 the hope of eternal life. *This is a faithful saying ;—and these*
things I will that thou affirm constantly, that they which
have believed in God might be careful to maintain good
works. These things are good and profitable unto
 9 *men ; but avoid foolish questions, and genealogies, and con-*
tentions, and strivings about the law ; for they are unprofit-
 10 *able and vain. A man that is a heretic after the first and*
 11 *second admonition reject ; knowing that he that is such is*
subverted, and sinneth, being condemned of himself.
 12 When I shall send Artemas unto thee, or Tychicus, be
 diligent to come unto me to Nicopolis ; for I have deter-
 13 mined there to winter. Bring Zenas the lawyer and Apol-
 los on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto
 14 them. And let ours also learn to maintain good works for
 15 necessary uses, that they be not unfruitful. All that
 are with me salute thee ; greet them that love us in the faith.
 Grace be with you all.

THE

EPISTLE OF PAUL

TO

PHILEMON.

- PAUL, a prisoner of Jesus Christ, and Timothy *our* brother,
 unto Philemon our dearly beloved and fellow-labourer,
 2 and to *our* beloved Apphia, and Archippus our fellow-sol-
 3 dier, and to the church in thy house ; grace to you, and
 peace, from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
 4 I always thank my God, making mention of thee in my

- 6 prayers, hearing of thy love and faith, which thou hast to-
5 ward the Lord Jesus and toward all saints; that the com-
munication of thy faith may become effectual, by the ac-
knowledging of every good thing which is in us, in Christ
7 Jesus. For we have great joy and consolation in thy love,
because the bowels of the saints are refreshed by thee,
brother.
- 8 Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ to enjoin
9 thee that which is convenient, yet for love's sake I rather
beseech *thee*; being such a one as Paul the aged, and now
10 also a prisoner of Jesus Christ; I beseech thee for my son
11 Onesimus, whom I have begotten in my bonds, which in time
past was to thee unprofitable, but now profitable to thee and
12 to me, whom I have sent again; thou therefore receive him,
13 that is, mine own bowels. Whom I would have retained
with me, that in thy stead he might have ministered unto me
14 in the bonds of the gospel; but without thy mind would I do
nothing, that thy benefit should not be as it were of necessi-
15 ty but willingly. For perhaps he therefore departed for a
16 season, that thou shouldest receive him for ever; not now as
a servant, but above a servant, a brother beloved, especially
to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the flesh, and
17 in the Lord. If thou count me therefore a partner, receive
18 him as myself. If he hath wronged thee, or oweth *thee*
19 ought, put that on mine account. I Paul have written *it*
with mine own hand, I will repay *it*; albeit I do not say to
thee, how thou owest unto me even thine own self besides.
20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord; refresh
21 my bowels in Christ. Having confidence in thy obedience
I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt also do more than
I say.
- 22 But withal prepare me also a lodging; for I trust that
23 through your prayers I shall be given unto you. Epa-
phras saluteth thee, my fellow-prisoner in Christ Jesus, and
24 Marcus, Aristarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellow-labourers.
25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with your spirit.

THE
EPISTLE
TO THE
HEBREWS.

God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake
 2 in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, hath in these
 last days spoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed
 heir of all things, (by whom also he made the worlds,)
 3 who (being the brightness of *his* glory and the express image
 of *his* person, and upholding all things by the word of *his*
 power,) when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down
 4 on the right hand of the Majesty on high; being
 made so much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance
 obtained a more excellent name than they.

5 For unto which of the angels said he at any time; Thou
 art my Son, this day have I begotten thee? and again; I
 6 will be to him a Father, and he shall be to me a Son? And
 again, when he bringeth in the first-begotten into the world,
 he saith; And let all the angels of God worship him.
 7 And of the angels he saith; Who maketh his angels spi-
 8 rits, and his ministers a flame of fire; but unto the Son
he saith; God is thy throne for ever and ever; a sceptre of
 9 righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom. Thou hast
 loved righteousness, and hated iniquity; therefore God,
even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness
 10 above thy fellows. And; Thou, Lord, in the beginning,
 hast laid the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are
 11 the works of thy hands. They shall perish, but thou re-
 12 mainest; and they all shall wax old as doth a garment, and
 as a vesture shalt thou fold them up, and they shall be
 changed; but thou art the same, and thy years shall not
 13 fail. But to which of the angels said he at any time; Sit on

- my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool ?
- 14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation ?
- II. Therefore we ought to give the more earnest heed to the things which we have heard, lest at any time we should let
- 2 *them* slip. For if the word spoken by angels was steadfast, and every transgression and disobedience received a just
- 3 recompense of reward ; how shall we escape, if we neglect so great salvation ? which at the first began to be spoken by the Lord, and was confirmed unto us by them that heard
- 4 *him*, God also bearing *them* witness, both with signs and wonders, and with divers miracles, and gifts of the Holy
- 5 Ghost, according to his own will. For unto the angels hath he not put in subjection the world to come,
- 6 whereof we speak. But one in a certain place testified, saying ; What is man, that thou art mindful of him ; or the
- 7 son of man, that thou visitest him ? Thou madest him a little lower than the angels ; thou crownedst him with glory
- 8 and honour ; thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him, he left nothing *that is* not put under him ; but now we see not yet
- 9 all things put under him. But we see Jesus who was made a little lower than the angels, for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour ; that he by the grace of God
- 10 should taste death for every man. For it became him, for whom *are* all things, and by whom *are* all things, to make the Captain of their salvation, in bringing many sons
- 11 unto glory, perfect through sufferings. For both he that sanctifieth, and they who are sanctified *are* all of one ; for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren,
- 12 saying ; I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the church will I sing praise unto
- 13 thee. And again ; I will put my trust in him ; and again ;
- 14 Behold, I, and the children which God hath given me. Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same, that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death,
- 15 that is, the devil, and deliver them, who, through fear of death, were all their life-time subject to bondage. For verily he took not on him *the nature of* angels, but he took on
- 17 him the seed of Abraham. Wherefore in all things it behooved him to be made like unto *his* brethren, that he might be a merciful and faithful High Priest in things *pertaining*

to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.
 18 For in that he himself hath suffered, being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.

III. Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession,
 2 Jesus ; who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also
 3 Moses *was faithful* in all his house. For this *man* was counted worthy of more glory than Moses, inasmuch as he who hath builded the house, hath more honour than the house.
 4 (For every house is builded by some *man* ; but he that built
 5 all things *is* God.) And Moses verily *was* faithful in all his house, as a servant, for a testimony of those things which
 6 were to be spoken after ; but Christ as a Son over his house ; whose house are we, if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.

7 Wherefore, as the Holy Ghost saith ; To-day, if ye will hear
 8 his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in
 9 the day of temptation in the wilderness, when your fathers tempted me, proved me, and saw my works, forty years ;
 10 wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and said ;
 11 They do always err in *their* heart ; and they have not known
 12 my ways ; so I swear in my wrath ; They shall not enter into
 13 my rest ; take heed, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God ;
 14 but exhort one another daily, while it is called to-day, lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin.
 15 For we are made partakers of Christ, if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast unto the end. While it is said ; To-day, if ye will hear his voice ; harden not your
 16 hearts, as in the provocation. For who, when they had heard, provoked ? did not all that came out of Egypt by Moses ?
 17 And with whom was he grieved forty years ? *was it* not with them that had sinned ? whose carcasses fell in the wilderness.
 18 And to whom swore he that they should not enter into his
 19 rest, but to them that believed not ? So we see that they
 IV. could not enter in because of unbelief.

Let us therefore fear, lest, a promise being left us of entering into his rest, any of you should seem to come short of it.
 2 For unto us was the gospel preached, as well as unto them ; but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed
 3 with faith in them that heard *it*. For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said ; As I have sworn in my wrath ; If they shall enter into my rest ; although the works

- 4 were finished from the foundation of the world. For he spake in a certain place of the seventh *day* on this wise ;
 5 And God did rest the seventh day from all his works ; and in
 6 this *place* again ; If they shall enter into my rest. Seeing therefore it remaineth that some must enter therein, and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because
 7 of unbelief ; again he limiteth a certain day, saying in David ; To-day, after so long a time ; (as it is said ;) To-day, if ye
 8 will hear his voice, harden not your hearts. For if Jesus had given them rest, then would he not afterward have spoken of another day. There remaineth therefore a rest to the
 9 people of God. For he that is entered into his rest, he also hath ceased from his own works, as God *did* from
 10 his. Let us labour therefore to enter into that rest,
 11 lest any man fall after the same example of unbelief. For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a
 12 discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart ; neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight, but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.
 13 Seeing then that we have a great High Priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast *our*
 14 profession. For we have not a high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities, but was in all
 15 points tempted like as *we are*, yet without sin. Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain
 16 mercy, and find grace to help in time of need. For every high priest taken from among men, is ordained for men in things *pertaining* to God, that he may offer both
 17 gifts and sacrifices for sins ; who can have compassion on the ignorant, and on them that are out of the way, for that
 18 he himself also is compassed with infirmity ; and by reason hereof he ought, as for the people, so also for himself, to
 19 offer for sins. And no man taketh this honour unto himself, but *he that* is called of God, as *was* Aaron. So also Christ glorified not himself to be made a high priest, but he that said unto him ; Thou art my Son, to-day have I begotten thee ; as he saith also in another *place* ; Thou art a priest for
 20 ever, after the order of Melchisedec. Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications, with strong crying and tears, unto him that was able to save

8 him from death, and was heard in that he feared, (though he were a Son,) learned obedience by the things which
 9 he suffered; and being made perfect, he became the author
 10 of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him; called of God a high priest after the order of Melchisedec.

11 Of whom we have many things to say, and hard to be
 12 uttered, seeing ye are dull of hearing. For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which be the first principles of the oracles of God; and are become such as have need of milk, and not of strong
 13 meat. For every one that useth milk, is unskilful in the
 14 word of righteousness; for he is a babe; but strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, *even* those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good
 VI. and evil.

Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and
 2 of faith toward God, of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of
 3 eternal judgment. And this will we do, if God permit.
 4 For it is impossible for those who were once

enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were
 5 made partakers of the Holy Ghost, and have tasted the good
 6 word of God, and the powers of the world to come, if they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance, seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put
 7 *him* to an open shame. For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God;
 8 but that which beareth thorns and briers is rejected, and is
 9 nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned. But,

beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things
 10 that accompany salvation, though we thus speak. For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and love, which ye have shewed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to
 11 the saints, and do minister. And we desire that every one of you do shew the same diligence to the full assurance of
 12 hope unto the end; that ye be not slothful, but followers of them who through faith and patience inherit the promises.
 13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could
 14 swear by no greater, he swore by himself, saying; Surely blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying I will multiply
 15 thee. And so, after he had patiently endured, he obtained

16 the promise. For men verily swear by the greater, and an
 17 oath for confirmation *is* to them an end of all strife. Where-
 in God, willing more abundantly to shew unto the heirs of
 promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed *it* by an
 18 oath, that by two immutable things, in which *it was* im-
 possible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation,
 who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set be-
 19 fore us ; which *hope* we have as an anchor of the soul,
 both sure and steadfast, and which entereth into that within
 20 the vail, whither the forerunner is for us entered, *even* Jesus,
 made a high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

VII. For this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the most
 high God, (who met Abraham returning from the slaughter
 2 of the kings, and blessed him, to whom also Abraham gave
 a tenth part of all,) first being by interpretation King of
 righteousness, and after that also King of Salem, (which is,
 3 King of peace,) without father, without mother, without de-
 scent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life, but
 made like unto the Son of God, abideth a priest continual-
 4 ly. Now consider how great this man *was*, unto whom
 even the patriarch Abraham gave the tenth of the spoils.
 5 And verily they that are of the sons of Levi, who receive
 the office of the priesthood, have a commandment to take
 tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their
 brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham ;
 6 but he whose descent is not counted from them received
 tithes of Abraham, and blessed him that had the promises.
 7 And without all contradiction the less is blessed of the bet-
 8 ter. And here men that die receive tithes ; but there he
 9 *receiveth them*, of whom it is witnessed that he liveth. And
 as I may so say, Levi also, who receiveth tithes, payed
 10 tithes in Abraham ; for he was yet in the loins of his father
 11 when Melchisedec met him. If therefore perfection
 were by the Levitical priesthood ; (for under it the people
 received the law ;) what further need *was there* that another
 priest should rise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be
 12 called after the order of Aaron ? For the priesthood being
 changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the
 13 law. For he of whom these things are spoken pertaineth
 to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the
 14 altar ; for *it is* evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda,
 of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priest-
 15 hood. And it is yet far more evident, for that after the

16 similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest, who
 is made, not after the law of a carnal commandment, but
 17 after the power of an endless life. For he testifieth ;
 Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchise-
 18 dec.

For there is verily a disannulling of the com-
 mandment going before, for the weakness and unprofitableness
 19 thereof ; (for the law made nothing perfect ;) but the bring-
 ing in of a better hope, by the which we draw nigh un-
 20 to God. And inasmuch as not without an oath *he was made*
 21 *priest* ; (for those priests were made without an oath ; but
 this with an oath, by him that said unto him ; The Lord
 sware, and will not repent ; Thou art a priest for ever after
 22 the order of Melchisedec ;) by so much was Jesus made a
 23 surety of a better testament.

And they truly were
 many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by
 24 reason of death ; but this *man*, because he continueth ever,
 25 hath an unchangeable priesthood ; wherefore he is able
 also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by
 him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for
 26 them.

For such a high priest became us, *who is*
 holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made
 27 higher than the heavens ; who needeth not daily, as those
 high priests, to offer up sacrifice first for his own sins, and
 then for the people's ; for this he did once, when he offered
 28 up himself. For the law maketh men high priests, which
 have infirmity ; but the word of the oath, which was since
 the law, *maketh* the Son, who is consecrated for evermore.

VIII. Now of the things which we have spoken *this is* the
 sum ; we have such a high priest, who is set on the right hand

2 of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens, a minister of the
 sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord
 3 pitched, and not man. For every high priest is ordained
 to offer gifts and sacrifices ; wherefore *it is* of necessity
 4 that this man have somewhat also to offer. For if he were
 on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are
 5 priests that offer gifts according to the law ; (who serve
 unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses
 was admonished of God when he was about to make the
 tabernacle ; for, See, saith he, *that* thou make all things ac-
 6 cording to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount ;) but
 now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how
 much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which
 7 was established upon better promises. For if that

first *covenant* had been faultless, then should no place have
8 been sought for the second. For finding fault with them,
he saith ; Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I
will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the
9 house of Judah ; not according to the covenant that I made
with their fathers, in the day when I took them by the hand,
to lead them out of the land of Egypt ; because they con-
tinued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the
10 Lord. For this is the covenant that I will make with the
house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord, I will put
my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts ; and
I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people.
11 And they shall not teach every man his *fellow-citizen*, and
every man his brother, saying ; Know the Lord ; for all shall
12 know me, from the least to the greatest. For I will be mer-
ciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniqui-
13 ties will I remember no more. In that he saith, a new *cove-*
nant, he hath made the first old ; now that which decayeth
and waxeth old, is ready to vanish away.

IX. Then verily the first *covenant* had also ordinances of
2 divine service, and a worldly sanctuary. For there was a
tabernacle made ; the first, wherein *was* the candlestick, and
the table, and the shew-bread, which is called the sanctuary ;
3 and after the second vail, the tabernacle, which is called the
4 Holiest of all, which had the golden censer, and the ark of
the covenant overlaid round about with gold, wherein *was*
the golden pot that had manna, and Aaron's rod that budded,
5 and the tables of the covenant ; and over it the cherubims
of glory, shadowing the mercy-seat ; of which we cannot
6 now speak particularly. Now when these things were thus
ordained, the priests went always into the first tabernacle,
7 accomplishing the service of *God* ; but into the second *went*
the high priest alone once every year, not without blood,
which he offered for himself, and *for* the errors of the peo-
8 ple ; the Holy Ghost this signifying, that the way into the
holiest of all was not yet made manifest, while as the first
9 tabernacle was yet standing ; which *was* a figure for the time
then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices,
that could not make him that did the service per-
10 fect as pertaining to the conscience, *which stood* only in
meats and drinks, and divers washings, carnal ordinances,
11 imposed *on them* until the time of reformation. But
Christ being come, a high priest of good things to come, by

a greater and more perfect tabernacle, not made with hands,
 12 (that is to say, not of this building,) neither by the blood of
 goats and calves, but by his own blood, he entered in once
 into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption *for*
 13 *us*. For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of
 a heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth to the purifying of
 14 the flesh; how much more shall the blood of Christ, who
 through the eternal Spirit offered himself without spot to
 God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the
 15 living God. And for this cause he is the mediator
 of the new testament, that by means of death, for the re-
 demption of the transgressions *that were* under the first tes-
 tament, they which are called might receive the promise
 16 of eternal inheritance. For where a testament is, there
 17 must also of necessity be the death of the testator; for a
 testament is of force after men are dead, otherwise it
 18 is of no strength at all while the testator liveth. Where-
 upon neither the first *testament* was dedicated with-
 19 out blood. For when Moses had spoken every pre-
 cept to all the people according to the law, he took
 the blood of calves and of goats, with water, and scarlet
 wool, and hyssop, and sprinkled both the book and all the
 20 people, saying; *This is the blood of the testament which*
 21 *God hath enjoined unto you*; moreover, he sprinkled like-
 wise with blood both the tabernacle, and all the vessels of
 22 the ministry. And almost all things are by the law purged
 with blood, and without shedding of blood is no remission.
 23 *It was* therefore necessary that the patterns of things in the
 heavens should be purified with these; but the heavenly
 24 things themselves with better sacrifices than these. For
 Christ is not entered into the holy places made with hands,
which are the figures of the true, but into heaven itself, now
 25 to appear in the presence of God for us. Nor yet,
 that he should offer himself often, as the high priest entereth
 26 into the holy place every year with blood of others; (for
 then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the
 world;) but now once in the end of the world, to put away
 27 sin, hath he appeared for the sacrifice of himself. And as
 it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judg-
 28 ment; so also Christ was once offered to bear the sins of
 many, and unto them that look for him unto salvation shall
 X. he appear the second time without sin. For the law
 having a shadow of good things to come, *and* not the very

image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually, make the comers
2 thereunto perfect. For then would they not have ceased to be offered, because that the worshippers, once purged,
3 should have had no more conscience of sins? But in those *sacrifices there is* a remembrance again *made* of sins every
4 year. For *it is* not possible that the blood of bulls and of
5 goats should take away sins. Wherefore, when he cometh into the world, he saith; Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest
6 not, but a body hast thou prepared me; in burnt-offerings
7 and *sacrifices* for sin thou hast had no pleasure. Then said I; Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of
8 me) to do thy will, O God. Above, when he said; Sacrifice and offering and burnt-offerings and *offering* for sin
thou wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure *therein*; (which
9 are offered by the law;) then said he; Lo, I come to do thy will. He taketh away the first, that he may establish
10 the second. By the which will we are sanctified through the
11 offering of the body of Jesus Christ once *for all*. And every priest standeth daily ministering, and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins;
12 but this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins, for
13 ever sat down on the right hand of God, from henceforth
14 expecting till his enemies be made his footstool. For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are sanctified. *Whereof* the Holy Ghost also is a witness to us.
16 For after that he had said before; This *is* the covenant that I will make with them after those days; the Lord saith; I
will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I
17 write them, and their sins and iniquities will I remember no
18 more. Now, where remission of these *is*, *there is* no more offering for sin.
19 Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the
20 holiest by the blood of Jesus, by a new and living way, which he hath consecrated for us, through the vail, (that is
21 to say, his flesh,) and *having* a high priest over the house of
22 God; let us draw near with a true heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled from an evil conscience;
23 and having our bodies washed with pure water, let us hold fast the profession of *our* faith without wavering; (for he *is*
24 faithful that promised;) and let us consider one another, to
25 provoke unto love and to good works, not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some *is*,

but exhorting *one another* ; and so much the more, as ye see
 26 the day approaching. For if we sin wilfully after
 that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there
 27 remaineth no more sacrifice for sins ; but a certain fearful
 looking for of judgment, and fiery indignation, which shall
 28 devour the adversaries. He that despised Moses' law died
 29 without mercy under two or three witnesses ; of how much
 sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy,
 who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath
 counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was sanc-
 30 tified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit
 of grace ? For we know him that hath said ; Vengeance
belongeth unto me, I will recompense, saith the Lord ; and
 31 again ; The Lord shall judge his people. *It is a fearful*
 32 *thing to fall into the hands of the living God.* But
 call to remembrance the former days, in which, after ye
 were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions ;
 33 partly, while ye were made a gazing-stock both by re-
 proaches and afflictions ; and partly, while ye became com-
 34 panions of them that were so used. For ye had compassion
 of those who were in bonds, and took joyfully the spoiling of
 your goods, knowing that ye have for yourselves in heaven a
 35 better and an enduring substance. Cast not away therefore
 36 your confidence, which hath great recompense of reward. For
 ye have need of patience ; that, after ye have done the will
 37 of God, ye might receive the promise. For yet a little while,
 38 and he that shall come will come, and will not tarry. Now
 the just shall live by faith ; but if *any man* draw back, my
 39 soul shall have no pleasure in him. But we are not of them
 who draw back, unto perdition ; but of them that believe,
 to the saving of the soul.

XI. Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evi-
 2 dence of things not seen. For by it the elders obtained a
 3 good report. Through faith we understand that the
 worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things
 which are seen were not made of things which do ap-
 4 pear. By faith Abel offered unto God a more ex-
 cellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that
 he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts ; and by it he
 5 being dead yet speaketh. By faith Enoch was translated,
 that he should not see death ; and was not found, because
 God had translated him ; for before his translation he had
 6 this testimony, that he pleased God. But without faith *it is*

impossible to please *him* ; for he that cometh to God, must believe that he is, and *that* he is a rewarder of them that

7 diligently seek him. By faith Noah being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear prepared an ark to the saving of his house ; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by

8 faith. By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed, and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles, with Isaac and Jacob, the

10 heirs with him of the same promise ; for he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God.

11 Through faith also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed, even when she was past age, because she judged

12 him faithful who had promised. Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, *so many* as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the

13 sea-shore innumerable. These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen and embraced them afar off, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. For they that say such things declare

14 plainly, that they seek a country. And truly, if they had been mindful of that *country* from whence they came out,

15 they might have had opportunity to have returned ; but now they desire a better *country*, that is, a heavenly. Wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God ; for he hath

16 prepared for them a city. By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac, and he that had received the promises

17 offered up his only-begotten *son*, of whom it was said ; That in Isaac shall thy seed be called ; accounting that God *was*

18 able to raise *him* up, even from the dead ; from whence also he received him in a figure. By faith Isaac blessed Jacob

19 and Esau concerning things to come. By faith Jacob, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph ; and worshipped, *leaning* upon the top of his staff. By faith Joseph,

20 when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel, and gave commandment concerning his

21 bones. By faith Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw *he was* a proper child ; and they were not afraid of the king's commandment.

22 By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter, choos-

ing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to
 26 enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; esteeming the
 reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures of
 Egypt; for he had respect unto the recompense of the re-
 27 ward. By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of
 the king; for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible.
 28 Through faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of
 blood, lest he that destroyed the first-born should touch
 29 them. By faith they passed through the Red sea as by
 dry land; which the Egyptians assaying to do were
 30 drowned. By faith the walls of Jericho fell down,
 31 after they were compassed about seven days. By faith the
 harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not,
 32 when she had received the spies with peace. And
 what shall I more say? For the time would fail me to tell
 of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae,
 33 of David also and Samuel, and of the prophets; who
 through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, ob-
 34 tained promises, stopped the mouths of lions, quenched the
 violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of
 weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to
 35 flight the armies of the aliens; women received their dead
 raised to life again; and others were tortured, not accepting
 deliverance, that they might obtain a better resurrection;
 36 and others had trial of *cruel* mockings and scourgings, yea,
 37 moreover of bonds and imprisonment; they were stoned,
 they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the
 sword; they wandered about in sheep-skins, and goat-skins,
 38 being destitute, afflicted, tormented, (of whom the world
 was not worthy,) they wandered in deserts and in moun-
 39 tains, and in dens and caves of the earth. And

these all, having obtained a good report through faith, re-
 40 ceived not the promise, God having provided some better
thing for us, that they without us should not be made per-
 XII. sect.

Wherefore, seeing we are compassed about
 with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us also lay aside every
 weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us
 2 run with patience the race that is set before us; look-
 ing unto Jesus, the author and finisher of *our* faith, who, for
 the joy that was set before him, endured the cross, despising
 the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of
 3 God. For consider him that endured such contradiction of

sinner against himself, lest ye be wearied, and faint in your minds.

- 4 Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin ;
5 and ye have forgotten the exhortation, which speaketh unto
6 you as unto children ; My son, despise not thou the chastening
7 of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him ; for
8 whom the Lord loveth, he chasteneth ; and scourgeth every
9 son whom he receiveth. If ye endure chastening, God
10 dealeth with you as with sons ; for what son is he, whom the
11 father chasteneth not ? But if ye be without chastisement,
12 whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards and not sons.
13 Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected
14 us, and we gave *them* reverence ; shall we not much
15 rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live ?
16 For they verily for a few days chastened *us* after their own
17 pleasure ; but he for *our* profit, that *we* might be partakers
18 of his holiness. Now no chastening for the present seemeth
19 to be joyous, but grievous ; nevertheless, afterward it yieldeth
20 the peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which
21 are exercised thereby.
- 22 Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the
23 feeble knees ; and make straight paths for your feet, lest
24 that which is lame be turned out of the way, but let it
25 rather be healed. Follow peace with all *men*, and holiness,
26 without which no man shall see the Lord ; looking diligently,
27 lest any man fail of the grace of God ; lest any
28 root of bitterness springing up trouble *you*, and thereby
29 many be defiled ; lest there *be* any fornicator, or profane
30 person as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his
31 birth-right. For ye know how that afterward, when he
32 would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected ; for he
33 found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully
34 with tears.
- 35 For ye are not come unto the mount
36 that might be touched, and that burned with fire, nor unto
37 blackness, and darkness, and tempest, and the sound of a
38 trumpet, and the voice of words, which *voice* they that
39 heard, entreated that the word should not be spoken to
40 them any more ; (for they could not endure that which was
41 commanded ; And if so much as a beast touch the mountain,
42 it shall be stoned ; and so terrible was the sight, *that* Moses
43 said ; I exceedingly fear and quake ;) but ye are come unto
44 mount Sion ; and unto the city of the living God, the
45 heavenly Jerusalem ; and to an innumerable company,

the general assembly of angels ; and to the church of the first-born, which are written in heaven ; and to God the Judge of all ; and to the spirits of just men made perfect ;
 24 and to Jesus the Mediator of the new covenant ; and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh a better thing than *that of*
 25 Abel. See that ye refuse not him that speaketh. For if they escaped not, who refused him that spake on earth, much more *shall not we escape*, if we turn away from
 26 him that *speaketh* from heaven ; whose voice then shook the earth ; but now he hath promised, saying ; Yet once more
 27 I shake not the earth only, but also heaven. And this *word*, yet once more, signifieth the removing of those things that are shaken, as of things that are made, that those things
 28 which cannot be shaken may remain. Wherefore we receiving a kingdom which cannot be moved, let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably, with reverence and godly fear. For our God is a consuming fire.

XIII. Let brotherly love continue. Be not forgetful to entertain strangers ; for thereby some have entertained angels
 3 unawares. Remember them that are in bonds, as bound with them ; *and* them which suffer adversity, as being yourselves also in the body. Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled ; but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge. *Let your conversation be* without covetousness ; *and be* content with such things as ye have ; for he hath said ; I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee ;
 6 so that we may boldly say ; The Lord is my helper, and I
 7 will not fear ; what shall man do unto me ? Remember them which have the rule over you, who have spoken unto you the word of God ; whose faith follow, considering the end of *their* conversation. Jesus Christ the
 9 same yesterday, and to-day, and forever. Be not carried aside with divers and strange doctrines ; for *it is* a good thing that the heart be established with grace, not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied
 10 therein. We have an altar, wherof they have no right to
 11 eat which serve the tabernacle. For the bodies of those beasts whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high
 12 priest for sin, are burned without the camp. Wherefore Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own
 13 blood, suffered without the gate. Let us go forth therefore
 14 unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach ; for here
 15 have we no continuing city, but we seek one to come. By

- him therefore let us offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of *our* lips giving thanks to his name. But to do good, and to communicate, forget not; for with such sacrifices God is well pleased. Obey them that have the rule over you, and submit yourselves; for they watch for your souls, as they that must give account; that they may do it with joy, and not with grief; for that is unprofitable for you. Pray for us; for we trust we have a good conscience, in all things willing to live honestly; but I beseech *you* the rather to do this, that I may be restored to you the sooner.
- 20 Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant, make you perfect in every good work, to do his will; working in you that which is well-pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ; to whom be glory for ever and ever; amen.
- 22 And I beseech you, brethren, suffer the word of exhortation; for I have written a letter unto you in few words. Know ye, that *our* brother Timothy is set at liberty, with whom, if he come shortly, I will see you.
- 24 Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the saints. They of Italy salute you. Grace be with you all; amen.

THE GENERAL EPISTLES.

THE

EPISTLE OF JAMES.

JAMES, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.

- 2 My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into divers temptations; knowing *this*, that the trying of your faith worketh
 3 patience. But let patience have *her* perfect work, that ye
 4

- 5 may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing. If any
of you lack wisdom, let him ask of God, that giveth to all
men liberally, and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him.
- 6 But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering; for he that
waveth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and
7 tossed. For let not that man think, that he shall receive
8 any thing of the Lord. A double-minded man is unstable
9 in all his ways. Let the brother of low degree re-
10 joice in that he is exalted; but the rich, in that he is made
low; because as the flower of the grass he shall pass away.
- 11 For the sun is *no sooner* risen with a burning heat, *but* it
withereth the grass, and the flower thereof falleth, and the
grace of the fashion of it perisheth; so also shall the rich man
12 fade away in his ways. Blessed is the man that endureth
temptation; for when he is tried, he shall receive the crown
of life, which the Lord hath promised to them that love
13 him. Let no man say when he is tempted; I am tempted
of God; for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth
14 he any man. But every man is tempted, when he is drawn
15 away of his own lust and enticed; then, when lust hath
conceived, it bringeth forth sin; and sin, when it is finished,
16 bringeth forth death. Do not err, my beloved brethren.
- 17 Every good gift and every perfect gift cometh down from
above, from the Father of lights, with whom is no variable-
18 ness, neither shadow of turning. Of his own will begat he
us with the word of truth, that we should be a kind of first-
19 fruits of his creatures. Wherefore, my beloved
brethren, let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak,
20 slow to wrath. For the wrath of man worketh not
21 the righteousness of God. Wherefore lay apart all filthi-
ness, and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meek-
ness the ingrafted word, which is able to save your souls.
- 22 But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, de-
23 ceiving your own selves. For if any be a hearer of the
word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his
24 natural face in a glass; for he beholdeth himself, and goeth
his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he
25 was. But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and
continueth *therein*, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer
26 of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed. If any
man seem to be religious, and bridlETH not his tongue, but
27 deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain. Pure
religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this,

to visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, *and* to keep himself unspotted from the world.

II. My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ,
2 *the Lord* of glory, with respect of persons. For if there
come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly
3 apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment,
and ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing and
4 say; Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor;
Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool; are ye not
then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil
5 thoughts? Hearken, my beloved brethren, hath not God
chosen the poor of the world rich in faith, and heirs of the
kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him?
6 but ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men
oppress you, and draw you before the judgment-seats?
7 Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which
8 ye are called? If ye fulfil the royal law according to
the scripture; Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do
9 well; but if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are
10 convinced of the law as transgressors. For whosoever shall
keep the whole law, and yet offend in one *point*, he is guilty
11 of all. For he that said; Do not commit adultery, said
also; Do not kill; now, if thou commit no adultery, yet if
12 thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. So
speak ye and so do, as they that shall be judged by the
13 law of liberty. For he shall have judgment without mercy
that hath shewed no mercy; *but* mercy rejoiceth against
judgment.

14 What *doth it* profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath
15 faith, and have not works? can faith save him? If a brother
16 or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, and one of
you say unto them; Depart in peace, be ye warmed and
filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which
17 are needful to the body, what *doth it* profit? Even so faith,
18 if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. Yea, a man may
say; Thou hast faith, and I have works; shew me thy faith
without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my
19 works. Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest
20 well; the devils also believe, and tremble. But wilt thou
21 know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? Was
not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had
22 offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith
wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect?

23 and the scripture was fulfilled, which saith ; Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness ;
24 and he was called the friend of God. See ye how that by
25 works a man is justified, and not by faith only ? Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent *them* out another
26 way ? For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

III. My brethren, be not many masters, knowing that we
2 shall receive the greater condemnation. For in many things we offend all ; if any man offend not in word, the same is a perfect man, *and* able also to bridle the whole
3 body. Behold, we put bits in the horses' mouths, that they may obey us, and we turn about their whole body.
4 Behold also the ships, which, though *they be* so great, and *are* driven of fierce winds, yet are they turned about with a
5 very small helm, whithersoever the governor listeth. Even so the tongue is a little member, and boasteth great things.
6 Behold, how great a matter a little fire kindleth ! And the tongue is a fire, a world of iniquity ; so is the tongue among our members, that it defileth the whole body, and setteth on fire the course of nature, and *it is* set on fire of
7 hell. For every kind of beasts and of birds, and of serpents and of things in the sea, is tamed and hath been
8 tamed of mankind ; but the tongue can no man tame ; *it*
9 is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison. Therewith bless we God, even the Father, and therewith curse we men,
10 which are made after the similitude of God ; out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren,
11 these things ought not so to be. Doth a fountain send forth
12 at the same place sweet *water* and bitter ? Can the fig-tree, my brethren, bear olive-berries, either a vine, figs ? so
13 neither *can* salt water yield fresh. Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you ? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom ; but if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts,
14 do ye glory and lie against the truth ? This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every
15 evil work. But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, *and* easy to be entreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy.
16 And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace.

IV. From whence *come* wars and fightings among you ?

Come they not hence, *even* of your lusts that war in your
2 members ? Ye lust, and have not ; ye kill, and desire to
have, and cannot obtain ; ye fight and war, *yet* ye have not,
3 because ye ask not ; ye ask, and receive not, because ye
4 ask amiss, that ye may consume *it* upon your lusts. Ye
adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not, that the friendship
of the world is enmity with God ? whosoever therefore will
5 be a friend of the world, is the enemy of God. Do ye think
that the scripture speaketh in vain ? Doth the spirit that dwell-
6 eth in us lust to envy ? But he giveth more grace ; wherefore
he saith ; God resisteth the proud, but giveth grace unto
7 the humble. Submit yourselves therefore to God ; resist
8 the devil, and he will flee from you ; draw nigh to God,
and he will draw nigh to you ; cleanse *your* hands, ye sin-
9 ners, and purify *your* hearts, ye double-minded. Be afflict-
ed, and mourn, and weep ; let your laughter be turned to
10 mourning, and *your* joy to heaviness. Humble your-
selves in the sight of the Lord, and he shall lift you
11 up. Speak not evil one of another, brethren ; he
that speaketh evil of *his* brother, and judgeth his brother,
speaketh evil of the law, and judgeth the law ; but if thou
judge the law, thou art not a doer of the law, but a judge.
12 There is one lawgiver and judge, who is able to save, and to
destroy ; but who art thou, that judgest another ?
13 Go to now, ye that say ; To-day or to-morrow let us go into
such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and
14 get gain ; whereas ye know not what *shall be* on the morrow ;
(for what is your life ? it is even a vapour, that appeareth
15 for a little time, and then vanisheth away ;) for that ye
ought to say ; If the Lord will, and we live, then let us do this
16 or that ; but now ye rejoice in your boastings. All such re-
17 joicing is evil. Therefore to him that knoweth to do good,
and doeth *it* not, to him it is sin.

V. Go to now, ye rich men, weep and howl for your miser-
2 ies that shall come upon *you*. Your riches are corrupted,
3 and your garments are moth-eaten ; your gold and silver is
cankered, and the rust of them shall be a witness against
you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire ; ye have heap-
4 ed treasure together for the last days. Behold, the hire of
the labourers which have reaped down your fields, which is
of you kept back by fraud, crieth ; and the cries of them
which have reaped are entered into the ears of the Lord of

- 5 Sabaoth. Ye have lived in pleasure on the earth, and been wanton ; ye have nourished your hearts as in a day of
6 slaughter. Ye have condemned *and* killed the just ; *and* he doth not resist you.
- 7 Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he
8 receive the early and latter rain ; be ye also patient, stablish your hearts, for the coming of the Lord draweth
9 nigh. Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be judged ; behold, the Judge standeth before the
10 door. Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have spoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of suffering affliction, and of patience. Behold, we count them happy which
11 endure ; ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have seen the end of the Lord, that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.
- 12 But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath ; but let your yea, be yea, and *your* nay, nay ; lest ye fall into condemnation.
- 13 Is any among you afflicted ? let him pray ; is any
14 merry ? let him sing psalms. Is any sick among you ? let him call for the elders of the church, and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil, in the name of the Lord.
- 15 And the prayer of faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up ; and if he have committed sins, they
16 shall be forgiven him. Confess *your* faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed ; the effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.
- 17 Elias was a man subject to like passions as we are, and he prayed earnestly that it might not rain ; and it rained not on the earth by the space of three years and six months ;
18 and he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the
19 earth brought forth her fruit. Brethren, if any of
20 you do err from the truth, and one convert him, let him know, that he which converteth the sinner from the error of his way, shall save a soul from death, and shall hide a multitude of sins.

FIRST EPISTLE OF PETER.

- PETER, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the strangers scattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Asia and Bithynia,
2 elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ; grace unto you, and peace be multiplied.
- 3 Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, which, according to his abundant mercy, hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the resurrection of Jesus Christ
4 from the dead, to an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled,
5 and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you, who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation
6 ready to be revealed in the last time; wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season (if need be) ye are in
7 heaviness through manifold temptations, that the trial of your faith, being more precious than of gold, that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise, and
8 honour, and glory, at the appearing of Jesus Christ; whom having not seen, ye love; in whom, though now ye see *him* not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unspeakable and full
9 of glory, receiving the end of your faith, *even* the salvation
10 of *your* souls. Of which salvation the prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who prophesied of the grace
11 *that should come* unto you; searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and
12 the glory that should follow; unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto you, they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven, which things the angels desire to look into.
- 13 Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and

hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you
 14 at the revelation of Jesus Christ ; as obedient children, not
 fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your
 15 ignorance, but as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye
 16 holy in all manner of conversation ; because it is written ;
 17 Be ye holy, for I am holy. And if ye call on the Father,
 who without respect of persons judgeth according to every
 man's work, pass the time of your sojourning *here* in fear ;
 18 forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, *as* silver and gold, from your vain conversation
 19 *received* by tradition from your fathers, but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and
 20 without spot ; who verily was fore-ordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times
 21 for you, who by him do believe in God, that raised him up from the dead and gave him glory, that your faith and hope
 22 might be in God.

Seeing ye have purified your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, *see that ye* love one another with a pure heart fervently ; being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and
 24 abideth. For all flesh *is* as grass, and all the glory thereof as the flower of grass ; the grass withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away ; but the word of the Lord endureth for ever ; and this is the word which by the gospel is preached

II. unto you. Wherefore, laying aside all malice, and all guile, and
 2 hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil-speakings, as new-born babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow
 3 thereby to salvation ; if so be ye have tasted that the Lord
 4 *is* gracious.

To whom coming *as unto* a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and
 5 precious, ye also, as lively stones, are built up, a spiritual house, a holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. Because it is contained in the scripture ; Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner-stone, elect, precious ; and he that believeth on him
 7 shall not be confounded. Unto you therefore which believe, *he is* precious ; but unto them which be disobedient, the stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made the
 8 head of the corner, and a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence ; *even to them* which stumble, being disobedient to
 9 the word, whereunto also they were appointed. But ye *are* a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a pe-

culiar people, that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous
 10 light; which in time past *were* not a people, but *are* now the people of God; which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

11 Dearly beloved, I beseech *you*, as strangers and pilgrims,
 12 abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul; having your conversation honest among the Gentiles; that, whercens they speak against you as evil-doers, they may by *your* good works, which they shall behold, glorify God in
 13 the day of visitation. Submit yourselves therefore to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake; whether it
 14 be to the king, as supreme; or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evil-doers,
 15 and for the praise of them that do well; (for so is the will of God, that with well-doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men;) as free, and not using *your* liberty for a cloak of maliciousness, but as the servants of God.
 17 Honour all *men*; love the brotherhood; fear God; honour the king.

18 Servants, *be* subject to *your* masters with all fear, not only to the good and gentle, but also to the froward.
 19 For this *is* thank-worthy, if a man for conscience toward
 20 God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. For what glory is *it*, if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do well, and suffer *for it*, ye take
 21 it patiently, this *is* acceptable with God. For even hereunto were ye called; because Christ also suffered for you, leaving you an example, that ye should follow his steps;
 22 who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth;
 23 who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not, but committed *himself* to him that
 24 judgeth righteously; who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness; by whose stripes ye were healed.
 25 For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls.

III. Likewise, ye wives, *be* in subjection to your own husbands, that, if any obey not the word, they also may without the word be won by the conversation of the wives,
 2 while they behold your chaste conversation *coupled* with
 3 fear. Whose adorning, let it not be that outward *adorning* of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting

4 on of apparel ; but *let it be* the hidden man of the heart,
in that which is not corruptible, *even the ornament* of a
meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great
5 price. For after this manner in the old time the holy
women also, who trusted in God, adorned themselves, being
6 in subjection unto their own husbands ; even as Sara
obeyed Abraham, calling him Lord, whose daughters ye
are, as long as ye do well, and are not afraid with any
7 amazement. Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with
the wife according to knowledge, as *with* the weaker vessel,
giving *her* honour as being heirs also together of the grace of
life, that your prayers be not hindered.

8 Finally, *be ye* all of one mind, having compassion one
9 of another, love as brethren, *be* pitiful, *be* humble, not
rendering evil for evil, or railing for railing ; but contrari-
wise, blessing ; knowing that ye are thereunto called, that
10 ye should inherit a blessing. For he that will love life, and
see good days, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his
11 lips that they speak no guile ; let him eschew evil, and do
12 good ; let him seek peace, and ensue it. For the eyes of
the Lord *are* over the righteous, and his ears *are open* unto
their prayers ; but the face of the Lord *is* against them that
13 do evil. And who *is* he that will harm you, if ye be follow-
14 ers of that which is good ? but and if ye suffer for right-
cousness' sake, happy *are ye*. And be not afraid of their
15 terror, neither be troubled ; but sanctify the Lord God in
your hearts. And *be* ready always to *give* an
answer to every man that asketh you a reason of the hope
16 that is in you, with meekness and fear ; having a good con-
science, that, whereas they speak evil of you, as of evil-
doers, they may be ashamed that falsely accuse your good
17 conversation in Christ. For *it is* better, if the will of God
be so, that ye suffer for well-doing, than for evil-doing ;
18 for Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the
unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in
19 the flesh, but quickened by the spirit ; by which also he
20 went and preached unto the spirits in prison, which some
time were disobedient, when the long-suffering of God
waited, in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing,
wherein few, (that is, eight) souls, were saved by water ;
21 which doth also now save us, *even* baptism, a like figure,
(not the putting away of the filth of the flesh, but the
answer of a good conscience toward God,) by the resurrec-

- 22 tion of Jesus Christ ; who is gone into heaven, and is on the
 right hand of God, angels and authorities and powers being
 IV. made subject unto him. Forasmuch then as Christ hath
 suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with
 the same mind, (for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath
 2 ceased from sin,) that ye no longer should live the rest of
your time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of
 3 God. For the time past of *our* life may suffice us to have
 wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciv-
 iousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings, banquetings, and
 4 abominable idolatries ; whercin they think it strange that ye
 run not with *them* to the same excess of riot, speaking evil
 5 of *you* ; who shall give account to him that is ready to
 6 judge the quick and the dead. For, for this cause was the
 gospel preached also to them that are dead, that they might
 be judged according to men in the flesh, but live according
 to God in the spirit.
- 7 But the end of all things is at hand ; be ye therefore sober,
 8 and watch unto prayer. And above all things have fervent
 charity among yourselves ; for charity shall cover the mul-
 9 titude of sins ; use hospitality one to another without grudg-
 10 ing ; as every man hath received the gift, *even so* minister
 the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold
 11 grace of God. If any man speak, *let him speak* as the
 oracles of God ; if any man minister, *let him do it* as of
 the ability which God giveth ; that God in all things may be
 glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and do-
 minion for ever and ever ; amen.
- 12 Beloved, think it not strango, concerning the fiery trial
 which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened
 13 unto you ; but rejoyce, inasmuch as ye are partakers of
 Christ's sufferings, that, when his glory shall be revealed,
 14 ye may be glad also with exceeding joy. If ye be re-
 proached for the name of Christ, happy *are ye* ; for the
 Spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you ; on their part
 15 he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified. But
 let none of you suffer as a murderer, or *as a thief*, or *as*
 16 *an evil-doer*, or *as a busybody* in other men's matters ; yet if
any man suffer as a Christian, let him not be ashamed, but let
 17 him glorify God on this behalf. For the time *is come* that
 judgment must begin at the house of God ; and if *it first*
begin at us, what *shall* the end *be* of them that obey not the
 18 gospel of God ? and if the righteous scarcely be saved,

19 where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear ? Wherefore, let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their souls *to him* in well-doing, as unto a faithful Creator.

V. The elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also
2 a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed ; feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight *thereof*, not by constraint, but willingly ; not for filthy lucre,
3 but of a ready mind ; neither as being lords over *God's*
4 heritage, but being ensamples to the flock ; and when the chief Shephord shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of
5 glory that fadeth not away.

Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder ; yea, all *of you* be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility ; for God
6 resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble. Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God,
7 that he may exalt you in due time ; casting all your care
8 upon him, for he careth for you. Be sober, be vigilant ; your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about,
9 seeking whom he may devour ; whom resist steadfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Christ Jesus, after that ye have suffered a while,
11 make you perfect, establish, strengthen, settle *you*. To him *be* glory and dominion for ever and ever ; amen.

12 By Sylvanus, a faithful brother unto you, as I suppose, I have written briefly, exhorting, and testifying, that this is the
13 true grace of God wherein ye stand. The *church that is* at Babylon, elected together with *you*, saluteth you, and *so*
14 doth Marcus my son. Greet ye one another with a kiss of charity. Peace *be* with you all that are in Christ Jesus.

SECOND EPISTLE OF PETER.

-
- SIMON Peter, a servant and an apostle of Jesus Christ, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteousness of God, and our Saviour Jesus Christ ;
- 2 grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord.
- 3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that *pertain* unto life and godliness, through the knowledge
- 4 of him that hath called us to glory and virtue ; (whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises, that by these ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through
- 5 lust ;) for this reason also, giving all diligence, add to your
- 6 faith virtue, and to virtue knowledge, and to knowledge temperance, and to temperance patience, and to patience godli-
- 7 ness, and to godliness brotherly kindness, and to brotherly
- 8 kindness charity. For if these things be in you and abound, they make *you that ye shall* neither be barren nor unfruitful
- 9 in the knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ ; but he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see afar off, and
- 10 hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins. Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure ; for if ye do these things, ye shall
- 11 never fall. For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.
- 12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know *them*, and be
- 13 established in the present truth. Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up by putting *you*
- 14 in remembrance ; knowing that shortly I must put off *this* my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath shewed

15 me. Moreover, I will always endeavour that ye may be
able, after my deccase, to have these things in remem-
16 brance. For we have not followed cunningly de-
vised fables, when we made known unto you the power and
coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of
17 his majesty. For he received from God the Father honour
and glory, when there came such a voice to him from
the excellent glory ; 'This is my beloved Son, in whom I am
18 well pleased. And this voice which came from heaven we
19 heard, when we were with him in the holy mount, and have
the word of prophecy confirmed ; whereunto yo do well that
ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place,
until the day dawn, and the day-star arise in your hearts ;
20 knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of
21 any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in
old time by the will of man, but holy men of God spake *as*
they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

II. But there were false prophets also among the people,
even as there shall be false teachers among you, who
privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the
Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift
2 destruction ; (and many shall follow their wanton ways,
by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of ;)
3 and through covetousness shall they with feigned words
make merchandise of you ; whose judgment now of a
long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth
4 not. For if God spared not the angels that sinned,
but cast *them* down to hell, and delivered *them* into chains of
5 darkness, to be reserved unto judgment ; and spared not
the old world, but saved Noah the eighth *person*, a preacher
of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the
6 ungodly ; and turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha
into ashes, condemned *them* with an overthrow, making
them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly ;
7 and delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of
8 the wicked ; (for that righteous man dwelling among them,
in seeing and hearing, vexed *his* righteous soul from day to
9 day with *their* unlawful deeds ;) the Lord knoweth how to
deliver the godly out of temptation, and to reserve the un-
10 just unto the day of judgment to be punished ; but chiefly
them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and
despise government. Presumptuous *are they*, self-willed,
11 they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities ; whereas

angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord ; but these, as brute beasts, led by nature, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not, and shall utterly perish in their own corruption, and shall receive the reward of unrighteousness ; counting it pleasure to riot in the day time, spots and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you, having eyes full of adultery and that cannot cease from sin, beguiling unstable souls, having a heart exercised with covetousness, cursed children, they have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam *the son of Bosor*, who loved the wages of unrighteousness, but was rebuked for his iniquity ; the dumb ass, speaking with man's voice, forbade the madness of the prophet. These are wells without water, and clouds that are carried with a tempest ; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever. For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, *through much wantonness*, those that were scarcely escaped from them who live in error ; while they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption ; for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage. For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb ; *The dog is turned to his own vomit again ; and ; The sow that was washed, to her wallowing in the mire.*

III. This second epistle, beloved, I now write unto you, in *both* which I stir up your pure minds by way of remembrance ; that ye may be mindful of the words which were spoken before by the holy prophets, and of the commandments of us the apostles of the Lord and Saviour ; knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days impudent scoffers, walking after their own lusts, and saying ; Where is the promise of his coming ? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as *they were* from the beginning of the creation. For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God

the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the
6 water and in the water, whereby the world that then was,
7 being overflowed with water, perished ; but the heavens and
the earth, which are now, by his word are kept in store, re-
served unto fire against the day of judgment and perdition
8 of ungodly men. But, beloved, be not ignorant of
this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand
9 years, and a thousand years as one day. The Lord is not
slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness ;
but is long-suffering to us-ward, not willing that any should
10 perish, but that all should come to repentance. But the
day of the Lord will come as a thief ; in the which the
heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements
shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works
11 that are therein shall be burned up. *Seeing then*
that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of *per-*
sons ought ye to be in *all* holy conversation and godli-
12 ness ? looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day
of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved,
13 and the elements shall melt with fervent heat. Neverthe-
less we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a
new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness.
14 Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things,
be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without
15 spot, and blameless, and account *that* the long suffering of
our Lord is salvation ; even as our beloved brother Paul
also, according to the wisdom given unto him, hath written
16 unto you, as also in all *his* epistles, speaking in them of these
things ; in which are some things hard to be understood,
which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as *they*
do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruc-
17 tion. Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know *these*
things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the
18 error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness ; but
grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Sa-
viour Jesus Christ. To him be glory both now and for
ever ; amen.

THE

FIRST EPISTLE OF JOHN.

THAT which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the word of life ; (for the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us ;) that which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us ; and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ. And these things write we unto you, that your joy may be full.

This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all. If we say that we have fellowship with him, and walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth ; but if we walk in the light, as he is in the light, we have fellowship one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin. If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us. My little children, these things write I unto you, that ye sin not ; and if any man sin, we have an advocate with the Father, Jesus Christ the righteous ; and he is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only, but also for *the sins* of the whole world.

And hereby we do know that we know him, if we keep his commandments. He that saith ; I know him, and keepeth not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him. But whoso keepeth his word, in him verily is the love of God perfected. Hereby know we that we are in him. He

that saith he abideth in him, ought himself also so to walk,
7 even as he walked. Beloved, I write no new commandment
unto you, but an old commandment which ye had from the
beginning ; the old commandment is the word which ye
8 have heard from the beginning. Again, a new command-
ment I write unto you, which thing is true in him and in
you ; because the darkness is past, and the true light now
9 shineth. He that saith he is in the light, and hateth
10 his brother, is in darkness even until now. He that loveth
his brother abideth in the light, and there is none occasion
11 of stumbling in him ; but he that hateth his brother is in
darkness, and walketh in darkness, and knoweth not whither
he goeth, because that darkness hath blinded his eyes.
12 I write unto you, little children, because your sins are for-
13 given you for his name's sake. I write unto you,
fathers, because ye have known him *that is* from the begin-
ning ; I write unto you, young men, because ye have over-
come the wicked one ; I write unto you, little children, be-
14 cause ye have known the Father. I have written
unto you, fathers, because ye have known him *that is* from
the beginning. I have written unto you, young men,
because ye are strong, and the word of God abideth in you,
15 and ye have overcome the wicked one. Love not the
world, neither the things *that are* in the world. If any man
16 love the world, the love of the Father is not in him ; for
all that *is* in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of
the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of
17 the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust
thereof ; but he that doeth the will of God abideth for-
18 ever. Little children, it is the last time ; and as ye
have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there
many antichrists ; whereby we know that it is the last time.
19 They went out from us, but they were not of us ; for if
they had been of us, they would *no doubt* have continued
with us ; but *they went out*, that they might be made mani-
20 fest that they were not all of us. But ye have an unction
21 from the Holy One, and ye know all things. I have not
written unto you because ye know not the truth, but because
22 ye know it, and that no lie is of the truth. Who is a liar, but
he that denieth that Jesus is the Christ ? he is antichrist,
23 that denieth the Father and the Son. Whosoever denieth
the Son, the same hath not the Father ; *but* he that acknow-
24 ledgeth the Son hath the Father also. Let that therefore

- abide in you, which ye have heard from the beginning ; if that which ye have heard from the beginning shall remain in you, ye also shall continue in the Son, and in the Father.
- 25 And this is the promise that he hath promised us, *even* eternal life. These *things* have I written unto you concerning
- 26 them that seduce you. But the anointing which ye have received of him abideth in you, and ye need not that any man teach you ; but as the same anointing teacheth you of all things, and is truth, and is no lie ; and even as it hath
- 27 taught you, ye shall abide in him. And now, little children, abide in him ; that when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.
- 29 If ye know that he is righteous, ye know that every one
- III. that doeth righteousness is born of him. Behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God. Therefore the world
- 2 knoweth us not, because it knew him not. Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it doth not yet appear what we shall be ; but we know that, when he shall appear, we shall
- 3 be like him ; for we shall see him as he is. And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, even as
- 4 he is pure. Whosoever committeth sin transgresseth also the law ; for sin is the transgression of the law.
- 5 And ye know that he was manifested to take away our
- 6 sins ; and in him is no sin. Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not ; whosoever sinneth hath not seen him, neither
- 7 known him. Little children, let no man deceive you ; he that doeth righteousness is righteous, even as he is
- 8 righteous. He that committeth sin is of the devil ; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of
- 9 the devil. Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin, for his seed remaineth in him ; and he cannot sin, because
- 10 he is born of God. In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil. Whosoever
- 11 doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother. For this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another ;
- 12 not as Cain, *who* was of that wicked one, and slew his brother ; and wherefore slew he him ? because his own
- 13 works were evil, and his brother's righteous. Marvel not,
- 14 my brethren, if the world hate you. We know that we have

- passed from death unto life, because we love the brethren ;
15 he that loveth not *his* brother, abideth in death. Whoso-
ever hateth his brother, is a murderer ; and ye know that
16 no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him. Here-
by perceive we the love of *God*, because he laid down his
life for us ; and we ought to lay down *our* lives for the
17 brethren. But whoso hath this world's good, and seeth his
brother have need, and shutteth up his bowels of *compassion*
18 from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him ? My little
children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in
19 deed and in truth. And hereby we know that we are of
20 the truth, and shall assure our hearts before him, for, if our
heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and know-
21 eth all things. Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, *then*
22 have we confidence toward God, and whatsoever we ask,
we receive of him, because we keep his commandments, and
23 do those things that are pleasing in his sight. And this is
his commandment, that we should believe on the name of his
Son Jesus Christ, and love one another, as he gave us com-
24 mandment. And he that keepeth his commandments,
dwelleth in him, and he in him ; and hereby we know that
he abideth in us, by the Spirit, which he hath given us.
- IV. Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits, wheth-
er they are of God ; because many false prophets are gone
2 out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God ;
every spirit that confesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the
3 flesh, is of God. And every spirit that confesseth not Jesus,
is not of God ; and this is that *spirit* of antichrist, whereof
ye have heard that it should come, and even now already is
4 it in the world. Ye are of God, little children, and have
overcome them ; because greater is he that is in you, than
5 he that is in the world. They are of the world ; therefore
speak they of the world, and the world heareth them.
6 We are of God ; he that knoweth God, heareth us ; he that
is not of God, heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit
of truth, and the spirit of error.
- 7 Beloved, let us love one another ; for love is of God, and
every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God ;
8 he that loveth not, knoweth not God, for God is love.
9 In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because
that God sent his only-begotten Son into the world, that we
10 might live through him. Herein is love, not that we loved
God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son *to be* the propi-

11 tiation for our sins. Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought
 12 also to love one another. No man hath seen God at any
 time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his
 13 love is perfected in us. Hereby know we that we dwell
 in him, and he in us, because he hath given us ^{of} his
 14 Spirit. And we have seen and do testify, that the
 15 Father sent the Son *to be* the Saviour of the world. Who-
 soever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwel-
 16 leth in him, and he in God. And we have known and be-
 lieved the love that God hath to us. God is love, and he that
 17 dwelleth in love, dwelleth in God, and God in him. Herein
 is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the
 day of judgment, because as he is, so are we in this world.
 18 There is no fear in love, but perfect love casteth out fear ;
 because fear hath torment ; he that feareth, is not made
 19 perfect in love. We love him because he first loved
 20 us. If a man say ; I love God, and hateth his brother,
 he is a liar ; for he that loveth not his brother, whom he
 hath seen, how can he love God, whom he hath not seen ?
 21 And this commandment have we from him, that he who
 loveth God, love his brother also.

V. Whosoever believeth that Jesus is the Christ, is born of
 God ; and every one that loveth him that begat, loveth him
 2 also that is begotten of him. By this we know that we love
 the children of God, when we love God, and keep his com-
 3 mandments. For this is the love of God, that we keep his
 commandments ; and his commandments are not grievous,
 4 for whatsoever is born of God, overcometh the world ; and
 this is the victory that overcometh the world, *even* our faith.
 5 Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth
 6 that Jesus is the Son of God ? This is he that came
 by water and blood, *even* Jesus Christ ; not by water only,
 but by water and blood ; and it is the Spirit that beareth
 7 witness, because the Spirit is truth. For there are three
 8 that bear record ; the spirit, and the water, and the blood ;
 9 and these three agree in one. If we receive the witness of
 men, the witness of God is greater ; for this is the witness
 10 of God, which he hath testified of his Son. He that believ-
 eth on the Son of God hath the witness in himself ; he that
 believeth not God, hath made him a liar, because he believ-
 11 eth not the record that God gave of his Son. And this is
 the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this
 12 life is in his Son. He that hath the Son hath life ; *and* he

- 13 that hath not the Son of God, hath not life. **These**
 things have I written unto you, that ye may know that ye
 that believe on the name of the Son of God have eternal
 life.
- 14 And this is the confidence that we have in him, that if we
 15 ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us ; and if
 we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that
 16 we have the petitions that we desired of him. **If**
 any man see his brother sin a sin *which is* not unto death,
 he shall ask, and he shall give him life for them that sin not
 unto death. There is a sin unto death ; I do not say that
 17 he shall pray for it. All unrighteousness is sin ; and there
 18 is a sin not unto death. **We** know that whosoever
 is born of God, sinneth not ; but he that is begotten of God,
 keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.
- 19 *And* we know that we are of God, and the whole world
 20 lieth in wickedness. And we know that the Son of God is
 come, and hath given us an understanding, that we may
 know him that is true ; and we are in him that is true, *even*
 in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal
 21 life. Little children, keep yourselves from idols.

THE

SECOND EPISTLE OF JOHN.

- THE** cheer unto the elect Cyria, and her children, whom I
 love in the truth, (and not I only, but also all they that have
 2 known the truth for the truth's sake which dwelleth in us,
 3 and shall be with us forever ; grace be with you, mercy,
 and peace from **God** the Father, and from the Lord Jesus
 Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love.
- 4 I rejoiced greatly, that I found of thy children walking
 in truth, as we have received a commandment from the
 5 Father. And now I beseech thee, Cyria, not as though I
 wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which we
 6 had from the beginning, that we love one another. And
 this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is
 the commandment, that, as ye have heard from the begin-

- 7 ning, ye should walk in it. For many deceivers
 are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus
 Christ is come in the flesh ; this is a deceiver and an anti-
 8 christ. Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things
 which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward.
 9 Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of
 Christ, hath not God ; he that abideth in the doctrine of
 10 Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son. If there
 come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him
 11 not into *your* house, neither bid him God speed. For he
 that biddeth him God speed, is partaker of his evil deeds.
 12 Having many things to write unto you, I would not *write*
 with paper and ink ; for I trust to come unto you, and
 13 speak face to face, that our joy may be full. The
 children of thy elect sister greet thee.

THE

THIRD EPISTLE OF JOHN.

- THE elder unto the well-beloved Gaius, whom I love
 2 in the truth. Beloved, I wish above all things that
 thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul
 3 prospereth. For I rejoiced greatly, when the brethren
 came and testified of the truth that is in thee, even as thou
 4 walkest in the truth. I have no greater joy than to hear
 5 that my children walk in truth. Beloved, thou doest
 faithfully whatsoever thou doest to the brethren, and to
 6 strangers, which have borne witness to thy charity before
 the church ; whom if thou bring forward on their journey
 7 after a godly sort, thou shalt do well. Because that for
 his name's sake they went forth, taking nothing of the Gen-
 8 tiles. We therefore ought to receive such, that we might
 be fellow-helpers to the truth.
 9 I wrote unto the church ; but Diotrephes, who loveth to
 have the pre-eminence among them, receiveth us not.
 10 Wherefore, if I come, I will remember his deeds which he
 doeth, prating against us with malicious words ; and not
 content therewith, neither doth he himself receive tho

- brethren, and forbiddeth them that would, and casteth *them*
 11 out of the church. Beloved, follow not that which is evil,
 but that which is good. He that doeth good is of God ;
 12 he that doeth evil hath not seen God. Demetrius
 hath good report of all *men*, and of the truth itself ; yea,
 and we *also* bear record, and ye know that our record is
 true.
 13 I had many things to write, but I will not with ink and pen
 14 write unto thee ; but I trust I shall shortly see thee, and we
 shall speak face to face. Peace be to thee. Our friends
 salute thee ; greet the friends by name.

THE EPISTLE OF JUDE.

- JUDE, the servant of Jesus Christ, and brother of James,
 to them that are sanctified by God the Father, and pre-
 2 served in Jesus Christ *and* called ; mercy unto you, and
 peace and love, be multiplied.
 3 Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you, it
 was needful for me to write unto you of the common salva-
 tion, and exhort *you* that ye should earnestly contend for the
 4 faith which was once delivered unto the saints. For there
 are certain men crept in unawares, who were before of old
 ordained to this condemnation, ungodly men, turning the
 grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only
 5 supreme Lord, and our Lord Jesus Christ. I will
 therefore put you in remembrance, though ye once knew this,
 how that the Lord, having saved the people out of the land of
 6 Egypt, afterward destroyed them that believed not ; and the
 angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own
 habitation, he hath reserved in everlasting chains under
 7 darkness unto the judgment of the great day ; even as
 Sodom and Gomorrah, and the cities about them, in like
 manner giving themselves over to fornication, and going
 after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering
 8 the vengeance of eternal fire. Likewise also these
filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak

- 9 evil of dignities. Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said ;
- 10 The Lord rebuke thee. But these speak evil of those things which they know not ; but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves.
- 11 Wo unto them ! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and
- 12 perished in the gainsaying of Core. These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you without fear, feeding themselves ; clouds *they are* without water, carried aside of winds ; trees whose fruit withereth,
- 13 without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots ; raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame ; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness
- 14 for ever. And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying ; Behold, the Lord cometh
- 15 with ten thousands of his saints, to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard *speeches* which ungodly sinners have
- 16 spoken against him. These are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own lusts ; and their mouth speaketh great swelling *words*, having men's persons in admiration, because
- 17 of advantage. But beloved, remember ye the words which were spoken before of the apostles of our
- 18 Lord Jesus Christ ; how that they told you there should be mockers in the last time, who should walk after their own
- 19 ungodly lusts. These be they who separate themselves, sensual, having not the Spirit.
- 20 But ye, beloved, building up yourselves on your most holy
- 21 faith, praying in the Holy Ghost, keep yourselves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus
- 22 Christ unto eternal life. And of some have compassion, making a difference ; and others save with fear, pulling
- 23 *them* out of the fire ; hating even the garment spotted by the flesh.
- 24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to present *you* faultless before the presence of his glory with
- 25 exceeding joy, to the only God our Saviour, through Jesus Christ our Lord, *be* glory and majesty, dominion and power, both now and ever ; amen.

THE
REVELATION.

THE Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave unto him, to shew unto his servants things which must shortly come to pass, and sent and signified by his angel unto
 2 his servant John ; who bare record of the word of God, and of the testimony of Jesus Christ, of all things that he
 3 saw. Blessed is he that readeth, and they that hear the words of this prophecy, and keep those things which are written therein ; for the time is at hand.

4 John to the seven churches which are in Asia ; grace *be* unto you, and peace, from *him* which is, and which was, and which is to come ; and from the seven Spirits, which
 5 are before his throne ; and from Jesus Christ, *who* is the faithful witness, *and* the First-begotten of the dead, and the Prince of the kings of the earth ; unto him that loveth us,
 6 and washed us from our sins in his own blood, and hath made us a kingdom of priests unto God and his Father ; to him
 7 *be* glory and dominion for ever and ever ; amen. Behold, he cometh with clouds, and every eye shall see him, and they *also* which pierced him ; and all kindreds of the
 8 earth shall wail because of him ; even so, amen. I am Alpha and Omega, saith the Lord God, which is, and which
 9 was, and which is to come, the Almighty. I John, who am your brother, and companion in the tribulation and kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testi-
 10 mony of Jesus Christ. I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet,
 11 saying ; What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches, unto Ephesus, and unto Smyrna, and unto Pergamos, and unto Thyatira, and unto Sardis, and
 12 unto Philadelphia, and unto Laodicea. And I turn-

- ed to see the voice that spake with me ; and being turned,
 13 I saw seven golden candlesticks, and in the midst of the
 seven candlesticks *one* like unto the Son of man, clothed
 with a garment down to the foot, and girt about the paps
 14 with a golden girdle ; his head and *his* hairs *were* white
 as white wool, *white* as snow ; and his eyes *were* as a flame
 15 of fire ; and his feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned
 in a furnace ; and his voice as the sound of many waters ;
 16 and he had in *his* right hand seven stars ; and out of his
 mouth went a sharp two-edged sword ; and his countenance
 17 *was* as the sun shineth in his strength. And when I saw
 him, I fell at his feet as dead ; and he laid his right hand
 18 upon me, saying ; Fear not ; I am the first and the last, and
 he that liveth ; and I was dead, and behold, I am alive
 for evermore ; and have the keys of death and of hell.
 19 Write therefore the things which thou hast seen, and the
 things which are, and the things which shall be hereafter ;
 20 the mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my
 right hand, and the seven golden candlesticks. The seven
 stars are the angels of the seven churches ; and the seven
 candlesticks are the seven churches.

- II. Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write ;
 These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his
 right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden
 2 candlesticks ; I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy
 patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil ;
 and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and
 3 are not ; and hast found them liars ; and hast patience, and
 hast borne, for my name's sake, and hast not laboured.
 4 Nevertheless, I have ~~something~~ against thee, because thou
 5 hast ~~lost~~ thy first love. Remember therefore from whence
 thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works ; or else
 I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candle-
 6 stick out of his place, except thou repent. But this thou
 hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitanes, which I
 7 also hate. He that hath an ear, let him hear what
 the Spirit saith unto the churches ; To him that overcometh
 will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the paradise
 of my God.

- 8 And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna, write ;
 These things saith the first and the last, which was dead,
 9 and is alive ; I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty,
 (but thou art rich,) and *I know* the blasphemy of them

- which say they are Jews, and are not, but *are* the synagogue of Satan. Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer; behold, the devil shall cast *some* of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days. Be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee
- 11 a crown of life. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh, shall not be hurt of the second death.
- 12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things saith he which hath the sharp sword with two edges;
- 13 I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, *even* where Satan's seat is; and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where
- 14 Satan dwelleth. But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balak to cast a stumbling-block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and
- 15 to commit fornication. So hast thou also in like manner
- 16 them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes. Repent therefore; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight
- 17 against them with the sword of my mouth. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth *it*.
- 18 And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like
- 19 unto a flame of fire, and his feet *are* like fine brass; I know thy works, and charity, and faith, and service, and thy
- 20 patience, and thy last works *to be* more than the first. Notwithstanding, I have *somewhat* against thee, because thou sufferest thy wife Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, and teacheth and seduceth my servants, to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. And I gave her
- 21 space to repent, and she will not repent of her fornication.
- 22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of
- 23 her deeds, and I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts; and I will give unto every one of you
- 24 according to your works. But unto you I say, *even* unto the

rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, (as they speak;) I will
25 put upon you none other burden; but that which ye have
26 *already*, hold fast till I come. And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I
27 give power over the nations; and he shall rule them with a rod of iron, as the vessels of a potter are broken to shivers,
28 even as I received of my Father; and I will give him the
29 morning-star. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

III. And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that
2 thou livest, and art dead. Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that were ready to die; for I have not
3 found thy works perfect before my God. Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will
4 come upon thee. But thou hast a few names in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk
5 with me in white, for they are worthy. He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his
6 angels. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David; he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth; I know thy works; behold, I have set before thee an open door, which no man can shut; for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my
8 word, and hast not denied my name. Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee; because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I
10 also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the
11 earth. I come quickly; hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown. Him that overcometh,
12 will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall

- go no more out ; and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, *which is* new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my
13 God, and *I will write upon him* my new name. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.
14 And unto the angel of the church in Laodicea write ; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true Witness,
15 the beginning of the creation of God ; I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot ; I would thou wert cold
16 or hot. So then, because thou art lukewarm, and neither
17 cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth. Because thou sayest ; I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing, and knowest not that thou art wretched,
18 and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked ; I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich ; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and *that* the shame of thy nakedness do not appear ; and
19 eye-salve to anoint thine eyes, that thou mayest see. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten ; be zealous therefore,
20 and repent. Behold, I stand at the door, and knock ; if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in
21 to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father
22 in his throne. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.

- IV. After this I looked, and behold, a door *was* opened in heaven ; and the first voice, which I heard as it were of a trumpet talking with me, said ; Come up hither, and I will
2 shew thee things which must be hereafter. And immediately I was in the Spirit ; and behold, a throne was set in
3 heaven, and *one* sat on the throne ; and he that sat *was* to look upon like a jasper and a sardius ; and *there was* a rainbow round about the throne in sight like unto an emerald.
4 And round about the throne *were* four and twenty seats ; and upon the seats *I saw* four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment, and on their heads crowns
5 of gold. And out of the throne proceeded lightnings, and thunderings, and voices ; and *there were* seven lamps of fire burning before the throne, which are the seven Spirits of
6 God ; and before the throne *there was* as it were a sea of glass like unto crystal ; and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, *were* four beasts full of eyes before and

7 beheld. And the first beast *was* like a lion, and the second
 8 beast like a calf, and the third beast had the face of a man,
 and the fourth beast *was* like a flying eagle. And the four
 beasts had each of them six wings; *and* they were full of
 eyes about and within; and they rest not day and night,
 saying; Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was,
 9 and is, and is to come. And when those beasts give glory,
 and honour, and thanks to him that sat on the throne, who
 10 liveth forever and ever, the four and twenty elders fall down
 before him that sat on the throne, and worship him that
 liveth for ever and ever, and cast their crowns before the
 11 throne, saying; Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory,
 and honour, and power; for thou hast created all things,
 and for thy pleasure they were, and were created.

V. And I saw in the right hand of him that sat on the
 throne a book written within and on the back side, sealed
 2 with seven seals. And I saw a strong angel proclaiming
 with a loud voice; Who is worthy to open the book, and to
 3 loose the seals thereof? And no man in heaven, nor in
 earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book,
 4 neither to look thereon. And I wept much, because no
 man was found worthy to open the book, neither to look
 5 thereon. And one of the elders saith unto me; Weep not;
 behold, the Lion of the tribe of Juda, the Root of David,
 hath prevailed to open the book, and the seven seals there-
 6 of. And I beheld in the midst of the throne, and
 of the four beasts, and in the midst of the elders, a Lamb
 standing as it had been slain, having seven horns, and seven
 eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all
 7 the earth. And he came and took the book out of the right
 8 hand of him that sat upon the throne. And when he had
 taken the book, the four beasts, and four *and* twenty elders
 fell down before the Lamb, having every one of them
 harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the
 9 prayers of saints; and they sung a new song, saying;
 Thou art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals
 thereof; for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God
 by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and peo-
 10 ple, and nation, and hast made them unto our God kings
 11 and priests, and they shall reign on the earth. And I be-
 held, and I heard the voice of many angels round about
 the throne, and the beasts, and the elders; and the number of
 them was ten thousand times ten thousand, and thousands

- 12 of thousands ; saying with a loud voice ; Worthy is the Lamb that was slain to receive power, and riches, and wisdom, and strength, and honour, and glory, and blessing.
- 13 And every creature which is in heaven and on the earth, and under the earth, and such as are in the sea, and all that are in them, heard I saying ; Blessing, and honour, and glory, and power, be unto him that sitteth upon the throne, and
- 14 unto the Lamb, for ever and ever. And the four beasts said ; Amen ; and the elders fell down and worshipped.

VI. And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seven seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of

2 the four beasts, saying ; Come and see. And I saw, and behold, a white horse, and he that sat on him had a bow ; and a crown was given unto him, and he went forth conquering, and to conquer. And when he had opened

3 the second seal, I heard the second beast say ; Come.

4 And there went out another horse *that was red* ; and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another ; and there was

5 given unto him a great sword. And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say ; Come and see. And I beheld, and lo, a black horse, and he that

6 sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand. And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say ; A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny ; and see thou hurt not the oil and the

7 wine. And when he had opened the fourth seal, I

8 heard the fourth beast say ; Come and see. And I looked, and behold, a pale horse, and his name that sat on him was Death ; and hell followed with him ; and power was given unto him over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts

9 of the earth. And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they

10 held ; and they cried with a loud voice, saying ; How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our

11 blood on them that dwell on the earth ? And a white robe was given unto them, and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a season, until their fellow-servants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they *were*, should

12 complete the number. And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and there was a great earthquake, and

the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the whole
13 moon became as blood, and the stars of heaven fell unto the
earth, even as a fig-tree casteth her untimely figs, when she
14 is shaken of a mighty wind, and the heaven departed as a
scroll when it is rolled together, and every mountain and
15 island were moved out of their places; and the kings of the
earth, and the great men, and the chief captains, and the
rich men, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and
every freeman hid themselves in the dens and in the rocks
16 of the mountains, and said to the mountains and rocks; Fall
on us, and hide us from the face of him that sitteth on
17 the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb; for the
great day of his wrath is come; and who shall be able to
stand?

VII. And after these things I saw four angels standing on the
four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the
earth, that the wind should not blow on the earth, nor on
2 the sea, nor on any tree. And I saw another angel ascending
from the east, having the seal of the living God; and he
cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was
3 given to hurt the earth and the sea, saying; Hurt not the
earth, neither the sea, nor the trees, till we have sealed the
4 servants of our God in their foreheads. And I heard the
number of them which were sealed, *and there were sealed* a
hundred *and* forty *and* four thousand of all the tribes of the
5 children of Israel; of the tribe of Juda *were* sealed twelve
thousand; of the tribe of Reuben *were* sealed twelve thou-
6 and; of the tribe of Gad *were* sealed twelve thousand;
of the tribe of Aser *were* sealed twelve thousand; of
the tribe of Nephthalim *were* sealed twelve thousand; of the
7 tribe of Manasses *were* sealed twelve thousand; of the tribe
of Simeon *were* sealed twelve thousand; of the tribe of
Levi *were* sealed twelve thousand; of the tribe of Isachar
8 *were* sealed twelve thousand; of the tribe of Zabulon *were*
sealed twelve thousand; of the tribe of Joseph *were* sealed
twelve thousand; of the tribe of Benjamin *were* sealed
9 twelve thousand. After this I beheld, and lo, a
great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations,
and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the
throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and
10 palms in their hands; and cried with a loud voice, saying;
Salvation to our God which sitteth upon the throne, and
11 unto the Lamb. And all the angels stood round about the

throne, and *about* the elders and the four beasts, and fell
12 before the throne on their faces, and worshipped God, saying; Amen; blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, *be* unto our God
13 for ever and ever; amen. And one of the elders answered, saying unto me; What are these which are arrayed in white
14 robes, and whence came they? And I said unto him; My Lord, thou knowest. And he said to me; These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.
15 Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him day and night in his temple; and he that sitteth on the throne
16 shall dwell among them. They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more, neither shall the sun light on them,
17 nor any heat; for the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters; and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

VIII. And when he had opened the seventh seal, there was
2 silence in heaven about the space of half an hour. And I saw the seven angels which stood before God; and to
3 them were given seven trumpets. And another angel came, and stood at the altar, having a golden censer; and there was given unto him much incense, that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which
4 was before the throne. And the smoke of the incense, *which came* with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God out of the angel's hand. And the angel took the censer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and cast it into the
5 earth; and there were voices, and thunderings, and lightnings, and an earthquake. And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to
6 sound. The first sounded, and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth; and the third part of the earth was burnt up, and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was
7 burnt up. And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the
8 sea; and the third part of the sea became blood; and the third part of the creatures which were in the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed.
9 ed. And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell

upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of
 11 the waters. And the name of the star is called Wormwood ;
 and the third part of the waters became wormwood ; and
 many men died of the waters, because they were made
 12 bitter. And the fourth angel sounded, and the third
 part of the sun was smitten, and the third part of the moon,
 and the third part of the stars, so as the third part of them
 was darkened, and the day shone not for a third part of it,
 13 and the night likewise. And I beheld, and heard an eagle
 flying through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice ;
 Wo, wo, wo, to the inhabitants of the earth, by reason of the
 other voices of the trumpet of the three angels, which are
 IX. yet to sound ! And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a

star fall from heaven unto the earth, and to him was given
 2 the key of the bottomless pit ; and he opened the bottom-
 less pit. And there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the
 smoke of a great furnace, and the sun and the air were dark-
 3 ened by reason of the smoke of the pit. And there came
 out of the smoke locusts upon the earth, and unto them was
 given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power ;
 4 and it was commanded them that they should not hurt the
 grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree,
 but those men which have not the seal of God in their fore-
 5 heads ; and to them it was given that they should not kill
 them, but that they should be tormented five months ; and
 their torment *was* as the torment of a scorpion, when he
 6 striketh a man. And in those days shall men seek death,
 and shall not find it ; and shall desire to die, and death shall
 7 flee from them. And the shapes of the locusts *were* like
 unto horses prepared unto battle ; and on their heads *were*
 as it were crowns of gold, and their faces *were* as the faces
 8 of men, and they had hair as the hair of women, and their
 9 teeth *were* as the teeth of lions, and they had breast-plates, as it
 were breast-plates of iron, and the sound of their wings *was* as
 10 the sound of chariots of many horses running to battle. And
 they had tails like unto scorpions, and there were stings in their
 11 tails ; and their power *was* to hurt men five months. They
 had a king over them, *which* is the angel of the bottomless pit ;
 whose name in the Hebrew tongue is Abaddon, but in the
 12 Greek tongue hath *his* name Apollyon. One wo is
 past ; and behold, there come two woes more hereaf-
 13 ter. And the sixth angel sounded, and I heard a
 voice from the four horns of the golden altar, which is before

- 14 God, saying to the sixth angel which had the trumpet; Loose the four angels which are bound in the great river Euphrates.
- 15 And the four angels were loosed, which were prepared for an hour, and a day, and a month, and a year, for to slay the
- 16 third part of men. And the number of the army of the horsemen *were* two hundred thousand thousand; I heard the number of them. And thus I saw the horses in the vision, and them that sat on them, having breast-plates of fire, and of jacinth, and brimstone; and the heads of the horses *were* as the heads of lions, and out of their mouths issued fire, and
- 18 smoke, and brimstone. By these three plagues was the third part of men killed, by the fire, and the smoke, and
- 19 the brimstone, which issued out of their mouths. For the power of the horses is in their mouth, and in their tails; for their tails *were* like unto serpents, and had heads; and with
- 20 them they do hurt. And the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues, repented not of the works of their hands, that they should not worship devils, and idols of gold, and silver, and brass, and stone, and of wood, which
- 21 neither can see, nor hear, nor walk; neither repented they of their murders, nor of their sorceries, nor of their fornication, nor of their thefts.
- X. And I saw another mighty angel come down from heaven, clothed with a cloud, and a rain-bow *was* upon his head, and his face *was* as it were the sun, and his feet
- 2 as pillars of fire; and he had in his hand a little book open; and he set his right foot upon the sea, and *his* left foot on the
- 3 earth; and cried with a loud voice, as *when* a lion roareth. And when he had cried, seven thunders uttered their voices.
- 4 And when the seven thunders had uttered *their* voices, I was about to write; and I heard a voice from heaven saying; Seal up those things which the seven thunders uttered, and
- 5 write them not. And the angel which I saw stand upon the sea, and upon the earth, lifted up his right hand to
- 6 heaven, and swore by him that liveth for ever and ever, who created heaven, and the things that therein are, and the earth and the things that therein are, and the sea, and the things which are therein, that there should be
- 7 time no longer; but in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when he shall begin to sound, the mystery of God should be finished, as he hath declared to his servants the
- 8 prophets. And the voice which I heard from heaven spake unto me again, and said; Go, *and* take the

little book which is open in the hand of the angel which
9 standeth upon the sea, and upon the earth. And I went
unto the angel, and desired him to give me the little book.
And he said unto me ; Take *it*, and eat it up ; and it shall
make thy belly bitter, but it shall be in thy mouth sweet as
10 honey. And I took the little book out of the angel's hand,
and ate it up ; and it was in my mouth sweet as honey ; and
11 as soon as I had eaten it my belly was bitter. And he said
unto me ; Thou must prophesy again before many peoples,
XI. and nations, and tongues, and kings. And there was
given me a reed like unto a rod, *the voice* saying ; Rise, and
measure the temple of God, and the altar and them that
2 worship therein ; but the court which is without the temple,
leave out, and measure it not, for it is given unto the Gentiles ;
and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty *and*
3 two months. And I will give *power* unto my two witnesses,
and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred *and* three-
4 score days, clothed in sackcloth. These are the two olive-
trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the Lord of
5 the earth. And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth
out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies ; and if any
man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed.
6 These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not *in* the
days of their prophecy ; and have power over the waters, to
turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues,
7 as often as they will. And when they shall have finished
their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottom-
less pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome
8 them, and kill them. And their dead body *shall lie* in the
street of the great city, which spiritually is called Sodom and
9 Egypt, where also their Lord was crucified. And they of
the people, and kindreds, and tongues, and nations, shall see
their dead body three days and a half, and shall not suffer
10 their dead bodies to be put in a grave. And they that dwell
upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry,
and shall send gifts one to another, because these two proph-
11 ets tormented them that dwelt on the earth. And after
three days and a half the Spirit of life from God entered
into them ; and they stood upon their feet, and great fear
12 fell upon them which saw them. And they heard a great
voice from heaven, saying unto them ; Come up hither ;
and they ascended up to heaven in a cloud ; and their
13 enemies beheld them. And the same hour was there a

great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain of men seven thousand; and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of
14 heaven. The second wo is past; *and* behold, the third wo cometh quickly.

15 And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying; The kingdom of this world is become *the kingdom* of our Lord, and of his Christ, and he
16 shall reign for ever and ever. And the four and twenty elders, which sat before God on their seats, fell upon

17 their faces, and worshipped God, saying; We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art and wast, because thou hast taken to thee thy great power, and hast reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead, that they should be judged, and that thou shouldest give reward unto thy servants the prophets, and to the saints, and them that fear thy name, small and great; and
19 shouldest destroy them which destroy the earth. And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was seen in his temple the ark of the testament of the Lord; and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

XII. And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and
2 upon her head a crown of twelve stars, and she, being with child, cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heaven, and behold, a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and
4 seven crowns upon his heads; and his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth.

And the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.

5 And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron; and her child was caught up unto
6 God, and to his throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred *and* threescore

7 days. And there was war in heaven; Michael and his angels fought against the dragon, and the dragon fought
8 and his angels, and he prevailed not, neither was their place
9 found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world, he was cast out into the earth, and

- 10 his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven; Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ; for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused
11 them before our God day and night; and they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.
12 Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them; wo to the earth, and the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he
13 hath but a short time. And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman
14 which brought forth the man-child. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the
15 face of the serpent. And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood, after the woman, that he might cause her
16 to be carried away of the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up
17 the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth. And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus.

XIII. And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads, and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads names
2 of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as *the feet* of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion. And the dragon gave him
3 his power, and his seat, and great authority, and *I saw* one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed. And all the world wondered after the
4 beast, and they worshipped the dragon, because he gave power unto the beast, and they worshipped the beast, saying; Who is like unto the beast? and who is able to make war
5 with him? And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto
6 him to continue forty *and* two months. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.
7 And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them; and power was given him over all kin-

8 dreds, and peoples, and tongues, and nations. And all
that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose name was
not written in the book of life of the Lamb that was slain, from
9 the foundation of the world. If any man have an ear, let
10 him hear. He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity;
he that killeth with the sword, must be killed with the sword.
Here is the patience and the faith of the
11 saints. And I beheld another beast coming up out
of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb, and he
12 spake as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the
first beast before him; and causeth the earth and them
which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly
13 wound was healed; and he doeth great wonders, so that
he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth, in the
14 sight of men. And he deceiveth them that dwell on the earth,
by *the means of* those miracles which he had power to do in
the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth,
that they should make an image to the beast, which had the
15 wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to
give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the
beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would
16 not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And
he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and
bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their fore-
17 head; and that no man might buy or sell, save he that had
the mark, the name of the beast, or the number of his name.
18 Here is wisdom; let him that hath understanding count the
number of the beast; for it is the number of a man, and
his number is six hundred threescore *and* six.

XIV. And I looked, and lo, the Lamb stood on the mount
Sion, and with him a hundred forty *and* four thousand, hav-
ing his name and his Father's name written in their fore-
2 heads. And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of
many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder; and
the voice which I heard *was* as it were of harpers, harping with
3 their harps. And they sung a new song before the throne,
and before the four beasts, and the elders; and no man
could learn that song but the hundred *and* forty *and* four
4 thousand, which were redeemed from the earth. These
are they which were not defiled with women; for they are
virgins; these are they which follow the Lamb whithersoever
he goeth; these were redeemed from among men, *being*
5 the first-fruits unto God and to the Lamb; and in their

- 6 mouth was found no lie ; for they are without fault. And I saw another angel fly in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people ;
- 7 saying with a loud voice ; Fear God, and give glory to him, for the hour of his judgment is come ; and worship him that made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and the fountains of waters. And there followed another angel, saying ;
- 8 Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen ; because she made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication.
- 9 And another, a third angel, followed them, saying with a loud voice ; If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive *his* mark in his forehead, or in his hand ;
- 10 the same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out without mixture into the cup of his indignation, and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels, and in the presence of
- 11 the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever ; and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth
- 12 the mark of his name. Here is the patience of the saints, that keep the commandments of God, and the faith of
- 13 Jesus. And I heard a voice from heaven, saying ; Write ; Blessed *are* the dead, which die in the Lord from henceforth ; yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours ;
- 14 and their works do follow them. And I looked, and behold, a white cloud, and upon the cloud *one* sat like unto the Son of man, having on his head a golden crown, and in
- 15 his hand a sharp sickle. And another angel came out of the temple, crying with a loud voice to him that sat on the cloud ; Thrust in thy sickle, and reap, for the time is come
- 16 to reap, for the harvest of the earth is ripe. And he that sat on the cloud thrust in his sickle on the earth ; and the earth
- 17 was reaped. And another angel came out of the temple which is in heaven, he also having a sharp sickle. And
- 18 another angel came out from the altar, which had power over fire ; and cried with a loud cry to him that had the sharp sickle, saying ; Thrust in thy sharp sickle, and gather the clusters of the vine of the earth, for her grapes are fully
- 19 ripe. And the angel thrust in his sickle into the earth, and gathered the vine of the earth, and cast it into the great
- 20 wine-press of the wrath of God. And the wine-press was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the wine-

press, even unto the horse-bridles, by the space of a thousand *and* six hundred furlongs.

XV. And I saw another sign in heaven, great and marvellous, seven angels, having the seven last plagues, for in them is
 2 filled up the wrath of God. And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire, and them that had gotten the victory over the beast, and over his image, and over the number of his name, stand on the sea of glass, having the harps of
 3 God. And they sing the song of Moses the servant of God, and the song of the Lamb, saying; Great and marvellous *are* thy works, Lord God Almighty; just and true *are* thy
 4 ways, thou King of the nations; who shall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? for *thou only art* holy; for all nations shall come and worship before thee; for thy judgments are made manifest. And after that I looked,
 5 and the temple of the tabernacle of the testimony in heaven
 6 was opened; and the seven angels who had the seven plagues, came out of the temple, clothed in pure white linen,
 7 and having their breasts girded with golden girdles. And one of the four beasts gave unto the seven angels seven golden vials, full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever
 8 and ever. And the temple was filled with smoke from the glory of God, and from his power; and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the seven plagues of the seven
 XVI. angels were fulfilled. And I heard a great voice

out of the temple, saying to the seven angels; Go your ways, and pour out the seven vials of the wrath of God upon
 2 the earth. And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and
 3 upon them which worshipped his image. And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead *man*, and every living soul died
 4 in the sea. And the third poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters; and they became blood.
 5 And I heard the angel of the waters say; Thou art righteous, which art, and wast, the holy one, because thou hast
 6 judged thus; for they have shed the blood of saints and prophets, and thou hast given them blood to drink; they are
 7 worthy. And I heard a voice from the altar say; Even so, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous *are* thy judgments.
 8 And the fourth poured out his vial upon the sun; and power was given unto him to scorch men

9 with fire. And men were scorched with great heat, and blasphemed the name of God, which hath power over these
10 plagues; and they repented not to give him glory. And the fifth poured out his vial upon the seat of the beast; and his kingdom was full of darkness; and they gnawed their
11 tongues for pain, and blasphemed the God of heaven, because of their pains and their sores; and repented not of
12 their deeds. And the sixth poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates; and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the east might be prepared.
13 And I saw three unclean spirits like frogs come out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beast,
14 and out of the mouth of the false prophet; (for they are the spirits of devils, working miracles;) which go forth unto the kings of the whole world, to gather them to the battle of
15 that great day of God Almighty. (Behold, I come as a thief; blessed is he that watcheth, and keepeth his garments,
16 lest he walk naked, and they see his shame.) And he gathered them together into a place called in the Hebrew tongue
17 Armagedon. And the seventh poured out his vial upon the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying; It is done. And there were lightnings, and voices, and thunders, and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake, and so great.
19 And the great city was divided into three parts, and the cities of the nations fell; and great Babylon came in remembrance before God, to give unto her the cup of the wine of
20 the fierceness of his wrath; and every island fled away,
21 and the mountains were not found; and there fell upon men a great hail out of heaven, every stone about the weight of a talent; and men blasphemed God because of the plague of the hail, for the plague thereof was exceeding great.

XVII. And there came one of the seven angels which had the seven vials, and talked with me, saying; Come hither; I will shew unto thee the judgment of the great whore that
2 sitteth upon many waters; with whom the kings of the earth have committed fornication, and the inhabitants of the earth have been made drunk with the wine of her fornication.
3 So he carried me away in the spirit into the wilderness; and I saw a woman sit upon a scarlet coloured beast, full of names of blasphemy, having seven heads and ten horns.

4 And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet-colour,
and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having
a golden cup in her hand full of abominations, and the
5 filthiness of her fornication, and upon her forehead a name
written; MYSTERY; BABYLON THE GREAT,
6 THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOM-
INATIONS OF THE EARTH. And I saw the
woman drunken with the blood of the saints, and
with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. And when I saw
7 her, I wondered with great admiration. And the
angel said unto me; Wherefore didst thou marvel? I will tell
thee the mystery of the woman, and of the beast that carrieth
8 her, which hath the seven heads, and ten horns. The beast
that thou sawest, was, and is not, and shall ascend out of the
bottomless pit, and go into perdition; and they that dwell
on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in
the book of life from the foundation of the world, when
9 they behold the beast that was, and is not, yet will come. And
here is the mind which hath wisdom. The seven heads are
10 seven mountains, on which the woman sitteth. And there
are seven kings; five are fallen, one is, *and* the other is not
yet come, and when he cometh, he must continue a short
11 space. And the beast that was, and is not, even he is the
12 eighth, and is of the seven, and goeth into perdition. And
the ten horns which thou sawest, are ten kings, which have
received no kingdom as yet, but receive power as kings
13 one hour with the beast. These have one mind, and
14 give their power and strength unto the beast. These shall
make war with the Lamb; and the Lamb shall overcome
them, for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings; and they
that are with him *are* called, and chosen, and faithful.
15 And he saith unto me; The waters which thou sawest, where
the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations,
16 and tongues. And the ten horns which thou sawest, and
the beast, these shall hate the whore, and shall make her
desolate and naked, and shall eat her flesh, and burn her
17 with fire. For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will,
and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beast, until
18 the words of God shall be fulfilled. And the woman which
thou sawest is that great city, which reigneth over the kings
of the earth.

XVIII. And after these things I saw another angel come down
from heaven, having great power; and the earth was light-

- 2 ened with his glory. And he cried with a strong voice, saying ; Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit,
3 and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird ; for all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the
4 abundance of her delicacies. And I heard another voice from heaven, saying ; Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her sins, and that ye receive not
5 of her plagues ; for her sins have reached unto heaven, and
6 God hath remembered her iniquities. Reward her even as she rewarded, and double unto her double according to her works ; in the cup which she hath filled, fill to her double ;
7 how much she hath glorified herself, and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her. For she saith in her heart ; I sit a queen, and am no widow, and shall see no sor-
8 row ; therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine ; and she shall be utterly burned with fire ; for strong is the Lord God who
9 hath judged her. And the kings of the earth who have committed fornication and lived deliciously with her, shall bewail and lament for her, when they shall
10 see the smoke of her burning, standing afar off for the fear of her torment, saying ; Alas, alas, that great city ! Babylon, that mighty city ! for in one hour is thy judgment come.
11 And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over
12 her, for no man buyeth their merchandise any more ; the merchandise of gold and silver, and precious stones and of pearls, and fine linen and purple, and silk and scarlet ; and all thyine wood, and all manner of vessels of ivory, and all manner of vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and
13 iron, and marble ; and cinuamon, and amomum, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep ; and horses, and
14 chariots, and slaves ; and souls of men. And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly are perished from thee, and
15 thou shalt find them no more at all. The merchants of these things which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off,
16 for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing, and saying ; Alas, alas ! that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones,

- 17 and pearls; for in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every ship-master, and every one that voyageth to the
 18 place, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off, and cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying;
 19 What city is like unto this great city? and they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying; Alas, alas! that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness, for in one
 20 hour is she made desolate. Rejoice over her, *thou* heaven, and *ye* saints and apostles and prophets, for God hath
 21 avenged you on her. And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great mill-stone, and cast it into the sea, saying; Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be
 22 thrown down, and shall be found no more at all. And the voice of harpers, and musicians, and of pipers, and trumpeters, shall be heard no more at all in thee, and no craftsman, of whatsoever craft *he* be, shall be found any more in thee, and the sound of a mill-stone shall be heard no more
 23 at all in thee, and the light of a candle shall shine no more at all in thee, and the voice of the bridegroom and of the bride shall be heard no more at all in thee; for thy merchants were the great men of the earth, for by thy sorceries
 24 were all nations deceived. And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the
 XIX. earth. After these things I heard as it were a great voice of much people in heaven, saying; Alleluia; salvation,
 2 and glory, and power, *belong* to our God; for true and righteous *are* his judgments; for he hath judged the great whore, which did corrupt the earth with her fornication, and hath avenged
 3 the blood of his servants at her hand. And again they said;
 4 Alleluia; and her smoke rose up for ever and ever. And the four and twenty elders and the four beasts fell down and worshipped God that sat on the throne, saying; Amen; alleluia.
 5 And a voice came out of the throne, saying; Praise our God, all ye his servants, and ye that fear him, small
 6 and great. And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying; Alleluia; for the Lord our
 7 God omnipotent reigneth. Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him; for the marriage of the Lamb is come,
 8 and his wife hath made herself ready; and to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white. (For the fine linen is the righteousness of
 9 saints.) And he saith unto me; Write; Blessed

- are they which are called unto the marriage-supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me ; These are the true sayings of God. And I fell at his feet to worship him ; and he said unto me ; See *thou do it not* ; I am thy fellow-servant, and of thy brethren that have the testimony of Jesus ; worship God. (For the testimony of Jesus is the spirit of prophecy.)
- 11 And I saw heaven opened, and behold, a white horse, and he that sat upon him *was* called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war ; his eyes *were* as a flame of fire, and on his head *were* many crowns ; and he had a name written that no man knew, but he himself ; and he *was* clothed with a vesture dipped in blood ;
- 14 and his name is called ; The Word of God. And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white *and* clean. And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations, and he shall rule them with a rod of iron ; and he treadeth the wine-press of the fierceness of the wrath of
- 16 Almighty God. And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written ; KING OF KINGS, AND LORD
- 17 OF LORDS. And I saw an angel standing in the sun ; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven ; Come, gather yourselves together unto the great supper of God, that ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all *men*, both free and bond, both
- 19 small and great. And I saw the beast, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together, to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against his
- 20 army. And the beast was taken, and the false prophet that was with him, that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image ; these both were cast
- 21 alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which *sword* proceeded out of his mouth ; and
- XX. all the fowls were filled with their flesh. And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of
- 2 the bottomless pit, and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the devil,
- 3 and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, and cast

him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up and set a seal upon him, that he may deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years be fulfilled; and after that he must be loosed a little season.

- 4 And I saw thrones; and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them; and *I saw* the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received *his* mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived, and reigned with
- 5 Christ a thousand years; but the rest of the dead lived not until the thousand years were finished. This is the first
- 6 resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection; on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.
- 7 And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be
- 8 loosed out of his prison; and shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle, the number of
- 9 whom is as the sand of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city; and fire came down from
- 10 God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where both the beast and the false prophet are; and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.
- 11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away, and there
- 12 was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before the throne, and the books were opened; and another book was opened, which is *the book* of life; and the dead were judged out of those things which were
- 13 written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it, and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them; and they were
- 14 judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire; this is the second
- 15 death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

XXI. And I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away, and there was

2 no more sea. And I saw the holy city, new Jerusalem,

coming down out of heaven, prepared of God as a bride
3 adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out
of heaven, saying ; Behold, the tabernacle of God is with
men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his
people, and God himself shall be with them, *and be their*
4 God ; and shall wipe away all tears from their eyes, and
there shall be no more death, neither shall there be any
more sorrow, nor crying, nor pain ; for the former things
5 are passed away. And he that sat upon the throne said ;
Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me ;
6 Write ; for these words are true and faithful. And he said
unto me ; It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the begin-
ning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the
7 fountain of the water of life freely ; he that overcometh shall
inherit these things, and I will be his God, and he shall
8 be my son. But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the
abominable, and murderers and whoremongers, and sorcer-
ers and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the
lake which burneth with fire and brimstone, which is the
9 second death. And there came one of the seven
angels, which had the seven vials full of the seven last
plagues, and talked with me, saying ; Come hither, I will
10 shew thee the bride, the Lamb's wife. And he carried me
away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed
me that holy city, Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from
11 God, having the glory of God ; her light *was* like unto a
stone most precious, even like a jasper-stone clear as crys-
12 tal ; *and* had a wall great and high, *and* had twelve gates,
and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon,
which are *the names* of the twelve tribes of the children of
13 Israel. On the east, three gates ; on the north, three
gates ; on the south, three gates ; on the west, three gates.
14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and on
them twelve names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.
15 And he that talked with me, had a measure, a golden reed,
to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall
16 thereof. And the city lieth four-square, and the length is
as large as the breadth. And he measured the city with
the reed, twelve thousand furlongs ; the length, and the
17 breadth, and the height of it are equal. And he measured
the wall thereof, a hundred *and* forty *and* four cubits, *ac-*
18 *ording* to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel. And
the building of the wall of it was of jasper ; and the city *was*

- 19 pure gold, like unto clear glass. And the foundations of the wall of the city *were* garnished with all manner of precious stones ; the first foundation *was* jasper ; the second, sapphire ; the third, a chalcedony ; the fourth, an emerald ;
- 20 the fifth, sardonyx ; the sixth, sardius ; the seventh, chrysolite ; the eighth, beryl ; the ninth, a topaz ; the tenth, a chrysoprasus ; the eleventh, a jacinth ; the twelfth, an amethyst. And the twelve gates *were* twelve pearls ; every several gate was of one pearl. And the street of the city *was*
- 22 pure gold, as it were transparent glass. And I saw no temple therein ; for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are
- 23 the temple of it. And the city had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it ; for the glory of God did
- 24 lighten it, and the Lamb *is* the light thereof ; and the nations shall walk in the light of it. And the kings of
- 25 the earth do bring their glory and honour into it ; and the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day ; (for there
- 26 shall be no night there ;) and they shall bring the glory
- 27 and honour of the nations into it. And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing unclean, neither *whatsoever* worketh abomination, or *maketh* a lie ; but they which are
- XXII. written in the Lamb's book of life. And he shewed me a river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of
- 2 the throne of God and of the Lamb. In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, *was there* the tree of life, which bare twelve *manner of* fruits, and yielded her fruit every month ; and the leaves of the tree *were* for the
- 3 healing of the nations. And there shall be no more curse ; but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it, and
- 4 his servants shall serve him ; and they shall see his face,
- 5 and his name *shall be* in their foreheads. And there shall be no more night ; neither need of candle, neither of light of the sun, for the Lord God will shine upon them ; and they shall reign for ever and ever.
- 6 And he said unto me ; These sayings *are* faithful and true ; and the Lord God of the spirits of the prophets sent his angel to shew unto his servants the things which must
- 7 shortly be done. And behold, I come quickly ; blessed *is* he that keepeth the sayings of the prophecy of this
- 8 book. And I John heard and saw these things ; and when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before
- 9 the feet of the angel which shewed me these things. Then saith he unto me ; See *thou do it* not ; I am thy fellow-scr-

- vant, and of thy brethren the prophets, and of them which
 10 keep the sayings of this book ; worship God. And he
 saith unto me ; Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this
 11 book ; the time is at hand. He that is unjust, let him be
 unjust still, and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still ;
 and he that is righteous, let him do righteousness still, and he
 12 that is holy, let him be holy still. Behold, I come
 quickly, and my reward is with me, to give every man ac-
 13 cording as his work shall be. I *am* Alpha and Omega, the
 14 first and the last, the beginning and the end. Blessed
are they that do his commandments, that they may have
 right to the tree of life, and may enter in through the gates
 15 into the city. Without *are* dogs, and sorcerers, and whore-
 mongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever
 16 loveth and maketh a lie. I Jesus have sent mine
 angel to testify unto you these things in the churches ; I am
 the root and the offspring of David, *and* the bright morning
 17 star. And the Spirit and the bride say ; Come ; and
 let him that heareth say ; Come ; and let him that is
 athirst come ; whosoever will, let him take the water of life
 freely.
 18 I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the
 prophecy of this book ; If any man shall add unto them,
 God shall add unto him the plagues that are written
 19 in this book ; and if any man shall take away from the words
 of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part
 from the tree of life, and out of the holy city, which
 20 are written of in this book. He which testifieth
 these things saith ; Surely I come quickly. Amen, come
 Lord Jesus.
 21 The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ *be* with all the saints.